FLECTI
NON
FRANGI

Viscount Palmerston.

SOUTHAMPTON UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

*Presented by*

*The Countess Mountbatten of Burma*

*C.B.E., C.I., D.C.V.O.*

*September 1952*

65001

# COBBETT'S
# Parliamentary History
OF
# ENGLAND.

VOL. I.

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

# COBBETT'S

# Parliamentary History

OF

# ENGLAND.

FROM THE NORMAN CONQUEST, IN 1066.

TO

THE YEAR, 1803.

*FROM WHICH LAST-MENTIONED EPOCH IT IS CONTINUED*
*DOWNWARDS IN THE WORK ENTITLED,*
*"COBBETT'S PARLIAMENTARY DEBATES."*

---

## VOL. I.

COMPRISING THE PERIOD FROM THE CONQUEST IN 1066,
TO THE DEATH OF KING JAMES THE FIRST,
IN THE YEAR 1625.

---

LONDON:

PRINTED BY T. CURSON HANSARD, PETERBOROUGH-COURT, FLEET-STREET.
PUBLISHED BY R. BAGSHAW, BRYDGES-STREET, COVENT GARDEN; AND SOLD BY J. BUDD, PALL-MALL; R. FAULDER, NEW BOND-STREET; H. D. SYMONDS, PATERNOSTER-ROW; BLACKS AND PARRY, LEADENHALL-STREET; AND J. ARCHER, DUBLIN.

*October* 1806.

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

SOUTHAMPTON
UNIVERSITY

SEP 1952
LIBRARY

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

# PREFACE.

WHOEVER has had frequent occasion to recur to the Proceedings in Parliament, of former times, must have experienced those difficulties which it is the object of the present Work to remove. Merely to find the several works wherein is contained an account of the Parliamentary Proceedings, is, at this day, no easy matter; some of them being very scarce, and others excessively voluminous. Hardly any of them, those of the last twenty years excepted, are to be purchased regularly at the Booksellers. The far greater part of them are to be come at by accident only; and, of course, sometimes not to be obtained at all. But, supposing them all to be at hand, the price of them is no trifling object; and, in many cases, must present a difficulty not to be easily, or, at least, willingly, surmounted. Of these works, taken in their chronological order, the first is, "The Parliamentary or Constitutional History," in Twenty-four Volumes; the second, "Sir Simonds D'Ewes's Journal of Queen Elizabeth's Parliaments;" the third, "Proceedings and Debates of the House of Commons in 1620 and 1621, collected by a Member of that House, and published from his Original Manuscript in the Library of Queen's College, Oxford," in Two Volumes; the fourth, "Chandler's and Timberland's Debates," in Twenty-two Volumes, the fifth, "Debates of the House of Commons, from the year 1667 to the year 1694, collected by the Honourable Anchitell Grey, Esq., who was thirty years Member for the town of Derby," in Ten Volumes; the sixth, "Almon's Debates," in twenty-four Volumes; and, the seventh, "Debrett's Debates" (now in the hands of various Booksellers) in Sixty-three Volumes. These works are not to be purchased, if to be purchased at all, under One Hundred and Ten Pounds sterling. But still, with all these, the information wanted is very imperfect, without perpetually having recourse to the Journals of the two Houses, which Journals occupy upwards of a hundred volumes in folio so that the price of a complete set of the works, in this way, cannot, upon an average of purchases, be reckoned at less than One Hundred and Fifty Pounds.

These difficulties surmounted, another, and a still more formidable obstruction to the acquiring of information is found, not merely in the number and the bulk of the volumes, but also in the want of a good arrangement of the contents of most of them, and, further, in the immense load of useless matter, quite unauthentic, and very little connected with the real Proceedings of Parliament, to be found in many of them. In the first-mentioned Work, we find a narrative of battles, sieges, and of domestic occurrences. The real Proceedings of Parliament form but a comparatively small proportion of it; whole pamphlets of the day, and very long ones, being, in many places, inserted just as they were published and sold; and, when we come down even to the Debates by Almon and Debrett (taking in Woodfall and others occasionally), we find, that, in numerous instances, three-fourths of the volume consists of Papers laid before Parliament, of mere momentary utility, repeated in subsequent and more correct statements, and now nothing but an expence, and, what is much worse, an incumbrance to the reader, and a constantly intervening obstacle to his researches; to which may be added, with respect to all the Debates from Almon's inclusive, downwards, that there is a total want of all that aid which is afforded by well contrived Running Titles, Tables, and Indexes, and which is so necessary in every voluminous work, particularly if it relate to the transactions of a long series of years.

With a view of removing all these difficulties, and of putting the Public in possession of a History of the Proceedings in Parliament, from the Norman Conquest to the year 1803, (when the Work entitled, "Cobbett's Parliamentary Debates" commenced) as complete as that which has met with such general approbation in this last-mentioned Work, the present publication is undertaken. The Sixteen Volumes, of which the Work will consist, and the first of which is now presented to the Public, will be printed in the same form and size as those of the "Parliamentary Debates," with this difference only, that the character of this Work, which has been cast expressly for the occasion, will, in the same compass, introduce one-fifth more of matter. When, therefore, it is recollected, that so large a part of the several Works above enumerated, is taken up with matter, as before described, wholly unconnected, or having but a very remote connection, with the Proceedings in Parliament, and entirely destitute of authenticity; when it is recollected also, how much room is saved by the abbreviation of words descriptive of titles and of constantly-occurring phrases of courtesy, the reader will not be surprised, that the whole of the Authentic and Useful Records of the Proceedings of the Parliament of England, of that of Great Britain, and of that of the United Kingdom, down to the year 1803, will be comprised in the Sixteen Volumes of this Work, which will, upon the best computation that can be made, contain as much print as One Hundred and Forty common octavo volumes.

The present Volume, comprising the period from the Conquest to the Death of James the First, has been compiled principally from the Records, the Rolls of Parliament, the Parliamentary or Constitutional History, and from the most reputable English Historians. From the Reign of Henry the Eighth inclusive, we have the additional aid of the Journals of the House of Lords; and from that of Edward the Sixth, that of the Journals of the House of Commons. Sir Simonds D'Ewes' Journal of Queen Elizabeth's Parliaments, has been diligently consulted, and the Debates of the House of Commons in the years 1620 and 1621, published from the Manuscript in the Library of Queen's College, Oxford, have been carefully incorporated, under their respective dates. The State of the Peerage, and Lists of the Members of the House of Commons have, from time to time, been given: and at the close of the Parliamentary History of each reign, will be found Lists of the Public Acts passed; together with an account of the Taxes imposed, of the Supplies, of the State of the Revenue, and of the Value of Money in relation to the Price of Provisions.

To the Volume is prefixed a copious Table of Contents, and a variety of useful Lists of the Persons who have filled the several high Offices of the State from the Conquest down to the Death of James the First. It was originally intended to give an Index to each Volume: but, at the suggestion of several eminent literary persons, it has been determined to undertake A GENERAL INDEX of the whole Work, which will be constructed upon the excellent Plan recommended by the Committee of the House of Commons in 1766, and afterwards adopted by the persons employed to make out the Indexes to the Journals, which General Index will, of course, be contained in the Volume with which the Work will close

# PREFACE.

In a Work of this nature, the utmost impartiality is justly expected; and it is with confidence presumed, that a careful perusal of the following pages will convince the reader, that that impartiality has been strictly and invariably adhered to. Nothing has been inserted without due authority; and, as the object has been, not so much to dive into matters of Antiquity, as to preserve what was really useful, many things have been omitted which would have swelled the bulk of the work, without adding to its usefulness. Nothing, however, has been left out, which was not judged to be spurious or not agreeable to the design of such a Collection; nor any thing added, merely on account of its being favourable to the reputation or the doctrines of any party whatever. In short, whatever appeared to have been actually said or done, in either House of Parliament, that had any tendency to what ought to be the chief object of such a publication, has, as far as authentic materials could be procured, been recorded with scrupulous fidelity.

It would be improper to conclude, without returning thanks to the several Noblemen and Gentlemen, who have obligingly offered the use of their valuable collections, some of which have already been found to be of great advantage to the undertaking, and others will, in the course of the work, be applied for and gratefully received. The many judicious suggestions, which have, from various quarters, been communicated, have been, and in future will be, carefully attended to; and, it is hoped, that the execution of the Work will prove that no pains, of any kind, have been spared to render it equal to that expectation, which, with respect to the manner as well as the matter of it, has evidently been conceived by no inconsiderable part of the well-informed men in this kingdom.

With the literary aid which the Compiler has received, the Public has, perhaps, strictly speaking, little to do; but, he cannot, for one hour, exist under the idea, that the whole of the merit, whatever it may be, should be ascribed to himself, to the exclusion of the invaluable talents and exertions of the Gentleman, who is his principal assistant, and upon whom no small share of the execution has devolved.

*Botley, October 1806.* W^M^. COBBETT.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

TO

# VOLUME I.

A. D. Page

On the Origin of Parliaments . . . . . . . . 1

## WILLIAM I.

1072 The King summons a National Synod . . . . 3

## HENRY I.

1106 The King assembles the Nobles.—His Speech to them on the occasion .

1107 **Another Convention of all the Estates of the Realm** . . 4

Taxes in the Reign of Henry I. . . . 4

## STEPHEN.

1136 A Convention of all the Estates summoned to meet at Oxford . 5

1152 A certain Convention summoned to meet at London . . 5

## HENRY II.

1155 A General Assembly summoned to meet at Wallingford 6

1164 **A Convention of the Estates held at Clarendon** 6

1171 An Assembly of the Estates summoned to meet at York . 6

1188 A Convention of the Estates summoned to meet at Gaytington . 6

**Taxes in the Reign of Henry II.** . . . . . 6

## RICHARD I.

1189 A Convention of the Estates summoned to meet at Westminster . . 7

1194 March 30. A Convention of the Estates summoned to meet at Nottingham 7

Taxes in the Reign of Richard I. . . 8

## JOHN.

1200 The Estates and Peers meet at Lincoln . 8

1204 **Jan. 2. A Meeting of the Nobles at Oxford** . . . . 8

1213 A Convention of the Estates meet at St. Paul's Cathedral 9

1215 June 15. An Assembly of the King and the Barons at Runing Mead.—The King grants Magna Charta—and the Charta de Foresta. 9

A.D. Page

## HENRY III.

1[illegible] Jan. 13. The King meets the Barons at London . . . 10
1[illegible] [illegible] . 10
1[illegible] [illegible] at Westminster—and confirms the two Great Charters . . . 10
Mar[illegible] [illegible] Great Men [illegible] the Trial of Falcasius, the Rebel . . . 11
1[illegible]7 [illegible] meet at Oxford—[illegible] Magna Charta and Charta de Foresta . . . . 12
1[illegible] March 7. A [illegible]—The King's De[illegible] [illegible] ings against Hubert de Burgh . . . 12
Sept. 1[illegible] [illegible] granted to the King.—Escape of Hubert de Burgh . 13
1233 [illegible] . 14
July 1[illegible] [illegible] at Westminster—[illegible] slighted . . . . . . . 14
1[illegible] [illegible] Westminster—[illegible] 15
1236 [illegible] his Marriage with Eleanor.—Statutes of Merton enacted . . 15
1237 [illegible] 17
Sept. 14. [illegible] with Alexander, King of Scots . . . . 17
[illegible] Westminster—Declares his Poverty, and obtains a Supply . . 17
1[illegible] [illegible] the Barons [illegible] Their Answer [illegible] 17
1244 [illegible] Renews Magna Charta.—Obtains an Aid . [illegible]
1246 [illegible] against [illegible] [illegible]
1[illegible] [illegible] an Aid [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] Their Answer.—The King's Poverty . . . . [illegible]
1[illegible] [illegible] against [illegible] . 25
1[illegible] A Convention of the Estates at Westminster . . . 26
1[illegible] [illegible] The [illegible] Speech [illegible] Answer . . . . . 26
1[illegible] A [illegible] Estates at London—The King's Demand for Money rejected . . . . . 27
1257 [illegible] Estates to Westminster on the Business of Apulia . . . . 28
1258 [illegible] Estates to London [illegible] to Oxford—His Concessions in consideration of a Supply . . . 29
1[illegible] Sept. 8. [illegible] against the Citizens of London . . . . . 31
[illegible] Aug[illegible] [illegible] to meet at Kenelworth—Dictum de Kenelworth . . . . . 31

A. D. — Page

1267 The King summons a Parliament to meet at St. Edmunds-Bury.—Obtains a Supply . . . . 32
1269 Nov. 19 The K[illegible] Marlborough.—Statutes of Marlborough.—The King's Death . . . . 33
Taxes during the Reign of Henry III. . . . . 33

## EDWARD I.

1275 The King calls a Parliament at Westminster.—His Summons to Lewellyn, Prince of Wales [illegible]—Statutes of Westminster the First . . . . 35
Oct. 6 The King summons a Parliament to Westminster.—Obtains an Aid . . . . 35
1276 The King summons a Parliament to Westminster on the Affair of Lewellyn.—Proclaims War against him . . . . 35
Oct. 4. The King [illegible] Charters of Liberties and the Forests . . . . 35
1277 A [illegible]
1279 Nov. A [illegible] Westminster [illegible] King's Proposal touching the Clergy.—Statute of Mortmain . . 36
1281 Sept. 30. The King [illegible] to Shrewsbury.—Conquest of Wales.—Writs of Summons . . . . 36
1282 May 24. The King [illegible] Wales to the Crown of England.—Obtains a Subsidy . . 37
1283 October. The King summons his Parliament to Acton Burnel . . 37
1285 The King [illegible] Parliament to Westminster.—Statutes of Westminster the Second . . . . 37
1288 Feb. A Parliament held at Westminster.—The Lord Treasurer demands an Aid, [illegible] absence . . . . 37
1289 Jan. The King [illegible] Westminster [illegible] An Aid granted . . . . 37
1291 May 10. The King [illegible] 39
1294 The King [illegible] 40
1295 The King [illegible] 42
1296 Aug. 24 The King [illegible] Homage and Fealty of the Scots Nobility . . . . 41
Nov. 3. The King [illegible] St. Edmund's-Bury.—An Aid [illegible] Protection . . . . 43
1297 The King [illegible] Parliament to Salisbury.—Differences between the King and his Barons . . . . 44
Oct. 10. The King [illegible] Aid granted . . . . 45
1299 The King [illegible]—The Pope [illegible] France 47
1300 The King [illegible] Westminster.—[illegible] and confirms the Great Charters . . . . 47
1301 Jan. 12. The King [illegible] Lincoln.—Speech of Roger de [illegible] the Barons [illegible] Pope 48
1305 The King [illegible] Westminster.—[illegible] . 52
1307 Jan. 21 The King [illegible] of the [illegible] Provisors.—[illegible] Reign . 53

A. D. Page

## EDWARD II.

1[illegible] The K[illegible] [illegible] —Gaveston banished . . . . . 56
A [illegible] Affairs . . . . . . . 58
1309 July 26. [illegible] . . . [illegible]
1310 Oct. 18. T[illegible] Gaveston to be beheaded . . . . . 58
1313 Sept. 21. [illegible] plaint against the Barons.—Their Submission.—A Subsidy granted . . . . . . . . . 60
1314 Dec. 20. The King summons a Parliament to Westminster, on Account [illegible] Price of Provisions.—A Subsidy granted . . . . 61
1315 Jan. 28. The King summons a Parliament to Lincoln.—Requests their [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] 20. T[illegible] [illegible] King's Answer . . . . . . . . 65
1321 July 15. The King calls a Parliament to Westminster.—His Summons [illegible] . [illegible]
[illegible] T[illegible] [illegible] Prerogative . . . . . . 71
1[illegible] The King calls a Parliament to London.—Summoned to do Homage [illegible] Kenelworth Castle . . . . . . 76
1327 Jan. 7. The K[illegible] the Queen.—Articles alledged against him.—A Committee appointed to go to him and demand his Resignation of the [illegible] —Taxes.—Price of Provisions . . . . . 78

## EDWARD III.

[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] . [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] Articles of Peace with the Scots . . . . . . . 82
Aug. [illegible] The K[illegible] Lancaster and others refuse their Attendance . [illegible]
1329 March 13. A Parliament held at Winchester . . . [illegible]
[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] Parliament to Westminster.—His Writ to the Sheriffs for the Elec[illegible] passed upon the Murderers of the late King . . . [illegible]

A.D. Page

[illegible] Oct. 1. The King [illegible] of [illegible] . [illegible]
[illegible] March [illegible] The King summons a Parliament to Westminster.—His Order for [illegible] The King's Declaration concerning his Journey to France . [illegible]
Sept. [illegible] The King summons a Parliament to Westminster.—Requested [illegible] that purpose . . . . . [illegible]
Dec. [illegible] The King summons a Parliament to York.—His Adjournment thereof, and on what occasion . . . . [illegible]
[illegible] March. The King calls a Parliament to York.—His Resolution to march [illegible] King Baliol . . . . 93
1334 Feb. 21. [illegible] Charters . . . . . . . . [illegible]
Sept. 14. The King calls a Parliament to Westminster.—His Declaration [illegible] volt.—An Aid granted . . . . . . 93
[illegible] May. [illegible] War with Scotland . . . . . . 94
1336 June 25. [illegible] obedience . . . . 94
1337 March. The King summons a Parliament to Westminster.—Acts for the [illegible] 94
Sept. 27. The King summons a Parliament to Westminster.—A Supply raised for the War against France . . . 95
[illegible] Feb. 3. [illegible] 95
Aug. 25. A Parliament called by Commission to Northampton.—An extra- [illegible] [illegible]
1339 Oct. 13. A Parliament called by Commission.—The King's Remonstrance for a further Aid.—A Supply granted 96
1340 Jan. 20. List of Commissioners appointed to hold a Parliament at Westminster.—An Aid granted.—The King assumes the Style and Arms of France.—And changes his Great Seal . . 97
[illegible] The King summons a Parliament to Westminster.—Declares his [illegible] Province of France . . . . 98
July 7. A Parliament called by Commission to Westminster.—Further [illegible] [illegible]
1341 April 23. The King summons a parliament to Westminster.—Articles [illegible] Writ for revoking them . . . . [illegible]
1343 April 23. The King [illegible] 105
1344 June 7. [illegible] 109
[illegible] The King summons a Parliament to Westminster.—His Order [illegible] 111

A.D. Page
[illegible] Jan. 8. A [illegible] Messengers sent to [illegible] sented to the Prince Regent . . . . 111
[illegible] Jan. [illegible] The [illegible] Commons to the King on the State of the Nation . . 115
[illegible] Feb. [illegible] [illegible] sembling them . . . . . . 117
[illegible] [illegible] sented to the Prince Regent cerning Grievances.—The King's Answers . . . 118
[illegible] [illegible] The [illegible] Lord Chamberlain.—A Subsidy granted . . . . 120
[illegible] March [illegible] The [illegible] the King's Answers thereto . . . . 122
[illegible] Nov. [illegible] The [illegible] Commons, with the King's Answers . . . 125
[illegible] Jan. [illegible] The [illegible] Westminster [illegible] of the Peace with France . . . . 127
1362 Oct. 13. The [illegible] Magna Charta reconfirmed . . . . . . . 127
[illegible] Oct. 6. The [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] Jan. 21 The [illegible] ments . . . . . . 128
[illegible] Mar. 30 The [illegible] His Request [illegible] mage for his Crown.—Which they resent . . . 129
[illegible] Feb. [illegible] The [illegible] . 130
[illegible] [illegible] The [illegible] ment to all who should assist him against France . . 131
[illegible] Feb. [illegible] The [illegible] the King complies with . . . . . 133
[illegible] Nov. [illegible] The [illegible] War with France unsuccessful.—A Supply granted on that Account . . 136
[illegible] Nov. 21 The [illegible] with the King's Answers . . . . . . 137
1376 April The [illegible] Westminster.—A Supply granted.—A Council appointed to attend the King con[illegible] Peirce, the King's Mistress, in Public Affairs . . 140
1377 Jan. 27 [illegible] passed.—The King's Death . . . . 142

A.D. Page

List of Taxes in the Reign of Edward III . . [illegible]
P[illegible] Edward III . [illegible]
L[illegible] Acts passed in the Reign of Edward III . . [illegible]

## RICHARD II.

1377 Aug. 4. The King issues [illegible] Writs for [illegible] a new Parliament . [illegible]
List [illegible] . [illegible]
Oct. 14. The Parliament [illegible] Westminster.—[illegible] Canterbury declares the Cause [illegible] Sir P. de la Mare chosen Speaker.—A Subsidy granted.—Petitions of the Commons . . . . . . 153
1378 April 25. A new Parliament summoned to meet at Westminster.—The L[illegible] [illegible]
Oct. 20. A new Parliament meets at Gloucester.—The Lord Chancellor's Speech [illegible] the Commons.—A Subsidy granted [illegible]
1379 Jan. 14. A Parliament [illegible] Westminster.—The Lord Chancellor's [illegible]—A Supply granted . . . . . 168
1380 A Parliament [illegible] Northampton.—The [illegible] Debate upon raising a Supply.—A Poll-Tax granted . . . 170
1381 July 16. A Parliament [illegible] Westminster.—Speech of the [illegible] of the Portuguese . . . . . . . . 172
1382 Sept. 29. A Parliament [illegible] at Westminster.—A Subsidy granted.—Statute of Heresy . . . . . . . [illegible]
1383 April. A Parliament [illegible] at Westminster.—[illegible] Household.—The King's Answer.—The Papal Chair in contest . . . . . . . . . 177
Nov. 1. A Parliament held at Westminster.—The Lord Chancellor's Speech.—A Subsidy granted.—The Bishop of Norwich fined for his Miscarriages in the late Expedition . . . [illegible]
1384 April 21. A Parliament [illegible] [illegible]
Nov. 12. A Parliament [illegible] Westminster.—The Lord Chancellor's Speech.—A farther Subsidy granted against Scotland and France . . . . . . . . [illegible]
1385 Oct. 20. A Parliament held at Westminster.—The Lord Chancellor's Speech [illegible] Debate [illegible] Temporalities . . . . . . . . 182
1386 Oct. 1. A Parliament [illegible] Westminster.—The Lord Chancellor's Speech [illegible] King's Answer [illegible] turn.—New Appointments . . . . . . 184
Articles [illegible] exhibited by the Commons against the Earl of Suffolk . . . . . . 188
A Co[illegible] tion thereof.—A Subsidy granted . . . . . 190
Questions [illegible] their Answers, touching the late Commission . . . . . 194

A. D. Page

[illegible] 3. [illegible] Westminster.—The Lord Chancellor [illegible] [illegible] Duke of Gloucester . . . . . [illegible]

[illegible] . [illegible]

[illegible] Ireland, M. de la Pole Earl of Suffolk, the Judges, &c.—Proceedings thereupon . . . . [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] Coronation Oath . . . . . . . [illegible]

Sep. 9. A Parliament held at Cambridge.—A Subsidy granted . . [illegible]

[illegible] Hands.—A Subsidy granted . . . . [illegible]

[illegible] A Parliament held at Westminster.—A Subsidy granted.—Sta[illegible] Appropriation . . . . . . 217

1392 Nov. 3. A Parliament held at Westminster.—The Lord Chancellor's Speech.—A Subsidy granted . . . . 218

[illegible] A Parliament held at Winchester.—A Subsidy granted.—The Abp. of Canterbury's Protest against the Papal Power . 219

[illegible] [illegible] the Earl of Lancaster.—A Supply granted . . . . [illegible]

[illegible] A Parliament held at Westminster.—A Supply granted . . [illegible]

[illegible] A Parliament held at Westminster.—Sir J. Bussey chosen [illegible] banished Judges allowed to return.—A Supply granted . . [illegible]

Sept. 17. [illegible] his Escape.—Promotions . . . . . [illegible]

[illegible] Jan. [illegible] [illegible] impeached.—A Subsidy granted for the King's Life.—The [illegible] . [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

## [illegible]

[illegible] Oct. 6. [illegible] of the Peers [illegible] what the [illegible]

A. D. Page

Answers—Pr[illegible] Lords [illegible] [illegible] 2?9

1401 Jan. 21. A Pa[illegible] [illegible] King's Answers—A Subsidy granted—Proceedings against several [illegible] against Provisions from Rome—A Subsidy granted . . 233

1403 Sept. 30. A Parliament held at Westminster—The Lord Chancellor's Speech—Sir H. de Redford chosen Speaker—A Subsidy granted . . . . . . . . . . 253

1404 Jan. 14. A Parliament held at Westminster—The Lord Chancellor's Speech [illegible] the King's [illegible] —Several Annuities granted—Sheriffs fined for a false Return—Privilege of Parliament—The Record of a Subsidy [illegible] . 89

1405 Oct. 6. A Par[illegible] Lord Chancellor's Speech —Sir Wm. Sturmey chosen Speaker—A Subsidy granted—[illegible] . 294

1406 March 1. A Parliament held at Westminster—The Lord Chancellor's Speech [illegible] Elections—Grants made by the King to Sir J. Tibetot the Speaker . . . . . . . . . . 293

1407 Oct. 20. A P[illegible] Lord Chancellor's Speech —Sir T. Chaucer chosen Speaker—A Subsidy granted—Order to prevent the Lords from communicating the Commons private Debates to the King . . 296

1410 Jan. 27. A Parliament held at Westminster—Sir T. Chaucer chosen [illegible] Clergy—Petition of Richard de Hastings—A Subsidy granted 303

1411 Nov. [illegible] A Parliament [illegible] Lord Chancellor's Speech—Sir T. Chaucer chosen Speaker—A Supply granted [illegible] Act against Riots—The King's Death . . . . . 312

[illegible] Henry IV. . . . . 314

[illegible] Henry IV. . . [illegible]

Acts passed in the reign of Henry IV. . . . [illegible]

## HENRY V.

1413 May 15. A Parliament held at Westminster—The Lord Chancellor's Speech [illegible] the King's Answers—The Clergy stir up the King to prosecute Sir J. Oldcastle as a Favourer of the Lollards . . . . . . 319

1414 April 30. A Parliament held at Leicester [illegible] The Clergy prompt the King to a War with France—Speeches of the [illegible] Westmoreland, and the Duke of Exeter, touching the said War . . . . . 321

Nov. 19. A Parliament held at Westminster—List of Peers summoned thereto—The Lord Chancellor's Speech—T. Chaucer, Esq.

[illegible]

Page

[illegible] Isle and [illegible] Statutes . . . [illegible]

[illegible] The Lord Chancellor's [illegible] . . . [illegible]

[illegible] The Lord Chancellor's Speech—Roger Flower, Esq. chosen Speaker—A Subsidy granted—Act for a General Pardon . . . . . . 333

[illegible] The Lord Chancellor's [illegible] . . . [illegible]

[illegible] The Lord Chancellor's Speech—Roger Flower, Esq. a 3rd time chosen Speaker—A Subsidy granted . . . . . . . . 337

[illegible] The King's Speech—A Subsidy [illegible] Acts, and [illegible] . . . [illegible]

Dec. [illegible] [illegible] . . . 340

[illegible] Henry V. . . . 341

Account of Henry V's Annual Income . . . . 342

Price of Provisions in the Reign of Henry V. . . . 343

Acts passed in the Reign of Henry V. . . . . 343

## HENRY VI.

Sept. [illegible] A Parliament [illegible] Westminster—The Archbishop of Canterbury's Speech.—Roger Flower, Esq. a 4th time chosen Speaker.—[illegible] Duke of Gloucester appointed Protector.—A Subsidy granted . . . . 345

[illegible] A Parliament held at Westminster.—List of Peers summoned [illegible] the late King's Debts.—The Scotch King released, and a Peace [illegible] An ex post facto Act against Sir John Mortimer.—A Subsidy granted . . . . . . . 347

[illegible] A Parliament held at Westminster.—The Infant King carried [illegible] and the Bishop of Winchester referred to Parliament . . . 351

[illegible] A Parliament held at Leicester—"Parliament of Bats"—The [illegible] Duke of Gloucester against the Bishop of Winchester, with [illegible] . . . [illegible]

[illegible] A Parliament held at Westminster—The Lord Chancellor's [illegible] Protector—A Female Remonstrance to Parliament against the Duke . . . . . . . . 358

[illegible] A Parliament held at Westminster—The Lord Chancellor's [illegible] King [illegible] A Subsidy granted [illegible] with [illegible] the [illegible] Privilege, [illegible] State, &c. [illegible] Parliament . . . 360

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

| A. D. | | | Page |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1431 | Jan. 12. | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] the [illegible] Speaker—A Subsidy granted—Petitions and Answers—A Peace with the Scots | [illegible] |
| 1432 | May 12 | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] Speech—John Russell, Esq. chosen Speaker—A Subsidy granted—Another Quarrel between [illegible] the Duke of Gloucester [illegible] | [illegible] |
| 1433 | July 8 | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] Speech [illegible] Bedford's Speech [illegible] Commons [illegible] by Parliament [illegible] passed | [illegible] |
| 1435 | Oct. 10 | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] Speech—[illegible] Bowes, Esq. chosen Speaker—A Subsidy granted—Particular Acts passed | [illegible] |
| 1436 | Jan. 21 | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] Particular Acts passed [illegible] A General Pardon | [illegible] |
| 1439 | Nov. 12 | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] Speech—[illegible] Esq. chosen Speaker—Subsidy granted—Particular Acts passed—Petitions and Answers | 37[illegible] |
| 1445 | Feb. 25. | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] Speech—Wm. B[illegible] chosen Speaker—A Subsidy granted—Peace [illegible] Duke of S[illegible] Marriage [illegible] the [illegible] Duke of Gloucester | [illegible] |
| 1447 | Feb. 10. | A Parliament held at St. [illegible] Speech—Wm. [illegible] Esq. chosen Speaker—The Duke of Gloucester arrested and murdered | [illegible] |
| 1449 | Feb. 12 | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] Speaker—Grants—A Poll-Tax—Normandy lost—Contest between the Earls of Arundel and Devon for Precedency | [illegible] |
| 1450 | Nov. 6 | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] Duke of Suffolk | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] chosen Speaker—A Monopoly granted in order to raise Money [illegible] Servants—A Rebellion in Kent under Jack Cade | 38[illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] | A Parliament [illegible] and takes the King Prisoner | 39[illegible] |
| [illegible] | July 9 | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] renewed | 39[illegible] |
| [illegible] | Nov. 20. | A Parliament held at [illegible] The Duke of York [illegible] | 40[illegible] |
| 1461 | Oct. 7. | A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] Speaker—[illegible] | |

A.D. Page

[illegible]—The Duke of [illegible] . 404
[illegible] . [illegible]
[illegible] Henry VI. . 411
[illegible] Henry VI. . 413

## EDWARD IV.

1461 [illegible] A P[illegible] Peers summoned [illegible] his Parliament . 419
[illegible] A [illegible] Esq. chosen Speaker—A Subsidy granted . 422
[illegible] A [illegible] Life [illegible] . [illegible]
[illegible] June [illegible] A [illegible] Speech—The [illegible] forced to leave the Kingdom—Henry VI. restored . 425
1470 Nov. 26 A P[illegible] and restored, and [illegible] . 426
1472 Oct. 6 A P[illegible] Peers summoned thereto—Wm. Allington, Esq. chosen Speaker—A Supply granted—A new Act of Resumption . 429
1477 Jan. 16 A P[illegible] Lord Chancellor's [illegible] Attainder against him . 433
[illegible] Jan. 20 A P[illegible] Wood, Esq. chosen [illegible]—The King greatly distressed—The King's Death . 437
[illegible] . [illegible]
Price of Provisions in the Reign of Edward IV. . 439
[illegible] . [illegible]

## [illegible]

[illegible] L[illegible] . 441

## [illegible] III.

[illegible] A P[illegible] Peers summoned [illegible] A[illegible] . [illegible]
[illegible] . 447

## [illegible] VII.

[illegible] A P[illegible] Peers summoned [illegible] . 448
[illegible] A P[illegible] Lord Chancellor's Speech to both Houses—A Supply voted for a War with [illegible] . 451
[illegible] A [illegible] Account of its [illegible] . 458
[illegible] [illegible] Speech—War with France—A Benevolence granted—A Peace concluded . 461
[illegible] A [illegible] Account of its Proceedings . 464
[illegible] [illegible] King's Speech [illegible] granted— [illegible] . 464
[illegible] A P[illegible] Account of its [illegible] Benevolence granted— [illegible] . 465

A. D. Page

Taxes in the Reign of Henry VII . . 467
Price of Provisions in the Reign of Henry VII. . . . 468
Acts passed in the Reign of Henry VII. . . . . . 468

## HENRY VIII.

1509 Jan. 21. A Parliament held at Westminster—List of Peers summoned thereto—[illegible] Judges—The Lord Chancellor's Speech—Tho. [illegible], Esq. chosen Speaker—Proceedings against Empson and Dudley—A Subsidy granted . . . . 475
1512 Feb. 4. A Parliament held at Westminster—The Lord Chancellor's Speech—Sir Robert Sheffield chosen Speaker—War with France—[illegible] . 478
1514 Feb. 5. A Parliament held at Westminster—The Lord Chancellor's Speech—Tho. Neville, Esq. chosen Speaker—[illegible] concerning the [illegible] Seats in Parliament—Acts passed—Parliament dissolved . . . . . . . 481
1523 April 15 A Parliament held at the Black Friars in London—The Bishop of Lincoln's Speech—Sir Thomas More chosen Speaker—His Speech—Cardinal Wolsey goes to the Commons to demand a Subsidy—A Subsidy granted—[illegible] Parliament—Acts passed—Money demanded without consent of Parliament—Wolsey's Disgrace . . . 484
1529 Nov. 3. A Parliament held at Westminster—Ld Chanc. More's Speech—Tho. Audley, Esq. chosen Speaker . . . . . 491
Articles of Impeachment against Cardinal Wolsey . 492
Luther's Doctrines [illegible]—Commencement of the Reformation—Speeches on the Debts of [illegible] the Monks and the Clergy—Reformation on Foot—The King's Debts . 501
1530 July 30. Letter from the Parliament to the Pope in favour of Queen Catharine's Divorce—The Pope's Answer . . . . 507
1531 Jan. 6. Debate on the King's Pardon—Proceedings on the Divorce—The Commons' Remonstrance against the Clergy . . 514
1533 April Proceedings on the Divorce—Sir T. More resigns the Seals 518
1534 Jan. 15 The King's Marriage declared [illegible]—Bp. Fisher's Vindication of himself in relation to the Holy Maid of Kent . . . 520
1535 Feb. 3. Act of Supremacy passed . . 525
1536 Feb. 4. A Subsidy granted—The Lesser Monasteries suppressed—The Parliament dissolved—Anne Boleyn executed . . . 525
1537 June 8. A Parliament held at Westminster—[illegible] the Barons as they entered and sat therein—The Lord Chancellor's Speech—Rd Rich, Esq. chosen Speaker—His Speech—[illegible]—New Act of Succession—[illegible] the Pope's Power—[illegible]—Suppression of the larger Abbies, &c. . . . . . . . . . 527
1540 April 28 A Parliament held at Westminster—List of Peers—Sir N. Hare chosen Speaker—A Committee for Religion appointed—[illegible] Acts passed . . . . . . . . . . 535
1541 April 12 A Parliament held at Westminster—The Lord Chancellor's Speech—[illegible] Speaker—[illegible] attainted and executed—[illegible]—The Speaker's Speech at the Close of the Session—A Rebellion in Yorkshire . . . . . . . . . . 541
1542 Jan. 16. A Parliament held at Westminster—The Lord Chancellor's Speech—Tho. Moyle, Esq. chosen Speaker—Proceedings on the Attainder of Queen Catharine—Proceedings on the Arrest of a Member—War with Scotland and France—A Subsidy—Act for Reformation of Religion—[illegible]—The King's [illegible] Succession—Parliament dissolved—Money raised by a Benevolence 542
1546 Nov. 23 A Parliament held at Westminster—A Subsidy—The King's Speech at proroguing the Parliament—The Duke of Norfolk and his Son attainted—The King's Death . 551

[illegible]

[illegible] Henry VIII. . . . . . . . . . 568
[illegible]

## [illegible]

[illegible] beheaded—The Parliament dissolved . . . . 580
[illegible] 600
[illegible]
Price of Provisions in the Reign of Edward VI. . . . 602
[illegible] Edward VI. . . . . . . 602
List of Acts passed in the Reign of Edward VI. . . . 608

A Parliament held at Westminster—Peers summoned thereto—[illegible] of Spain . . . . . . . . . . . 606
[illegible]

## [illegible]

[illegible] the Commons leave the House—Their Names . . . . 616
[illegible]

A. D. Page

1555 Oct. 21. A Parliament [illegible] Westminster [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] Jan. [illegible] A Parliament [illegible] Westminster [illegible] Speaker [illegible] the Queen's Death [illegible]

[illegible] Mary [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] Mary [illegible]

[illegible] [illegible]

## ELIZABETH

15[illegible] Jan. [illegible] A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] Speaker [illegible] [illegible]

30 Debate [illegible] the Abbey [illegible] [illegible]

Feb. [illegible] A Subsidy [illegible] [illegible]

The Commons [illegible] the Queen's Answer . . . . . . . . 661

Debate [illegible] Abbot of [illegible] Parliament—The Parliament dissolved . . . . . 664

156[illegible] Jan. 11 A Parliament held at Westminster [illegible] Speaker [illegible] A Supply . . . . . . . . 671

Act of [illegible] Atkinson thereon . . . . . . . 685

Another [illegible] the Queen [illegible] The Queen's Answer [illegible] prorogued . . . . . . . . 695

15[illegible] Oct. 2 The Parliament [illegible] Queen [illegible] Speaker [illegible] Lord Keeper's Answer . . . . . . . 705

20 A Committee of [illegible] Queen [illegible] The Commons [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

1571 April 2 A Parliament [illegible] Westminster [illegible] Lord Keeper's Speech [illegible] Queen—The Queen's Answer [illegible] excommunicates the Queen—A Subsidy . . . . 723

Debate in the Commons on [illegible] Religion, &c.—Speeches of Mr. Strickland and Mr. Norton . . . . 73[illegible]

Debate [illegible] Speeches of [illegible] and Sir [illegible] . 734

7 Debate [illegible] Mr. [illegible] Mr. [illegible] 735

10 Debate [illegible] Speeches of Mr. [illegible], Mr. Young, Mr. [illegible] . 737

Debate [illegible] Speeches of Mr. [illegible], Mr. [illegible], Mr. Dalton . . 738

[illegible]

A.D. Page

1571 April 13. [illegible] Speeches of Mr. [illegible] Smith, Mr. Norton, Mr. Comptroller, Mr. Snagg, Sir F. Knolles, Anonymous, Mr. Mounson, Mr. Heneage, Mr. [illegible] . . 739

14. [illegible] Mr. Snagg 745

[illegible] Speeches of Mr. St. John, Mr. Sandys, Mr. Treasurer, Mr. Wilson . . 745

[illegible] Speeches [illegible] Mr. [illegible] Mr. Snagg 746

[illegible] Speeches [illegible] Mr. [illegible] Mr. Manwood, Mr. Fleetwood, Mr. Serj. Lovelace, Mr. Norton . . 747

19. [illegible] not [illegible] Mr. [illegible] Mr. [illegible] Anonymous, Mr. Bell, Mr. Alford . . . . . . . 749

[illegible] Speeches of Mr. [illegible] Mr. Serj. Lovelace, Mr. Fleetwood, Mr. Norton . . . . 755

[illegible] House—Speeches of Mr. [illegible] Mr. Speaker 760

[illegible] Speeches [illegible] Mr. Comptroller, Mr. Cleere, Mr. Yelverton, Mr. Fleetwood . . 761

[illegible] Commons—Speeches of Mr. [illegible] Mr. [illegible] Mr. Norton . . . . . . . 763

The Queen [illegible] Prerogative, &c. . . . . . . . 765

May 10. Proceedings in a Case of Bribery . . . . . 765

[illegible] Speech [illegible] the Close of the Session—The Parliament dissolved . . . . . . 766

1572 May 8. A Pa[illegible] Keeper Bacon's [illegible] Proceedings re[illegible] Queen of Scots [illegible] Norfolk be-headed—Case of Privilege . . . . . . 772

1575 Feb. 8. A [illegible] Matters—Proceedings relative to the Queen of Scots—A Bill against Luxury in Apparel—A Subsidy . . . . 783

Mr. [illegible] of the House [illegible] before the Committee—Is committed to the Tower . . . . . 785

10. Sir Walter Mildmay's Speech for a Subsidy . . . . 798

[illegible] Sir W. Mildmay's Speech—The Speaker recommends it to the [illegible] Lord Keeper's Speech at the Close of the Session . . . . . . . . 802

1581 Jan. 16. [illegible] Names [illegible] Death of [illegible] between the [illegible] The [illegible] . 809

[illegible] Pope . 815

[illegible] 18. The [illegible] Close of the Session—[illegible] The Parliament dissolved after 18 Prorogations . . . . . . . 821

1585 Nov. 23. A P[illegible] at Westminster—[illegible] Esq. chosen Speaker—[illegible] Dr. P[illegible] the Queen's [illegible] the [illegible] the Close of the Session—The Queen's Speech on proroguing the Parliament . . . 821

1586 Oct. 29. A Parliament held at Westminster—The Lord Chancellor's Speech—[illegible] Esq. chosen Speaker—Proceedings

| A.D. | | | Page |
|---|---|---|---|
| | | relative to the Queen of Scots—Sir Christ. Hatton's Speech—[illegible] the Queen of Scots—[illegible] A Benevolence from both Houses | 834 |
| 1588 | Feb. 22. | Sir C. Hatton [illegible] | [illegible] |
| | 27 | Mr. Cope's Motion for altering the Common Prayer | 850 |
| | Mar 1 | Mr. Wentworth's Speech [illegible] the House | [illegible] |
| | Nov 12. | A Parliament held at Westminster—Lord Chancellor Hatton's Speech—Gen. Snagg, Esq. chosen Speaker—A Supply—Debate on the [illegible]—The Queen's [illegible]—Debate [illegible] Supply | 853 |
| 1592-3 | Feb 19. | A Parliament [illegible]—The Lord Keeper's Speech—[illegible] Speaker—His Speech to the Queen—The Lord Keeper's Answer—The Speaker's [illegible]—The Lord Keeper's [illegible] Answer—Bill against [illegible] Recusants—Debate [illegible] Parliament—The Lords make a Contribution for the Relief of maimed Soldiers | 858 |
| | | Lord Burleigh's Speech for a Supply | 865 |
| | | [illegible] | [illegible] |
| | 24 | [illegible] committed [illegible] proposing a [illegible] entailing the [illegible] | 870 |
| | 26 | Debate on the Supply—[illegible] Sir R. Cecil, Sir J. Wolley, Sir J. Fortescue, Mr. Fran[illegible] | 871 |
| | 27. | Debate on a Bill to reform the [illegible] Ecclesiastical Courts—Mr. Morrice, Mr. Dalton, Sir J. Wolley, Sir F. Knowles, Dr. Lewen, Mr. O. St. John, Sir R. Cecil, Mr. Speaker | 875 |
| | | Debate on a Bill relating to Recusants—Mr. [illegible] Bacon, Sir F. Stafford, Mr. Wroth | 879 |
| | 28. | Further Debate on the Supply—Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer, Sir H. Knivett, Serj. Harris, Sir Walter Raleigh | 879 |
| | March 1. | Message from the Lords [illegible]—Sir R. Cecil, Mr. F. Bacon, Sir W. Moore, Sir G. Carey, Sir W. Raleigh, Mr. Wroth, Mr. Beale, Sir R. Cecil, Sir W. Brunker, Mr. Beale, Sir T. Heneage, Sir J. Wolley, Sir H. Knivett, Sir H. Upton, Sir R. Cecil, Sir W. Raleigh, Sir F. Grevile | 880 |
| | | A Message from the Queen, [illegible] Commons to meddle with the State or Church | 888 |
| | April 10. | The Speaker's Speech to the Queen [illegible] Session—The Lord Keeper's Answer—[illegible] ing the Parliament | 889 |
| 1597 | Oct 24. | A Parliament held at Westminster—[illegible] Yelverton, Esq. chosen Speaker—[illegible]—The Speaker's Excuse—[illegible] during the Session | [illegible] |
| | Nov. 5 | Bill [illegible] Husbandry—[illegible] | [illegible] |
| | 15 | Motion for a large Supply—The Chancellor of the [illegible] Sir F. Bacon | 900 |
| | | The Speaker's [illegible] Parliament—The Lord Keeper's Answer | 904 |
| 1601 | Oct. 27. | A Parliament [illegible] Westminster—[illegible] to Bishops' Leases | [illegible] |
| | Nov. 5. | Debate [illegible] Weights and Measures—Mr. Francis Bacon's Speech | 914 |
| | | Debate on [illegible] Mr. Johnson, Sir E. Hobby, Mr. Speaker, Mr. Secretary Cecil | 915 |
| | 7. | Debate [illegible] Sir F. Fortescue | [illegible] |
| | 9. | Bill to repress Common [illegible]—[illegible] Heywood [illegible] | 918 |

A. D. Page
[illegible] Nov. 9 Debate on the Supply renewed—Mr. Sec. Cecil, Sir R. Wroth, Mr. F. Moore, Mr. Wingfield, Mr. F. Bacon, Sir W. Raleigh, Mr. Sec. Cecil, Sir A. Gorges, Mr. Serj. Heyle, Mr. Montague . 918
Debate on a Bill against Pluralities—Mr. Dar[illegible], Dr. Crompton, Sir G. Moore, Mr. Lock, Dr. James, Mr. D. Waterhouse, Serjeant Harris, Mr. Martin, Mr. F. Hastings, Mr. R. Owen 922
20 Debate on a Bill against Monopolies—Mr. Spicer, Mr. F. Bacon, Dr. [illegible], Mr. [illegible], Serj. Harris, Mr. Montague, Mr. F. Moore, Mr. Martin, Sir G. Moore, Mr. Wingfield, Sir W. Raleigh, Mr. [illegible], Mr. [illegible], Sir E. Hoby, Mr. F. Bacon, Mr. [illegible], Sir R. Wroth, Mr. Hakewell, Mr. H. [illegible], Mr. F. Moore, Mr. Spicer, Mr. Davies, Mr. Sec. Cecil, Mr. Montague, Mr. Martin, Mr. Sec. Cecil . . 925
25. The Speaker acquaints the House by the Queen's Order, that the Monopolies shall be cancelled—Address of Thanks to the Queen—The Queen's Answer—Great Increase of Subsidies 933
Debate on a Bill against Cursing and Swearing—Mr. Glascock, Sir F. Hastings . . . . . . . . . 943
Debate on a Bill for resorting to Church—Mr. R. Owen, Sir F. Hastings, Mr. C. [illegible], Sir G. Moore, Mr. Bond, Mr. Comptroller, Mr. Glascock, Mr. Speaker, Mr. Martin, Sir R. Wroth, Mr. Johnson, Mr. Hide . . . . . . 944
Dec 3. Complaint against [illegible], &c.—Mr. Dannet, Mr. Peake, Mr. Sec. Cecil, Mr. Dannet . . . . . 947
[illegible]. Further Debate on the Bill for resorting to Church—Mr. Bond, Sir F. Hastings, Dr. Bennet, Sir R. Wroth, Sir W. Raleigh, Sir F. Hastings, Mr. Boyes, Sir W. Raleigh, Mr. Comptroller, Mr. Sec. Cecil . . . . . . . . . 949
16. Debate on a Bill relating to Soldiers, &c.—Mr. Glascock, Mr. Townshend . . . . . . . . . . 953
17 Sir Francis Hastings's Speech for reforming Abuses . 954
19 The Speaker's Speech to the Queen at the Close of the Session—The Lord Keeper's Answer—Death of the Queen . . 955
Taxes in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth . . . . 957
List of Peers [illegible] in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth . . 957
List of Boroughs [illegible] the Privilege of sending Representatives to Parliament was granted or restored by Queen Elizabeth . . . . . . . . 958
List of [illegible] in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth . . 958

## JAMES I.

[illegible] Jan. 31 The King's Proclamation for calling a Parliament—State of the [illegible]—The King's Speech to both Houses of Parliament—[illegible] Speaker—His Speech to the King—Affront offered to a Member—[illegible]—A grand Conference between the [illegible] . 967
Mar. [illegible] The Case [illegible] Sir John Fortescue, [illegible] Return [illegible] of Buckingham . . 998
[illegible] April 2 Act against Witchcraft . . . . . . . . . 1017
14 A [illegible] Union between England and Scotland—The King's Proposal for an Union . . . 1018
19 A [illegible] appointed [illegible] Matters [illegible] to be debated . 1024
[illegible]—Conference about [illegible] . 1024
May [illegible] The Commons complain of a Book in favour of the Union—The Bishop of Bristol, the Author, asks Pardon for it . . 1027
Debate on the [illegible] of Sir [illegible] Shirley, a Member . 1028
[illegible] Apology of the Commons to the King, touching their Privileges . 1030
25. Lord Montague opposes the Bill against Jesuits, &c.—Is committed to the Fleet . 104[illegible]

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

| A. D. | | | Page |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1604 | June 26. | The King's Letter declining any further Subsidy at this time—Grant of Tonnage and Poundage | 1044 |
| | July 7 | The Speaker's Speech to the King at the Close of the Session | 1046 |
| 1605 | Nov. 5. | Gunpowder Plot discovered—The King's Speech upon that Occasion—Proceedings relative to the Popish Plot | 1052 |
| | Feb. 12 | Bill relating to Purveyance—Proceedings on the Subsidy—The King's Message relating to [illegible]—The Commons propose a further Reformation in Ecclesiastical Matters—The Union resumed | 1064 |
| 1606 | May 15 | Debate on the Subsidy—The Speaker's Speech and King's Answer on presenting the Subsidy Bill | [illegible] |
| | Nov. 18. | The Parliament meet at Westminster—The King's Speech on opening the Session—Proceedings on that part of the King's Speech | 1071 |
| | Feb. 10. | Dispute between the two Houses concerning the Naturalization of the Scotch | 1078 |
| | 12. | Debate in the Commons on the Point of Naturalization—Speeches of Mr. Fuller, Mr. Wentworth, Mr. Martin, [illegible] | 1082 |
| | 13. | Sir Christopher Pigott reflects on the Scots—Is committed to the Tower—And expelled | [illegible] |
| 1607 | Mar. 31. | The Parliament meet at Whitehall—The King's Speech for hastening the Union | 1099 |
| | May 2. | The King explains some Doubts in his former Speech | 1117 |
| | | Complaint against the Depredations of the Spaniards | 1119 |
| 1609 | Feb. 9 | The Earl of Salisbury lays before Parliament the King's Necessities | 1121 |
| | 27 | The Commons complain of Dr. Cowel's Book, tending to advance the Prerogative Royal | 1122 |
| | Mar. 10. | Proceedings in relation to Tenures, &c. | 1124 |
| | May 8. | The Lord Treasurer acquaints the Lords with the Murder of Henry IV. of France | 1128 |
| | June 2 | Form of the Creation of Henry Prince of Wales | 1130 |
| | 7. | The Parliament meet again by Adjournment | [illegible] |
| | 18 | Farther Proceedings relating to Tenures, &c. | 1131 |
| | July 9. | Farther Proceedings on Matters of Grievance and Impositions | [illegible] |
| | 17 | The King offers to accept 200,000l. yearly in lieu of Tenures, &c. | [illegible] |
| | 23. | The King's Answers unto certain Grievances delivered to him by the Commons | 1135 |
| | | Memorial of the Commons concerning the Great Contract with his Majesty, touching Tenures, &c. | 1140 |
| | | Memorial of the Lords touching the Great Contract, &c. | 1145 |
| | Dec. 31 | The King's Proclamation for dissolving the Parliament | 1147 |
| 1614 | April 5. | A new Parliament held at Westminster—The King's Speech on opening the Session—Sir R. Crew chosen Speaker—The King's second Speech to the Parliament | 1149 |
| | May 21. | Debate in the Lords as to a Conference with the Commons on Impositions | 1158 |
| | 28 | Complaint of the Commons against the Bishop of Lincoln—Case of the King's Attorney General | 1159 |
| | Apr. 12. | Debate in the Commons on the Supply—Mr. Secretary Herbert, Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer, the Attorney General | 1163 |
| | May 25. | Debate in the Commons on the Complaint against the Bishop of Lincoln | 1165 |
| | June 5 | The King threatens to dissolve the Parliament—Speech of Sir G. Moore—The Parliament dissolved | 1165 |
| 1620 | Jan. 30 | A new Parliament held at Westminster—Proclamation setting forth the King's Reasons for calling it—List of the House of Commons—The King's Speech on opening the Session—Lord Chancellor Bacon's Speech—Thos. Richardson, Esq. chosen Speaker | 1168 |
| | Feb. 8. | Complaint against R. Cannell—A Conference for putting the Laws in Execution against Jesuits | 1181 |
| | 16 | Quarrel between the Earl of Berkshire and Lord Scroop—The Earl of Berkshire's Submission | 1182 |
| | 5. | Debate in the Commons as to Recusants | 1184 |

[illegible]

A. D. Page

1620 Feb. 5. Debate on the Supply—Mr. Sec. Calvert, Sir W. Cope, Treasurer [illegible] Mo[illegible], Sir J. [illegible], Master of the Rolls, Sir E. Coke . . . . . 1185

6. D[illegible] C[illegible], Sir W. Spencer, Sir E. Sackville, Sir G. Mompesson, Sir W. Stroude . . 1188

10. [illegible] taking the Oath [illegible] . . 1189

15. M[illegible] the Sabbath—Mr. Strickland, Sir T. Wentworth, Sir G. Moore, Sir W. [illegible] M[illegible] Sir H. Ander-[illegible] M[illegible] . . 1190

[illegible] [illegible], &c.—M[illegible], Sir E. Coke, Mr. Alford . . . . . . . . . . 1192

[illegible] [illegible], Sir W. Herrick, Sir E. Coke, Mr. Secretary, Sir E. Sandys, Mr. Crowe, Sir H. Poole, Sir D. Digges, Master of the Wards, Sir E. Giles, [illegible] Mr. Towerson, Sir N. Rich, Mr. Guy, Sir J. Walter, Sir F. Gre-[illegible] . . 1194

Mar. 3. [illegible] a Monopolist and Patentee . . . . . . . . . 1198

Motion for an Academy for Youth of Quality . . . 1200

[illegible] son . . 1201

1[illegible]. [illegible] to speak in their own Defence at Committees, &c. . . . . . . . 1201

Report concerning Protestation upon Honour . . . 1202

15 [illegible] Grievances . . . 12[illegible]4

P[illegible] Sir E. Coke, Mr. Noye, Sir R. [illegible] C[illegible], Mr. W[illegible], Sir T. Rowe, C[illegible] Sir D. Digges, Mr. Alford . 12[illegible]5

13 [illegible] . . 12[illegible]8

C[illegible] Lord Bacon and the Bishop of [illegible] Letter to the Lords [illegible] Defence—Mr. Egerton's Petition against Lord Bacon . . . . . . . 1208

Report from the Committee on Grievances . . . . 1218

[illegible] Bacon's Case [illegible]

26. [illegible] Grievances, &c. . [illegible]

[illegible] Mompesson—[illegible] King adds to Sir G. Mompesson's Sentence . . . 1228

[illegible] and Sir F. Villiers . . . . . . . . . 1231

[illegible] Answer [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] expelled by [illegible]

Lord Bacon's submission to the Lords . . . . . 1236

[illegible] Proofs thereof . . . . . . . 1239

Proceedings in the Case of Sir John Bennet . . . . 1241

2[illegible] Charge against Sir Francis Mitchel . . . . . 1242

Petition of Sir Henry Yelverton . . . . . 1243

30. The Lord Chancellor Bacon's Confession . . . . 1244

Further Proceedings against Sir Henry Yelverton . . 1247

May 3. The Judgment against the Lord Chancellor Bacon . . . 1248

[illegible]

[illegible] the Princess Palatine . . . . . . . . . 1250

Sir Henry Yelverton's Case—Sentence against him . . 1255

Proceedings against Floyde before the Lords . . . 1259

The King's Reasons for adjourning the Parliament . . . 1262

[illegible]—Sir S. Sands, Mr. Hackwill, Sir G. Moore, Sir N. Rich, Mr. [illegible] Crewe, [illegible], Sir E. Sandys, Sir R. [illegible]

[illegible]

# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

A. D. — Page
1620
Philips, Sir S. Sandes, Sir E. Coke, Mr. Alford, Mr. Delbridge, Mr. Mallory, Serjeant Ashley, Sir E. Sandys, Sir R. Phillips . . . . . [illegible]
May 30. Proceedings against the Bishop of Landaff for Brocage in Bribery [illegible]
Charge against Sir John Bennet for Bribery and Corruption—Sir John Bennet's Defence . . . 1270
Further Debate in the Commons touching the proposed Adjournment—Sir G. Moore, Sir B. Rudyard, Sir R. Grosvenor, Sir R. Phillips, Sir T. Wentworth, Mr. [illegible], Mr. Secretary Calvert, Dr. Gooch, Mr. Solicitor, Sir W. Spencer, Sir W. Herbert, Mr. Alford, Mr. Crewe, Sir E. Giles, Sir R. Crane, Serjeant Ashley, Sir E. Cecil . . . . . . . 1275
30 p. m. The Debate continued—Sir [illegible], Mr. Neale, Mr. Recorder Finch, Sir E. Sackville, the Master of the Wards, Sir D. Digges . . . . . . . . . . 1279
31 The Debate continued—Mr. Alford, Sir E. Coke, Sir E. Montague, Mr. Hackwill, Sir E. Coke, Sir S. Sandes, Sir E. Cecil, Sir D. Digges, Sir E. Montague, Sir R. Phillips, Sir E. Coke, Sir T. Rowe, Mr. Delbridge, Master of the Wards, Sir E. Cecil, Sir E. Sandys, Master of the Wards . . . 1280
Difference between an Adjournment and a Prorogation [illegible]
June 1 Further Proceedings concerning the Adjournment—Mr. Noy, Mr. Mallet . . . . . . . . . . . 1286
2 The King's Speech to the Lords touching the Adjournment 1287
2 p. m. Both Houses ordered to Adjourn [illegible]
Debate in the Commons touching certain Words used by Sir Edwin Sandys—Sir W. [illegible], Sir E. Sandys, Sir S. Sandes, Mr. Alford, Sir W. Spencer, Sir G. Moore, Sir D. Digges, Mr. Towerson, Sir E. Coke . . . . . . . 1289
4. The King adjourns the Parliament . . . 1291
The Commons' Declaration for the Recovery of the Palatinate—Speeches of Sir J. Perrott, Sir E. Cecil, Sir N. Rich, Sir D. Digges, Sir E. Coke . . . . . . . . 1292
Nov. 20 The Parliament meet again—The Lord Keeper's Report of a Message from the King to both Houses—Lord Digby's Report of the Message concerning Spain, and the Lord Treasurer's Report of the Message relating to the Navy . [illegible]
21. Debates in the Commons on Popery, the Spanish Match, &c.—Mr. Alford, Mr. Sec. Calvert, Sir D. Digges, Mr. Mallory, Lord Clifford, Sir T. Wentworth, Sir R. [illegible], Mr. Sec. Calvert . . . . . . . . . . 1301
26 The Debate continued—Sir D. Digges, Sir B. Rudyard, Sir M. Fleetwood, Sir J. Perrott, Sir E. Sackville, Sir R. Phillips, Sir E. Giles, Mr. Sec. Calvert, Sir G. Moore, Mr. T. Crewe . 1303
27. The Debate continued—Mr. Wilde, Mr. Treasurer, Mr. Neale, Mr. Pymme, Sir R. Grosvenor, Sir J. Perrott, Sir E. Sackville, Sir T. Wentworth, Sir R. Weston, Mr. Solicitor, Sir E. Coke, Sir R. Phillips, Mr. Alford, Mr. Serjeant Ashley, Sir Julius Cæsar, Sir W. Stroude, Sir N. Rich, Mr. J. Finch, Sir D. Digges, Sir G. Moore, Mr. Towerson, Sir G. Palmes, Sir T. [illegible] [illegible]
28. The Debate continued—Sir J. [illegible] Pymme, Sir N. Rich, Sir T. Germain, Mr. Secretary, Sir R. Philips, Sir E. Warder, Sir W. Stroude, Mr. T. Crewe, Sir E. Coke, Sir H. Poole, Sir G. Moore, Mr. Alford, Sir T. Hoby, [illegible] Mr. Secretary, [illegible] [illegible]
Dec. 1. The Debate continued—[illegible] Mr. Spencer, Mr. Chancellor of the Duchy, Sir H. Witherington, Sir S. Sandes, Sir G. Moore, Mr. T. Bellasis . . 1317
3. The Debate continued—Sir [illegible], Sir J. Perrott, Sir R. Weston, Mr. Wentworth, Sir G. Moore, Sir R. Phillips, Sir H. Fane, Mr. H. Finch, Mr. Brooke, Mr. T. Crewe, Sir E. Coke, Mr. Noy, [illegible], Sir T. Wentworth, Sir R. Phillips, Mr. Glanvile, Sir D. Digges . . . . . . . . . . . 1319

A. D. Page
1621. Dec. 3. Petition and Remonstrance of the Commons against Popery, the [illegible] . . . 1323
4. The King's [illegible] Letter [illegible] . . . [illegible] W. Stroude, Sir D. Digges . . . 1326
5. The Debate continued—Mr. [illegible], Sir R. Phillips, Sir T. Wentworth, Sir F. Seymour, Sir G. Moore, Mr. Hackwill, Mr. [illegible] . . . 1328
6. A [illegible] to the King—Speeches of Mr. Secretary Calvert, Sir R. Phillips, Mr. T. Crewe, Mr. Glanvile, Sir D. Digges, Sir G. Moore, Sir E. Coke, Sir E. Giles . . . 1333
14. The King's Answer to the [illegible] Petition of the Commons—[illegible] Sir R. [illegible], Sir H. Poole, Sir D. Digges, Mr. Solicitor, Mr. T. Crewe, Sir [illegible] . . . 1338
15. [illegible] Mr. Treasurer, Sir R. Phillips, Mr. R. Wentworth, Sir D. Digges, Mr. T. Crewe, Mr. Solicitor, Sir E. Coke, Sir W. Spencer, Mr. Noye, Mr. Secretary, Mr. Granvile . . . 1345
17. [illegible] Sir F. Seymour, Sir R. Phillips, Mr. Recorder, Sir N. Rich, Sir G. Moore, Sir E. Cecil, Mr. T. Crewe, Sir D. Digges, [illegible] Solicitor, Mr. Serj. Ashley, Mr. Hackwill, Sir W. Stroude, Sir E. Coke, Sir T. Wentworth . . . 1350
18. The King's Letter [illegible] Mr. T. Crewe, Mr. Noye, Sir R. Phillips, Mr. Glanvile, Sir [illegible] Sir T. Wentworth [illegible] . . . 1355
Petition [illegible] to the King for the above Letter—Mr. Alford, Mr. T. Crewe, Sir E. Coke . . . 1359
18. p. m. [illegible] . . . 1360
The King's Answer to the Petition of Thanks and Excuse . . . 1361
[illegible] the Commons out of their Journal Book . . . 1362
Further Proceedings in the Case of Sir John Bennet . . . 1364
[illegible] the Lord Keeper Williams . . . 1364
[illegible] with the Commons touching the Supply . . . 1365
Jan. 6. [illegible] King's Reasons for dissolving the Parliament . . . 1366
Several Members of the Commons committed to Prison . . . 1371
1623. Feb. 19. [illegible] of the Peers [illegible] the King's Speech at opening [illegible] His Speech to the King—The Lord Keeper's Answer . . . 1379
24. [illegible] the Spanish Match [illegible] the Duke [illegible] convened [illegible] the [illegible] The King's Answer . . . 1381
March 12. The Lords consider the State of the Nation . . . 1391
[illegible] Speeches [illegible] of the Exchequer [illegible] . . . 139[illegible]

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

| A.D. | | | Page |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1623 | Mar. 13 | Declaration of both Houses to assist the King upon his dissolving the Treaties with Spain—The King's Answer | 1394 |
| | 22 | The Parliament's Address to the King upon voting a Supply | 1397 |
| | 23 | M[illegible] and others punished for reflecting on the Lord Keeper | 1399 |
| | 24 | Both Houses present to the King a Memorial in Justification of the Duke of Buckingham—The King's Answer | 1399 |
| | 25. | The King's Declaration upon the dissolving of the Treaty with Spain | 1402 |
| | April 1. | The Lords desire a Conference in regard to the Supply | 1403 |
| | 2 | Conduct of the Lord Treasurer Middlesex impeached | 1405 |
| | 3. | The Commons present a Petition against Recusants—Copy of the Petition | 1406 |
| | | The Lord Treasurer Middlesex complains of a Plot against him | 1408 |
| | 6. | Joint Petition of both Houses for executing the Laws against Jesuits, &c.—The King's Answer | 1409 |
| | | PROCEEDINGS ON THE IMPEACHMENT OF THE LORD TREASURER MIDDLESEX | 1411 |
| | May 19 | Articles of the Charge against the Bishop of Norwich—The Bishop's Defence—The Bishop's Complaint against one Thomas Stokes | 1478 |
| | | The Commons desire a longer continuance of the Session | 1483 |
| | | The Commons Petition against Recusants | 1484 |
| | 24 | The Judges' Opinions on some Clauses of the Subsidy Bill in point of Privilege—The Protestation of the Lords in consequence thereof | 1484 |
| | | Debate on the Subsidy Bill in the Commons | 1487 |
| | 28 | Resolutions of the Lords touching Matters of Privilege | 1488 |
| | | Order of the Lords concerning Judicature | 1489 |
| | | Petition of the Commons to the King, complaining of divers Grievances | 1489 |
| | 29 | The Speaker's Speech at the Close of the Session—The King's Answer—The Lord Keeper's Answer—Death of James I | 1493 |
| | | Revenue of James I | 1506 |
| | | Price of Provisions during the Reign of James I. | 1511 |
| | | List of Boroughs to which the Privilege of sending Representatives to Parliament was granted or restored by James I. | 1511 |
| | | List of Acts passed in the Reign of James I. | 1511 |

Print image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

# PARLIAMENTARY PAPERS,

CONSISTING OF

*I. Articles of Impeachment.—II. List of Taxes.—III. Price of Provisions.—IV. List of Public Acts.—V. State of the Peerage.—VI. State of the House of Commons.—VII. Archbishops of Canterbury from the Year* 1070.—*VIII. Lord Chancellors from* [illegible].—*IX. Archbishops of York from* 1070.—*X. Lords High Treasurers from* [illegible].—*XI. Lords Privy Seal from Henry VIII.—XII. Speakers of the House of Commons from* 1377.—*XIII. Masters of the Rolls from* [illegible].—*XIV. Attornies General from* [illegible].—*XV. Solicitors General from* 1461....*to the Death of James I.* in 1625.

## I.—ARTICLES OF IMPEACHMENT.

Against Lord Mortimer . . . . . 84
Against Michael de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk . . . . . 186
Against the Archbishop of York, the Duke of Ireland, &c. . . . 198
Against the Duke of Gloucester, &c. . . . 226
Against [illegible] . . . 254
Against the Bishop of Winchester, in 1426 . . . [illegible]
Against Cardinal Wolsey . . . [illegible]
Against Sir Henry Yelverton . . . . 1232
Against the Lord Chancellor Bacon . . 1239
Against the Lord Treasurer Middlesex . 1411
Against the Bishop of Norwich . . . 1478

## II.—LIST OF TAXES.

In the Reign of Henry I. . . . [illegible]
Henry II. . . . [illegible]
[illegible] . . . [illegible]
[illegible] . . . [illegible]
[illegible] . . . [illegible]
[illegible] . . . [illegible]
Edward III. . . . . . 146
[illegible] . . . [illegible]
[illegible] . . . [illegible]
In the Reign of Henry V. . . . [illegible]
Henry VI. . . . [illegible]
Edward IV. . . . . . 439
Henry VII. . . . [illegible]
Henry VIII. . . . [illegible]
Edward VI. . . . [illegible]
Philip and Mary . . . 632
Elizabeth . . . [illegible]
James I. . . . [illegible]

## III.—PRICE OF PROVISIONS.

In the Reign of [illegible] . . . 55
Edward II. . . . [illegible]
[illegible] . . . 148
[illegible] . . . [illegible]
Henry IV. . . . 315
Henry V. . . . [illegible]
Henry VI. . . . 411
In the Reign of Edward IV. . . . . . 439
Henry VII. . . . [illegible]
Henry VIII. . . . . 506
Edward VI. . . . [illegible]
Philip and Mary . . . 632
Elizabeth . . . [illegible]
James I. . . . [illegible]

## IV.—LIST OF PUBLIC ACTS.

In the Reign of Edward III. . . . [illegible]
Richard II. . . . [illegible]
Henry IV. . . . [illegible]
Henry V. . . . 343
Henry VI. . . . 413
Edward IV. . . . [illegible]
Richard III. . . . [illegible]
In the Reign of Henry VII. . . . [illegible]
Henry VIII. . . . [illegible]
Edward VI. . . . [illegible]
Philip and Mary . . . 632
Elizabeth . . . . . . 958
James I. . . . 1511

## V.—STATE OF THE PEERAGE.

Peers summoned to Parliament by Edward I. in 1307 . . . *page* 54
By Edward III. in 1353 . . . . . . . 120
By Richard II. in 1377 . . . . . . . 157
By Henry IV. in 1399 . . . . . . . 249
By Henry V. in 1414 . . . . . . . 329
By Henry VI. in 1423 . . . . . . . 347
By Henry VI. in 1452 . . . . . . . 389
By Edward IV. in 1461 . . . . . . 418
By Edward IV. in 1472 . . . . . . 429
By Richard III. in 1484 . . . . . . 442
List of Peers summoned to Parliament by Henry VII. in 1486 . . . . *page* 448
By Henry VIII. in 1509 . . . . . . 475
By Henry VIII. in 1537 . . . . . . 527
By Henry VIII. in 1540 . . . . . . 535
By Edward VI. in 1547 . . . . . . 580
By Queen Mary, in 1553 . . . . . . 606
By Queen Elizabeth, in 1558 . . . . . 635
By Queen Elizabeth, in 1580 . . . . . 802
By James I. in 1603 . . . . . . . . 970
By James I. in 1623 . . . . . . . . 1872

## VI.—STATE OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS.

List of Counties and Boroughs which returned Members to Parliament at the Accession of Henry VIII. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 563
List of Counties and Boroughs, to whom the Privilege of sending Representatives to Parliament was granted or restored by Henry VIII. . . . . . . . . . . 562
By Edward VI. . . . . . . . . . 602
By Queen Mary . . . . . . . . . 632
By Elizabeth . . . . . . . . . . 958
By James I. . . . . . . . . . . 1511

List of the Members of the House of Commons returned to serve in Parliament the 1st of James I. in 1603 . . . . . . . . . . . . 971
List of the Members of the House of Commons returned to serve in the third Parliament of James I. in 1620 . . . . . . . . . . . . . 1160

## VII.—LIST OF THE ARCHBISHOPS OF CANTERBURY, FROM THE YEAR 1070 TO THE DEATH OF JAMES I. 1625.

1070 St. Lanfranc, Abbot of Caen, an Italian. He removed Bishops sees from small towns to large cities.

[The see vacant four years.]

1093 St. Anselm, Abbot of Becco. Died in 1109.

[The see vacant five years.]

1114 Rodulphus, translated from Rochester.

1122 William Corbois, or Corbel, Prior of St. Osyth, in Essex.

1138 Theobald, Abbot of Becco.

1162 St. Thomas Beckett, Archdeacon of Canterbury, Provost of Beverley, and Lord Chancellor.

1173 Richard, Prior of Dover.

11[illegible] Baldwin, translated from Worcester.

1191 Reginald Fitz Jocelme, translated from Wells.

1193 Hubert Walter, translated from Salisbury, Lord Chancellor and Chief Justice.

1207 Stephen Langton, Cardinal.

1228 Ric. Wetherhead, Chancellor of Lincoln.

1234 St. Edmund, Treasurer and Prebendary of Salisbury.

1244 Boniface of Savoy, translated from Valentia, in Provence, uncle to the Queen.

1272 Robert Kilwarby, Provincial of Friars Minors, Cardinal.

1279 John Peckham, Canon of Lyons, Provincial of Friars Minors.

1294 Robert Winchelsey, Archdeacon of Essex, Chancellor of Oxford.

1313 Walter Reynold, translated from Worcester, Lord Chancellor, and Lord Treasurer.

1327 Simon Mepham, Prebendary of Chichester.

1333 John Stratford, translated from Winchester, Lord Chancellor.

1348 John Ufford, Dean of Lincoln, Lord Chancellor.

1349 Thomas Bradwardin, Chancellor of London.

Simon Islippe, Prebendary of St. Paul's, Secretary to the King, and Keeper of the Privy Seal.

1366 Simon Langham, translated from Ely, Cardinal and Lord Chancellor.

1368 William Wittlesey, translated from Worcester.

1375 Simon Sudbury, translated from London, Lord Chancellor. Beheaded by the rebels under Wat Tyler.

1381 Wm. Courtney, translated from London, Chancellor of Oxford.

1396 Thomas Fitz-Alan (son to the Earl of Arundel), translated from York, Lord Chancellor.

1414 Henry Chicheley, translated from St. David's.

1443 John Stafford, translated from Bath and Wells; Cardinal, Lord Chancellor, and Lord Treasurer.

1452 John Kemp, translated from York, Cardinal, and Lord Chancellor.

[illegible]

1116 Richard, a Chaplain, was Keeper of the [illegible]

Reginald, Prior of Montacute.
Thomas.

[illegible]
Roger, Bishop of Salisbury, again.

[illegible]

[illegible] his office in 1191.

[illegible]

Walter, Archbishop of Roan.

[illegible]

1199 Hubert Walter, Archbishop of Canter- [illegible]

[illegible] afterwards Bishop of Lincoln.

[illegible] Oct. 19, 1213.

[illegible] Seal under Peter de Roche, or de Ru- [illegible]

[illegible] made Chancellor for Life by the Parliament, Feb. 12.

[illegible] it to Geoffry, a Templar, his brother, and John de Lexintune; but Ralph had [illegible]

[illegible] Evesham, is made Keeper in his room; [illegible] he resigns the Seal; and [illegible] is appointed Keeper.

1246 Ralph Briton, Chancellor or only Keeper.
[illegible] Keeper.
[illegible] Bath and Wells.
John de Lexintune, Keeper. Sept. 18.
[illegible] time Chancellor of St. Paul's.

[illegible]

1247 [illegible]

1249 John Mansel, again. He was then Pro- [illegible]

1250 Peter de Rievaulx, and William de Kil- [illegible]

1254 Henry de Wenham, or Wingham, afterwards Bishop of Winchester and London.

1258 Walter de Merton. Deprived the same [illegible]

1261 Walter de Merton, restored, with a yearly [illegible]

1263 Nicholas de Ely, Archdeacon of Ely, [illegible]

[illegible] cery; afterwards Bishop of Bath and [illegible]

[illegible] September 30.

[illegible] January 16.

[illegible]

1315 John de Sandal, afterwards Bishop of [illegible]

[illegible]

William Airemine, or Ayrmine, after- [illegible]

1323 John Stratford, Bishop of Winchester.

[illegible] August 20.

[illegible] Keeper.

[illegible]

[illegible] Keeper. He delivered it, January 6, [illegible]

Richard de Aungervile, alias Bury, Bi- [illegible]

1338 Ro. de Stratford, Bp. Elect of Chichester.

[illegible]

1340 John de St. Paul, Michael de Wath, [illegible] Great Seal. December 8.

1341 [illegible] Keeper.

[illegible] terbury, Chancellor for the fourth time.

Robert de Stratford, Bp. of Chichester.

[illegible] a resolution not to give the custody [illegible]

Sir Robert Burgchier, or de Bourchier, [illegible]

[illegible] coln. October 26.

[illegible] of St David's, Worcester, Archbishop of York, and a Cardinal. July 2.

1356 [illegible]

[illegible] 17

[illegible]

1378 Sir John Knyvet. July.

[illegible]

1380 [illegible] terbury. Beheaded by the rebels un- [illegible]

1381 William de Courtney, Bishop of London.

[illegible] September 20.

1[illegible] Sir Michael de la Pole. [illegible]

1[illegible] [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] of Win-chester. [illegible]

1392 Thomas de Arundel, again.

[illegible]

[illegible]

1401 Edmund Stafford, Bishop of Exeter.

1404 Henry Beauford, or Beaufort, Bishop of Lincoln, afterwards Bishop of Winchester, and a Cardinal.

1405 Thomas Langley, Bishop of Durham.

1407 Thomas de Arundel, Archbishop of Canterbury. [illegible]

1410 John Wakering, Master of the Rolls, Keeper. Jan. 19.

Sir [illegible] Beaufort, [illegible] the King, [illegible] by Catharine Swinford. January 31.

1412 Thomas de Arundel, Archbishop of Canterbury.

141[illegible] Henry de Beaufort, Bishop of Winchester.

1417 Simon Garnstede, Master of the Rolls. Keeper from Sept. 4, to Oct. 12.

Henry Beaufort, Bishop of Winchester.

141[illegible] Thomas Langley, Bishop of Durham.

1424 Henry Beaufort, Bishop of Winchester. July 16.

14[illegible] John Kemp, Bishop of London. March.

14[illegible] [illegible]

14[illegible] John Stafford, Bishop of Bath and Wells, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury. [illegible]

14[illegible] [illegible] Keeper. [illegible]

14[illegible] John Stafford, Archbishop of Canterbury, and a Cardinal.

William Patten, alias Wainfleet, Bishop of Winchester.

1450 John Kemp, Archbishop of York, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, and a Cardinal.

14[illegible] Richard Nevil, Earl of Salisbury, [illegible]

1455 Thomas Bourchier, Archbishop of Canterbury. March.

1457 William de Waynflete, Bishop of Winchester. [illegible]

1460 George Nevil, Bishop of Exeter, afterwards Archbishop of York. [illegible]

Sir John Fortescue.

George Nevil, Bp. of Exeter, aforesaid.

14[illegible] Robert Kirkham, Keeper.

1468 Robert Stillington, Bishop of Bath and Wells. June 8.

1473 Henry Bourchier, Earl of Essex.

Laurence Booth, Bishop of Durham.

1475 Thomas Rotheram, alias Scot, Bishop of Lincoln, June 5, afterwards Archbishop of York.

John Alcock, Bishop of Rochester, Keeper during the Chancellor's absence beyond sea.

Laurence Booth, Bishop of Durham.

14[illegible] John Morton, Bishop of Ely, Master of the Rolls, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, and a Cardinal.

14[illegible] [illegible] Bp. of Lincoln. Nov. 20.

1485 Thomas Barrow, Master of the Rolls, Keeper. August 1.

Thomas Rotheram, alias Scot, Archbp. of York.

1486 John Alcock, Bishop of Ely. March 1.

John Morton, Archbishop of Canterbury. [illegible]

1501 Henry Deane, Bp. of Salisbury, Keeper. [illegible]

1502 William Warham, Bishop-elect of London, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury, Keeper. August 11.

15[illegible] [illegible] Chancellor, [illegible]

1515 Thomas Wolsey, Cardinal, Archbishop of York. December [illegible]

1530 Sir Thomas More, Knt. October 25.

1533 Sir Thomas Audley, Knight, Keeper. [illegible] Chancellor, (created Lord Audley in 1538.)

1534 Thomas Goodrick, Bishop of Ely.

15[illegible] Thomas Wriothesley, Lord Wriothesley. May 3.

1547 Sir William Paulet, Knight, Lord St. John of Bassing. June 29. Afterwards Earl of Wiltshire, and Marquis of Winchester.

Sir Richard Rich, Lord Rich. Nov. 30.

1551 Thomas Goodrick, Bp. of Ely. Jan. 19.

Sir Nicholas Hare, Knt. Lord Keeper.

15[illegible] Stephen Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester. [illegible]

1555 Nicholas Heath, Archbishop of York. [illegible]

1558 Sir Nicholas Bacon, Knt. Lord Keeper. [illegible]

157[illegible] Sir Thomas Bromley, Knt. [illegible]

1587 Sir Christopher Hatton, Knt. April 29.

1592 Sir John Puckering, Knt. Lord Keeper May 28.

1596 Sir Thomas Egerton, Knt. Keeper. May 6.

1603 King James I. delivers a new Great Seal [illegible] afterwards creates him Baron of Elles-[illegible]

1616 Sir F. Bacon, Kt. Lord Keeper. Mar. 7.

1617 [illegible] created Lord Verulam in 1619, and 1620 Viscount St. Alban's. Removed.

1621 Henry Montague, Viscount Mandeville; Lodowick Stuart, Duke of Richmond; William Herbert, Earl of Pembroke; Sir Julius Cæsar, Knight, Master of the Rolls; Keepers of the Great Seal. May [illegible]

John Williams, D.D. Dean of Westminster, Lord Keeper. July 10. Afterwards Bishop of Lincoln.)

1625 Sir Thomas Coventry, Knt. Nov. 1

## IX.—LIST OF THE ARCHBISHOPS OF YORK, FROM THE YEAR 1070 TO THE DEATH OF JAMES I. 1625.

1070 Thomas I. Canon of Bayon.
1100 Gerard, translated from Hereford.
1109 Thomas II. Bishop-Elect of London.
1119 Thurstan, Prebend of St. Paul's. He resigned
1141 Henry Murdac, Abbot of Fountains.
1153 St. William, Treasurer of York.
1154 Roger, Archdeacon of Canterbury.
[The see vacant ten years.]
1191 Godfrey Plantagenet, Archdeacon of Lincoln, Lord Chancellor.
[The see vacant four years.]
1217 Walter Gray, translated from Worcester, Lord Chancellor.
1256 St. Sewall de Bovill, Dean of York.
1258 Godfrey de Kinton, Dean of York.
1265 Walter Giffard, translated from Bath and Wells, Lord Chancellor.
1279 William Wickwane, Chancellor of York.
1285 John Romane, Prebend of York.
1289 Henry de Newark, Dean of York.
1299 Thomas Corbridge, Prebend of York.
1305 William Greenfield, Dean of Chichester, Prebend of York, Lord Chancellor.
1317 William de Milton, Provost of Beverley, Lord Chancellor, and Lord Treasurer.
1342 William de la Zouch, Dean of York, Lord Treasurer.
1352 John Thoresby, translated from Worcester, Cardinal, Lord Chancellor.
1373 Alexander Nevill, Archdeacon of Durham. Banished in 1387.
1388 Thomas Arundel, translated from Ely; translated to Canterbury; Lord Chancellor.
1396 Rt. Waldby, translated from Chichester.
1397 Richard Scrope, translated from Coventry and Litchfield. Beheaded for attempting to restore King Richard II.
1408 Henry Bowett, translated from Bath and Wells.
1425 John Kemp, translated from London, Cardinal, and Lord Chancellor; translated to Canterbury.
1452 William Booth, translated from Coventry and Litchfield.
1464 George Nevil, translated from Exeter, Lord Chancellor.
1480 Lawrence Booth, translated from Durham.
1480 Thos. Scott, surnamed Rotheram, translated from Lincoln, Lord Chancellor.
1501 Thomas Savage, translated from London.
1508 Christopher Bainbridge, translated from Durham, Cardinal.
1508 Thomas Wolsey, translated from Lincoln, Lord Chancellor, Cardinal.
1531 Edward Lee, Chancellor of Salisbury, and Prebend of York.
1544 Robert Holgate, translated from Landaff, Lord President of the North. Deprived.
1555 Nicholas Heath, late Bishop of Worcester, Lord Chancellor. Deprived.
1560 Thomas Young, translated from St. David's, Lord President of the North.
1570 Edmund Grindal, translated from London; translated to Canterbury.
1567 Edwin Sandes, translated from London.
1588 John Piers, translated from Salisbury.
1606 Mat. Hutton I. translated from Durham.
1606 Tob. Matthew, translated from Durham.

## X.—LIST OF THE LORDS HIGH TREASURERS OF ENGLAND, FROM THE YEAR 1066 TO THE DEATH OF JAMES I. 1625.

### WILLIAM I.

Odo, Earl of Kent.

### HENRY I.

Geoffrey Clinton.
Ranulph, Bishop of Durham.
Roger Bishop of Salisbury.
Nigellus, Bishop of Ely.

### HENRY II.

Richard de Ely, afterwards Bishop of London.

### RICHARD I.

Continued
William de Ely.

### JOHN.

Continued.
—— Dean of St. Paul's, London
Walter Grey, Bishop of Worcester.
Geoffrey, Archdeacon of Norwich.

### HENRY III.

John Ruthal.
Eustace de Fauconbridge, Bp. of London, and Chancellor of the Exchequer.
John de Fontibus, Bishop of Ely.
Walter Mauclerc, or Mauclerk, Bishop of Carlisle.
[illegible]
Peter de Orival.
[illegible] Passelew, Chancellor of the Exchequer.
Hugh Pateshull.
[illegible]
William Haverhull, Canon of St. Paul's, London.
Rd. de Barking, Abbot of Westminster.
Philip Lovel. Deposed by the Barons in the year 1258.
1258 John Crackhall, Archdeacon of Bedford.
1260 John, Abbot of Peterborough, made Treasurer by the Barons.
1263 Nicholas de Ely, Archdeacon of Ely.
1266 Thomas Wymundham.
1269 John Chisull, Dean of St. Paul's, London; afterwards Bishop of London.
1271 Philip de Ely.

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

## [illegible] I

Continued.

[illegible]

Jerusalem, in England.

[illegible]

1280 Richard Warren, or de Ware, Abbot of Westminster

[illegible] and Coventry, [illegible]

[illegible] Bath and Wells.

1293 Peter de Leicester, Baron of the Exche- [illegible]

[illegible]

## [illegible] II

[illegible]

1312 Sir Walter Norwich.

1313 John de Sandall, Bishop of Winchester, [illegible]

[illegible] Wells.

(Hervey de Stanton, Chancellor of the Exchequer).

[illegible]

John Stratford, Bishop of Winchester.

1319 Walter Stapleton, Bishop of Exeter.

[illegible] a second time). He was beheaded in [illegible]

## [illegible] III

1326 John Stratford, Bishop of Winchester, (for a second time).

[illegible] of York, (for a second time).

[illegible] Bishop of Norwich.

1333 Robert le Ailstone.

1336 Henry Burwash, Bishop of Lincoln, (for a second time).

1337 Richard de Bury, Bishop of Durham.

[illegible] Coventry and Litchfield, (for a second time).

1341 A Bishop of Chester.

[illegible] Coventry and Litchfield, (for a third time).

[illegible] Bishop of Win- [illegible]

[illegible] Bishop of Rochester.

[illegible] and a Cardinal.

1363 John Barret, Bishop of Worcester. Under him William Ashby, Arch- [illegible]

[illegible] Bishop of Exeter

[illegible]

1370 Sir Richard Ashton, Knt. Lord Warden [illegible]

[illegible] Bishop of Worcester

## RICHARD II.

[illegible]

1378 Thomas Brantington, Bishop of Exeter.

[illegible] and [illegible]

1380 Thomas Brantington, Bishop of Exeter, (for a second time).

1381 Robert Hales, Prior of St. John's of Je- [illegible]

1381

1382 Sir Hugh Segrave, Knight.

[illegible] made [illegible]

[illegible] Bishop of Exeter, [illegible]

[illegible] David's, [illegible]

[illegible] elected Archbishop of Canterbury, but [illegible]

[illegible]

## HENRY IV.

1399 Sir John Northbury, Knight.

[illegible] Bath and Wells

[illegible]

[illegible] Scroop of Bolton, (for a second time).

1409 Sir John Tiptoft, Lord Tiptoft.
1410 Henry Scroop, Lord Scroop of Masham. Beheaded at Southampton, 3rd of King Henry V.

### HENRY V.

1413 Thomas Fitzalan, Earl of Arundel and Surrey.
1416 Sir Philip Lech, Knight
1417 Henry Fitzhugh, Lord Fitzhugh.

### HENRY VI.

1422 John Stafford, Bishop of Bath and Wells, afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury.
1425 Walter Hungerford, Lord Hungerford.
1431 John Scroop, Lord Scroop of Upsal and Masham.
1434 Ralph Cromwell, Lord Cromwell.
1444 Sir Ralph Butler, Lord Sudley.
1447 Marmaduke Lumley, Bishop of Carlisle.
1448 James Fynes, Lord Say and Sele. Beheaded by the Kentish rebels under Jack Cade.
1450 John Beauchamp, Lord Beaucham of Powyke.
1452 John Tiptoft, Lord Tiptoft, now Earl of Worcester, (for a second time).
1455 James Butler, Earl of Wiltshire and Ormond.
(Thomas Thorpe, Chancellor of the Exchequer).
Henry Bourchier, Viscount Bourchier, afterwards Earl of Essex.
1456 John Talbot, Earl of Shrewsbury. Killed at the battle of Northampton, 1460.
1458 James Butler, Earl of Wiltshire and Ormond, (for a second time). Beheaded at Newcastle upon Tyne, 1461.
1460 Henry Bourchier, Viscount Bourchier, afterwards Earl of Essex, (for a second time).

### EDWARD IV.

1461 [illegible] Bourchier.
1462 John Tiptoft, Earl of Worcester, (for a third time). Beheaded [illegible]
1464 Edmund Grey, Lord Grey of Ruthyn, created Earl of Kent
1465 Sir Walter Blount, afterwards Lord Mountjoy.
1466 Richard Widville, Earl Rivers. Beheaded at Northampton, [illegible]
1469 John Langstrother, Prior of St. John's of Jerusalem, in England.
William Grey, Bishop of Ely.
1471 Henry Bourchier, Earl of Essex, (for a third time).

### EDWARD V.

Continued.

### RICHARD III.

Continued.
1484 Sir Richard Wood, Knight.

### HENRY VII.

1485 Sir Reginald Bray.
(Sir William Stanley, Knight, Chancellor of the Exchequer).
1486 Sir John Dynham, Lord Dynham.
1500 Thomas Howard, Earl of Surrey, afterwards Duke of Norfolk.

### HENRY VIII.

Continued.
(Thomas Cromwell, afterwards Earl of Essex, and beheaded, Chancellor of the Exchequer).
1522 Thomas Howard, Earl of Surrey, son to the last Lord Treasurer.

### EDWARD VI.

1546 Edward Seymour, Earl of Hertford, afterwards Duke of Somerset. Beheaded [illegible]
1551 Sir William Paulet, Marquis of Winchester.

### MARY.

Continued.

### ELIZABETH.

Continued.
(Richard Sackville, Chancellor of the Exchequer).
1566 (Sir William Mildmay, Knight, ditto).
1572 Sir William Cecil, Lord Burleigh.
1589 (Sir John Fortescue, Chancellor of the Exchequer).
1599 Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst, afterwards Earl of Dorset.

### JAMES I.

Continued.
(George Hume, Lord Hume of Berwick, Chancellor of the Exchequer).
(Sir Fulk Greville, Knight, ditto.
1608 Sir Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury.
1614 Thomas Howard, Lord Howard of Walden, afterwards Earl of Suffolk.
16[illegible] (Sir Richard Weston, Knight, afterwards Lord Weston, Chancellor of the Exchequer).
Sir Henry Montagu, Knt. Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench; created Baron Kimbolton, and Viscount Mandeville; (afterwards Earl of Manchester).
1621 Lionel Cranfield, Lord Cranfield, afterwards Earl of Middlesex.
1622 Sir James Ley, Knight and Baronet, Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench. Created [illegible] Lord Ley, afterwards Earl of Marlborough.

## XI.—LIST OF THE LORDS PRIVY SEAL, FROM THE REIGN OF HENRY VIII. TO THE DEATH OF JAMES I. 1625.

### Henry VIII.

Richard Fox, Bishop of Winchester.
[illegible]
1523 Cuthbert Tunstall, Bishop of London.
1530 [illegible]
Thomas Boleyn, Earl of Wiltshire and Ormond.
1536 Thomas Cromwell, Lord Cromwell, afterwards Earl of Essex.
John Russell, Lord Russell, afterwards
1543 Earl of Bedford.

### Edward VI.

Continued.

### Mary.

Continued.
[illegible] Earl of Derby.
1556 William Paget, Lord Paget.

### Elizabeth.

Nicholas Bacon.
1572 William Howard, Lord Howard of Effingham.
—— [illegible], Esq.

### James I.

1608 Henry Howard, Earl of Northampton.
[illegible] Earl of Worcester.

## XII.—LIST OF THE SPEAKERS OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS, FROM THE YEAR 1377 TO THE DEATH OF JAMES I. 1625.

### Edward III.

1377 Sir Thomas Hungerford, Knight.

### Richard II.

1377 Sir Peirce de la Mare, Knight.
1378 Sir James Pickering, Knight.
[illegible]
1381 Sir Richard Walsgrave, Knight.
1383 Sir James Pickering, Knight.
1397 Sir John Bussey, Knight.

### Henry IV.

1399 Sir John Cheyney, Knight, chosen, but excused on account of sickness.
Sir John Dorewood, Knight, chosen in his place.
1400 Sir Arnold Savage, Knight.
1403 Sir Henry de Redford, Knight.
1404 Sir Arnold Savage, Knight.
1405 Sir William Sturmy, Knight.
1406 Sir John Tibetot, Knight.
1407 Thomas Chaucer, Esq.

### Henry V.

1413 William Stourton, Esq. chosen, but excused on account of sickness.
John Doreward, Esq. chosen in his place.
1414 Thomas Chaucer, Esq.
1415 Sir Walter Beauchamp, Knight.
1416 Roger Flower, Esq.
1421 Richard Baynard, Esq.

### Henry VI.

1422 Roger Flower, Esq.
1423 John Russel, Esq.
1425 [illegible], Knight.
1426 Sir Richard Vernon, Knight.
1427 John Tyrrel, Esq.
1429 William Allington, Esq.
1431 John Tyrrel, Esq.
1432 John Russel, Esq.
1433 Roger Hunt, Esq.
1435 John Bowes, Esq.
1436 Sir John Tyrril, Knt. chosen, but excused on account of sickness.
William Beerly, Esq. chosen in his place.
1439 William Tresham, Esq.
1442 William Tresham, Esq.
1447 William Tresham, Esq.
1449 John Day, Esq.
1450 Sir John Popham, Knight, chosen, but excused
William Tresham, Esq. elected in his place.
1452 Sir William Oldhall, Knt.
1453 Thomas Thorpe, Esq. chosen, afterwards discharged
Sir Thomas Charlton, Knight, chosen in his place.
1455 Sir John Wenlock, Knight.
1460 Thomas Tresham, Esq.
1461 John Green, Esq.

### Edward IV.

1461 Sir James Strangeways, Kt.
1463 John Say, Esq.
1467 Sir John Say, Knight.
1472 William Allington, Esq.
1482 John Wood, Esq.

### Henry VIII.

1510 Thomas Inglefield, Esq.
1511 Thomas Nevile, Esq.
1523 Sir Thomas More, Knight.
1530 Thomas Audley, Esq.
1537 Richard Rich, Esq.
1540 Sir Nicholas Hare, Knt.
1542 Thomas Moyle, Esq.

### Edward VI.

1547 Sir John Baker, Knight.
1552 James Dyer, Esq.

### Mary.

1553 John Pollard, Esq.
1554 Robert Brook, Esq.

[illegible]

PHILIP AND MARY.

1554 Clement Higham, Esq.
1555 John Pollard, Esq.
1558 John Cordell, Esq.

ELIZABETH.

1559 Sir Thomas Gargrave, Knt.
1563 Thomas Williams, Esq.
1566 Richard Onslow, Esq.
1571 Christopher Wray, Esq.
1573 Robert Bell, Esq.
1581 John Popham, Esq.
1586 John Puckering, Esq.
1589 George Snagge, Esq.
1592 Edward Coke, Esq.
1597 Christopher Yelverton, Esq.
1601 John Croke, Esq.

JAMES I.

1603 Sir Edward Phellips, Knt.
1614 Sir Randolph Crewe, Knt.
1620 Thomas Richardson, Esq.
1623 Sir Thomas Crewe, Knt.

## XIII.—LIST OF THE MASTERS OF THE ROLLS, FROM THE YEAR 1291 TO THE DEATH OF JAMES I. 1625.

1291 Adam de Osgodeby, Oct. 1
1316 William de Aremynne, August 19
1318 William Annyne.
1323 Richard de Ayremynne, May 26
1324 Henry de Cliff, July 4.
1332 Michael de Wath, Jan. 20.
1336 John de Sanco, April 28.
1339 William de Kilderly.
Thomas de Evesham.
1340 John de Thoresby, Feb. 21
1344 David de Wollere.
1370 William Bevestall, March 28.
1381 John de Waltham, Sept. 8.
1386 John de Burton, Oct. 24.
1394 John Searle, July 22.
1397 Thomas Stanley, Sept. 11
1401 Nich. Bedwith, Sept. 24.
1404 John Wakering, March 2
1415 Simon Gaunstede, June 3.
1423 John Fraunke, Oct. 28.
1438 John Stopinden, Nov. 13.
1446 Thomas Kirkby, March 29.
1461 Robert de Kirkham, Dec. 23.
1471 John Alcock, April 29
William Morland, Feb. 22.
1475 John Morton, May 2.
1478 Robert Morton, May 30.
1483 Thomas Barrow, Sept. 22.
1485 William Elliot, Nov. 13.
1487 David Williams, Nov. 26.
1491 John Blithe, May 5.
1493 William Warham, Feb. 13.
1501 William Baron, Feb. 1.
1504 Christopher Bainbridge, Nov. 13
1507 John Yonge, Jan. 22
1509 John Yonge, June 12.
1516 Cuthbert Tunstall, May 12
1522 John Clerk, Oct. 20.
1523 Thomas Hannibal, Oct. 19.
1527 John Taylor, June 26.
1534 Thomas Croombwell, Oct. 8.
1536 Christopher Hales, June 10.
1541 Robert Southwell, July 1
1549 John Beaumont, Dec. 19.
1551 Sir Robert Bowes, Knt. June 18
1553 Sir Nic. Hare, Knt. Sept. 18.
1557 Sir William Cordell, Knt. Nov. 8.
1580 Sir Gilbert Gerrard, Knt. May 30.
1593 Sir Thomas Egerton, Knt. April 10.
1603 Edward Bruce, May 18.
1608 Sir Edward Phillips, Knt. Dec. 2.
1610 Julius Cæsar, Jan. 16.
1614 Julius Cæsar, Oct. 1.

## XIV.—LIST OF ATTORNIES GENERAL, FROM THE YEAR 1278 TO THE DEATH OF JAMES I. 1625.

1278 William de Gisilham.
1279 Gilbert de Thornton.
1280 Alanus de Walkingham.
1291 William Inge.
Hugo de Lowther.
1293 [illegible]
1299 Nicholas de Warwick.
1300 [illegible]
1301 [illegible]
1308 Matthew de Scaccario.
1312 John de Norton
1313 William de Langley.
1318 Adam de Fyneham.
1320 Galfridus le Scrope.
1322 Galfridus de Fyogale, Nov. 6.
1324 Adam de Fyneham.
1326 William de Merston, Feb. 26.
1327 Alexander de Hadenham.
Adam de Fyneham.
1323 Richard de Aldeburgh.
1325 Simon de Trewythosa.
1327 John [illegible], Nov. 4
[illegible], March 3
1328 John de Clone, July 16.
William de Mevington.
1341 William de Thorpe.
1342 John de Lincoln.
[illegible]
1343 Simon de Kegworth, Oct. 1
1352 Henry de Greystock.
John Gaunt.
1359 Richard de Freysley, May 4.
1361 [illegible]
1362 William de Nesseheld, Nov. 4.
1363 [illegible], Nov. 2.
1366 John [illegible], May 12
Michael Skelling.
1378 Thomas de Shardelow.

1381 William Ellis.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
1407 Thomas Derehum, July 13.
[illegible]
[illegible]
1413 William Babington, Jan. 16.
[illegible]
[illegible]
1429 John Vampage, Oct. 28.
1451 William Nottingham, June 30.
1461 John Herbert, August 12.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
1486 Jacob Hubbard, July 8.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
1536 Sir John Baker, Knt. July 10.
1540 William Whorwood, Nov. 8.
1545 Henry Bradshaw, June 18.
1551 Edward Griffith, May 21.
1553 Edward Griffith, Sept. 30.
1558 Gilbert Gerrard, Jan. 22.
[illegible]
1591 Sir Thomas Egerton, Knt. June 2.
1593 Edward Coke, April 10.
1603 Continued, April 22
1606 Sir Henry Hobert, Knt. July 4.
1613 Sir Francis Bacon, Knt. October 27, af- [illegible]
1616 Sir Henry Yelverton, Knt. March 12.
1620 Sir Thomas Coventry, January 11, afterwards Lord Coventry.
1625 Robert Heath, October 31.

## XV[illegible] SOLICITORS GENERAL FROM THE YEAR 1461 TO THE DEATH OF JAMES I. 1625.

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
1521 Richard Lastor, July 8.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
1545 Edward Griffin, June 8.
[illegible]
1553 William Cordell, Sept. 30.
1557 Richard Wensto, Nov. 20.
1558 William Rosewell, Feb. 1.
1565 Richard Onslow, June 27.
1568 Thomas Bromley, March 14.
[illegible]
1581 Thomas Egerton, June 28.
1592 Edward Coke, June 16.
1594 Thomas Fleming, Nov. 6.
[illegible]
[illegible]
1613 Henry Yelverton, Oct. 29.
[illegible] 14
[illegible]

# Parliamentary History.

[illegible]

# COBBETT'S

# Parliamentary History.

---

### ON THE ORIGIN OF PARLIAMENT.

THE origin or first institution of parliament lies so far hidden in the dark ages of antiquity, that the tracing of it out is equally difficult and uncertain. The word *parliament* is comparatively of modern date, derived from the French, *parler*, and signifying *the place where they met and spoke, or conferred together.* It was first applied to general assemblies of the states, under Lewis VII. in France, about the middle of the 12th century: but it is certain, that long before the introduction of the Norman language into England, all matters of importance were debated and settled in the great councils of the realm; a practice which seems to have been universal among the northern nations, particularly the Germans, and carried by them into all the countries of Europe, which they over-ran at the dissolution of the Roman empire. In England this general council hath been held immemorially, under the several names of *michel synoth*, or 'great council;' *michel gemote*, or 'great meeting;' and more frequently, *wittena gemote*, 'or the meeting of wise men.' It was also styled in Latin, *commune concilium regni, magnum concilium regis, curia magna, conventus magnatum vel procerum assisa generalis;* and sometimes, *communitas regni Angliæ.* We have instances of its meeting to order the affairs of the kingdom, to make new laws, and to amend the old; or, as Fleta expresses it, *novis injuriis emersis nova constituere remedia*, so early as the reign of Ina, king of the West Saxons, Ossa, king of the Mercians, and Ethelbert, king of Kent, in the several realms of the heptarchy. The laws of Ina, which were made and published about the year 720, are therein said to be made by the advice and consent of all his aldermen and *senior wisemen* of his kingdom, besides a great number of the *clergy*, met together on that occasion. The same is mentioned at the end of the laws of Athelstan, as well as those of Ethelred his successor. But who these *wise men* were, whether *lords* or *commons*, or both together, we are not able to determine. The chronicle of John Brompton mentions a great council, or assembly, to have been held at Salisbury, in the days of king Edgar, about the year [illegible] of all the nobles of the kingdom; and another at Oxford, by king Canute the Dane, in the year 1030. These are all, or the strongest, instances, that can be produced of councils, or parliaments, being called, by our Saxon kings, to make laws before the Conquest. On the other hand, sir R. Filmer, dr. Brady, and others, deny that the commons had any place or power in these assemblies until long after that period. They say indeed that the Saxon kings used to convene the *nobles* and *bishops* of the realm, to consult with them how to defend themselves in case of an invasion, to levy taxes, or to promulgate some new laws amongst the people, or to be witnesses to their charters. The first is evident from several Saxon charters yet preserved by historians, as well as some originals still extant amongst us, which are, besides the king, the nobility and bishops, to a considerable number, signed with him. But then these authors assert, that those who [illegible] had the commons were then the absolute vassals [illegible] the nobility and clergy at that time, and long after, and had nothing they could call their own, no, not so much as their lives. That this was the case of the commons till some time after the conquest, appears pretty plain, but with the lords it was otherwise; for sir Henry Spelman tells us in his 'Glossary,' that, besides what has been said of their conventions in the times of our Saxon kings, William the Conqueror instituted his great assembly, or magnum consilium of the nation, from those tenants that held of him in *capite;* and that parliamentary barons were created, by this king's writ, out of those of good possessions, whom [illegible] reserved to himself a tenure in chief by knight's service. These lords were at that time the supreme judicature; but the origin of the house of peers, as to its present form and power, does not seem plainly to appear till the reign of Henry III. when special writs of summons were sent out to the nobility distinctly by themselves. But whatever be these controversies, it is generally agreed, that in the main, the constitution of parliament, as it now stands, was marked out so long ago as the 17th year of King John, A. D. [illegible], in the Great [illegible] [illegible] scutages when necessary. And thus constitu- [illegible] nances, journals, &c. of the two houses of [illegible] find them admirably and concisely treated upon in abp. Nicolson's 'English Historical Library;' to which work we refer him; and, [illegible]

## William I.

In [illegible] reign, William I., at the instigation of the pope, summoned a national synod, to deter- [illegible] before the king and Hubert, the pope's legate, [illegible]

## Henry I.

In [illegible] vened his nobles, by a special edict, on a very [illegible] Robert, whom he had dispossessed of his [illegible] over from Normandy to make him a friendly [illegible] to his disadvantage, and being [illegible] to be true [illegible] that came from the throne, only pre- [illegible]

served by M. Paris, and taken notice of by [illegible] he refused that rule, for which he justly de- [illegible] brutality. Because he is a man that delights in war and bloodshed, he is impatient of peace. I know that he thinks you a parcel of contemptible fellows; he calls you a set of drunkards and gluttons, whom he hopes to tread under his feet. I, truly a king, meek, [illegible] have formerly sworn to perform; will hearken [illegible] best of princes. If you desire it, I will strengthen this promise with a written char- [illegible] enacted, I will again swear to keep inviolably. If you, my brethren, will stand by me faith- [illegible] me and these kingdoms. If I am only sup- [illegible] ns will no longer seem formidable unto me.'—Paris adds, that this harangue of Henry [illegible] ther." The dispute betwixt the archbishops [illegible]

### *Taxes in this king's reign.*

[illegible] money to redeem his church. In his [illegible] year, he received for the marriage of his daughter Maud, as for every [illegible]. And, according to historians, during his whole reign he raised a constant annual tax of 12d. on every hide of land. It does not appear that he asked the consent of his barons or people for raising these subsidies.

## STEPHEN.

We meet with one convention of the estates in this reign, and that was in the first year of it; for Stephen, anxious to have his title confirmed by their authorities, summoned all the bishops and nobles of the realm, by his royal edict, to meet at Oxford for that purpose. At this meeting Stephen signed, and gave a most extensive charter, whereby the rights and immunities of the church were largely and principally secured to the clergy. At the tail of this charter, Stephen also promises to punish or remove the illegal sheriffs, or any other of his officers, that should lay unjust or illegal exactions on the people; and that he will well and truly keep all the good old laws and customs in all cases whatsoever. The barons and other great men, besides the bishops, who were witnesses to this charter, and consequently present at this convention, were Roger the king's chancellor, Henry the king's nephew, Robert earl of Gloucester, William earl of Warren, Ralph earl of Chester, Roger earl of Warwick, Robert de Vere, Miles de Gloucester, Robert d'Oyly, [illegible] Wm Martel, Hugh Bigot, Humphrey de Bohun, Simon de Beauchamp, [illegible], Wm de Albini, Martin de [illegible], [illegible] Wm Peverel, [illegible] Wm. de Albania, Hugh de S. Clare, Ilbert de Lacy; dated at Oxford, in the year of Christ 1136, the first of my reign. [illegible] Richard, prior of Hexham, [illegible] king, [illegible] the prelates [illegible] Stephen [illegible] to the crown [illegible] Stephen, [illegible] of God, [illegible] of the clergy and people, [illegible] over England, and [illegible] William, archbishop of Canterbury, [illegible] church, confirmed [illegible] same see; for the respect and love I bear to God, do declare [illegible] In 1152 he called a general council to London, and proposed to have [illegible] of his son Eustace, [illegible] Henry, son to the empress Maud, [illegible] and particularly required the archbishop, to whose ancient right it belonged to consecrate kings, to perform that office upon his son. The prelate boldly refused, that the pope, by his letters, had forbidden him to crown or anoint his son, because [illegible] usurped the kingdom. The king, his son, and [illegible] that favoured them, were angry at this repulse [illegible] Some of the bishops were [illegible] the prelate [illegible] getting over the Thames in a boat, fled to Dover, and so beyond sea. For his contempt [illegible] and flight, the king seized upon and spoiled all his lands and possessions.

## HENRY II.

Henry II. summoned a general assembly, or, as some will have it, a parliament, in 1156, the second year of his reign, to meet at Wallingford, wherein the bishops and barons [illegible] to the succession of William his son, and the king confirmed the charter of the realm.—In 1164, he called together a much greater assembly, and which comes the nearest a parliament of any thing we have yet met with. This convention of the estates was held at Clarendon, and consisted, as M. Paris writes, of the archbishops, bishops, abbots, priors, earls, barons, and nobles of the realm; over whom the king [illegible] presided [illegible]. In this assembly the king carried it with a very high hand against the prelates and holy church, say the Monkish writers, and [illegible] Thomas à Becket, [illegible] [illegible] constituted and appointed justiciaries, in six [illegible] was imposed in order to carry on a war, jointly with the king of France, against the Turks and Saracens, for the recovery of the Holy Land.

### *Taxes in this king's reign.*

Taxes [illegible] reign as arbitrarily as before; in the beginning of it there was a scutage, but there is no account what it amounted to. A 2nd scutage was made in the [illegible] of his reign [illegible] ing to 180,000l. In his 7th year a 3d scutage [illegible] In the twelfth, 2s. in the pound for the first year, and 1d. a pound for four years after, of [illegible] reign a 4th scutage, at a mark a knight's fee. In the 18th, a 5th scutage; uncertain what it [illegible] 10th on all moveables, for the crusade.

* * *

## Richard I.

In this king's reign we meet with a conven- [illegible] and invited Richard and his nobles to join [illegible] earls, and barons of the realm, says M. Paris, [illegible] them with the French king's invitation, it was [illegible] a parliament, at Nottingham; where it is said [illegible] writes, 'that the king sat in state, with Hubert, [illegible] meeting, and are mentioned, were Hugh bp. of Durham, Hugh bp. of Lincoln, William bp. [illegible] of Exeter, and John bp. of Whitehaven; David earl of Huntingdon, brother to the king of [illegible] Chester, Wm. earl Ferrers, Wm. earl of [illegible] his office of sheriff of that shire; Hugh Bardolph [illegible] of Yorkshire; and exposed them to sale. The [illegible] judgment against his brother John, for having, [illegible] ties, and entered into a confederacy with the king of France against him; as also against [illegible] to him and his other enemies. It was determined that they should both appear upon a day fixed, to answer according to law; which if [illegible] 2s. from every plough-land in England: be- [illegible] every knight's fee for his attendance in Nor- [illegible] he compounded with them for a fine. The 4th [illegible] mining of grievances and accusations; and so this assembly broke up after coming to a resolution, 'that to nullify the act of submission, which Richard had been obliged to perform to [illegible]

*[illegible]*

In the first year of it a scutage of 20s. was laid on every knight's fee. In the 2nd, for the armament to carry on the holy war, 2 saddle horses and 2 sumpter horses were taken of [illegible] king's the same as the abbies. For his ransom, [illegible] had; and all the wool of that year the Cister- [illegible] The sum the emperor demanded for king [illegible] sum of 1,100,000 marks, but it is not said how; also an aid of 5s. of every plough-land [illegible] lands. So much money went out of the king- [illegible] king's ransom, that not one genuine coin of [illegible]

* * *

[illegible]

[illegible] Lincoln; where, also, say our historians, he [illegible] formed on a hill near Lincoln, in the presence [illegible] what reason we are not able to learn, for there were no laws of any kind enacted at it. But, in 1204, we find a meeting of the nobles called, [illegible]

Here was granted to the king 24 marks of every knight's fee; nor did the bishops or abbots, or either of the clergy, depart without a promise of the same.—The storm betwixt this king and his barons beginning to grow high, Stephen Langton, abp. of Canterbury interposed, and with much ado prevailed upon John to call a parliament, or convention of estates, which met at London, in St. Paul's cathedral. Here the abp. produced a charter of Henry 1st. by which he granted to his people their ancient liberties, which had been violated by the unjust exactions of his predecessors, such as were according to the laws of king Edward, and with those amendments which his father, by the council of his barons, did ratify. This charter, which is still extant in M. Paris, being read amongst the barons, they were much rejoiced at it; and swore in the presence of the abp. that for these liberties they would, if need required, spend their blood; and making an agreement with the prelate to that end, they broke up without any answer from the king.—We now come to the time when Magna Charter, or the Great Charter of our liberties was granted, or rather forced from this king by his barons. This being the fundamental part of our English laws, stands in the front of all our printed statutes, and is the great bulwark betwixt the power of the crown and the liberties of the subject. This charter was first granted in form by king John, in the 16th year of his reign; after a long series of civil wars betwixt him and his barons, of which our chronicles give a melancholy and terrible description. The king being at last hard put to it by the barons; deserted almost by every one; and having, as M. Paris writes, scarce 7 horsemen left to guard his person, thought it high time to sooth his angry nobles, and therefore sent Wm. Mareschal, earl of Pembroke, with some others, to the lords, then at London, to tell them that he would grant the laws and liberties they desired. The embassador and his message were received with great joy by the barons, who appointed a time and place, according to the king's desire, for the meeting.—This great assembly of the king and the barons, was in a place betwixt Windsor and Staines, called Runny-mead. On the 15th of June, 1215, the king and the nobles met in this meadow: on the king's side appeared with him the archbishops of Canterbury and Dublin, the bishops of London, Winchester, Lincoln, Bath, Worcester, Coventry, and Rochester; Pandulph, the pope's agent and master of the order of Templars in England: of noblemen, Wm. Mareschal, earl of Pembroke, the earls of Salisbury, Warren and Arundel; Alan de Galewey, Wm. Fitz-Gerald, Peter Fitz-Herbert, Tho. Basset, Mat. Fitz-Herbert, Alan Basset, Hugh de Nevil, Hubert de Burg, Robert de Roppeley, John Mareschal, and Philip de Albiney. On the part of the barons, says M. Paris, appeared such a number, that it seemed as if all the nobility of England was collected into one body. At length, adds our author, after they had treated on various subjects, the king, knowing full well that his strength was much inferior to that of the barons, without the least seeming reluctance, agreed to several articles, which were put into his charter. Next follows the charter at length, in M. Paris, as well as the Charta de Foresta, granted at the same time; which forest-laws and customs, as they could not be inserted in the same schedule with the former [illegible] length, says M. Paris, made a different instrument, and was witnessed accordingly.

## Henry III.

In 1223, a meeting of the barons was summoned to London; where the king met them, Jan. 13th, in the same year. At this conference the abp. of Canterbury, and other great men, requested the king that he would confirm the liberties and free customs for which a war was made with his father; urging, moreover, that when Lewis left England, both the king and all the nobility had sworn to observe, and cause to be observed, those liberties, and therefore could not refuse to do it. Upon which Wm. Briwere, one of the king's council, replied, 'That the liberties they desired were violently extorted, and therefore ought not to be observed.' The abp. of Canterbury in a passion reproved him, and said, 'that if he loved the king he would not hinder the peace of the kingdom.' The king, seeing the prelate thus moved on the occasion, answered them, 'that he had bound himself by oath to preserve their liberties, and what was sworn he would observe.' And having called a council he forthwith sent his letters to all the sheriffs in the kingdom, to inquire by the oaths of 12 knights or legal men, in every county, what were the liberties of England in the time of king Henry his grandfather, and to make a return thereof at London 15 days after Easter.—The next year 1224, the king at the archbishops, bishops, earls, barons, and, says M. [illegible] The king being willing to have the advice of his great men, concerning his foreign [illegible] his possessions. But these negociations were interrupted by a rebellion, which, at that time, broke out very near them. One Falcasius, or Fauke de Brent, had seized upon Braibrooke, one of the king's itinerant justices, for setting a fine upon him for committing much spoil and rapine in the country, and having imprisoned him in his castle at Bedford. The king and his great council being much scandalized at such a bold proceeding, ordered the castle to be besieged; which it was, and taken, and 24 of the garrison hanged up on the walls of it; the rebel himself found means to fly into Wales, but by the intercession of a bishop he was introduced to the king, fell down at his feet and implored his mercy; urging his former services for [illegible] pardon. The [illegible]

[illegible]

the barons two marks sterling of every knight's

[illegible]

summoned. Here it was, that in a very full

[illegible]

assistance ought to be proportionable; he

[illegible]

rights might be recovered; for the retrieving of

[illegible]

tice, the peers, after some deliberation, returned this answer to the king, 'that they would readily satisfy his desires, if he would

[illegible]

two charters were directed; one concerning

[illegible]

A month after Easter, a day was set to choose

[illegible]

ones; and whatever forests were found to be

[illegible]

county; and, by the king's command, every

[illegible]

pendix to his 'Complete History.' In this

[illegible]

the wards and marriages of their heirs; which

[illegible]

had a view into the consequences of things,

[illegible]

was called; but nothing more was done at it

[illegible]

mentioned; when the king, with the consent

[illegible]

[illegible] the granting of the Great Charter, &c.

[illegible]

at Oxford, the king told them, 'that since he was now arrived at a lawful age, for the future

[illegible]

this reason, 'that those charters of liberties

[illegible]

others, and consequently could not be valid,

[illegible]

sembly; and all ascribed this act of the king's

[illegible]

who, adds our authority, was grown so much

[illegible]

time, it was told the churchmen, 'that the

[illegible]

as a more mortal wound to the clergy, a fine

[illegible]

Winchester, and upon the 7th of March fol-

[illegible]

'that his late expedition abroad had involved

[illegible]

absolutely obliged to require a general aid.' To this demand Ranulph, earl of Chester, re-

[illegible]

prelates, &c. answered for their parts, 'that

[illegible]

were not yet come up; and therefore desired that it might be deferred, and a day appointed

[illegible]

Some time after this, a great storm was raised

[illegible]

nister, and chief justice of England: he was ac-

[illegible]

ors, recounted at large by M. Paris: that he

[illegible]

poisoned; and that he had gained the king's affections by sorcery and witchcraft. He was [illegible] Al, who [illegible] home against the favourite, before the king, [illegible] Hubert should come before him, and juctice [illegible] this convention, also, Hubert de Burgh was re-[illegible] himself up in a sanctuary amongst the canons at Merton, in Surrey; waiting for a time to give in his answer when the king was in a better humour. Henry, enraged at this, sent to the mayor of London to force Hubert from his sanc-[illegible] revenged of Hubert, for hanging a favourite citizen of theirs [illegible] ly, near 20,000 of the meaner sort were collected together, to [illegible] the ill consequence of raising such a mob, went to the bishop of Winchester's house in Southwark, [illegible] same number of citizens, or more, appeared in arms, [illegible] the sanctuary. Hubert, when he heard of this, gave himself up for lost, [illegible] on his knees before the high altar of the church, [illegible] king, that if such tumultuous proceedings were countenanced, a sedition might be raised, that [illegible] would be a great reproach to the king abroad, when it was heard that he thus treated those [illegible] amazed at these counter orders; but, however, notwithstanding they missed of their prey, they [illegible] tion of the nobles was sitting at Lambeth, in order to have Hubert brought before them. Hubert, however, escaped the fury of his enemies for that time; and having soon after delivered up all his immense riches to the king, it so softened Henry's heart, that if he did not [illegible] lands again; and Hubert only remained a state [illegible] got a new favourite, ten times more obnoxious to the barons than the former. This was Peter [illegible] all the public affairs of the kingdom. These men, being foreigners, invited over into England several Poictevins and Bretons, to the [illegible] burnt so fiercely in his father's time was again lighted up in the kingdom; for Henry, having [illegible] rons together to a council, to be held on the [illegible] ceived a just indignation against the king, for [illegible] the king in a very solemn manner; who, be-[illegible] a 2nd and a 3rd time, to try whether they [illegible] Peter de Rivall, from his councils; the king [illegible] snare them; that he had actually got over from abroad a set of banditti, or robbers, with [illegible] the king, with this positive demand, 'That if [illegible] and his evil counsellors out of the kingdom, and elect a new king.' Henry was amazed, and [illegible] extraordinary message, but yet, by the advice of the bishop he sought to repel force by force, [illegible]

chaplain of the king, a man very discreet, and [illegible]

[illegible] Magna Charta and swore to keep it [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] so roasted and powdered [illegible]

[illegible]

begun the war in France in a very short space

[illegible]

strued, it was thought proper to reduce it into writing, which, being in the nature of a Pro-

[illegible]

'Since, by the king's command, the lord

[illegible]

sen, that regard his kingdom of England;

[illegible]

the said truce, that then the said king of Eng-

[illegible]

the 60th; a 40th part on all carucats and hides of land; many scutages, and one very great

[illegible]

emperor. After all this, truly, 4 years were

[illegible]

and; and at last, after much entreaty, a 30th

[illegible]

dom; and to that end gave them a smaller charter, in which it is so included. Add to

[illegible]

guardianship of 4 English noblemen, the earl

[illegible]

never knew nor heard that the said money

[illegible]

very escheats he ought to have a large sum of

[illegible]

make their circuits through all parts of England, as well with pleas of forest, and with all

[illegible]

therefore it more than usually troubled them;

[illegible]

fit to a base.' To this the lords replied, 'that [illegible] of the truth of these facts. As [illegible] as well and faithfully, by Wm. de Kele: and [illegible] Paris, 'with his own mouth asked a pecuniary [illegible] The barons answered, 'that they would con- [illegible] bury, the bishops of Winchester, Lincoln, and [illegible] Richard, the king's brother, earl Bygot, the [illegible] the charter of liberties, which the king grant- [illegible] the abp. of Canterbury, on behalf of the king, had sworn to observe, was in no wise kept: [illegible] of the king and kingdom; and likewise, by [illegible] was desired, 'that such a chancellor and such a justice might be chosen, as would fix the [illegible] of the nobles; but promised, 'that he would [illegible] thus the assembly was adjourned for 3 weeks; and if, in the mean time, the king should, of [illegible]

[illegible] king a liberal donation of money; their answer was, 'that they were engaged, and could [illegible] his coronation; and gave the bishops leave, [illegible] at Michaelmas following.—Henry met with [illegible]

In a parliament held at London in 1246, [illegible] tion was made by the king's writ; and, if he [illegible] day; and to pay three years value of his estate, [illegible] consent; against the ancient customs, liberties and rights thereof; and against the appeal of the proctors of the kingdom, in a general coun- [illegible] thereof; and against the indulgences granted

kingdom infinitely suffered by reason of the

laws, grants, statutes, and privileges. And, 6.

houses.'—The king, in consideration of these

ment; and at the meeting conferred with the

father; and it was agreed that the king should

in order, says our author, to treat of the affairs

barons against it. They said, 'They admired

mand of them; because he had given them his

mony; and his own natural born subjects set

and tenders of them; by these means greatly

in order to get greater gifts and premiums from

them pay for the return; to the dishonour of

to their utter destruction; contrary to the so-

coronation. Lastly, the king was very much

he gained thereby; not promoting the public

'That, certainly and truly, all these faults should be amended;' hoping by this humility,

plaisance, answered again, 'All this will be made manifest in a little time; we have waited

us, so we in all things will behave towards him.' Thus, adds our author, matters were

[illegible]

'My lords and peers of England—You are [illegible] king at all civilly, in this matter. You would [illegible] you impose a very slavish condition on me, [illegible] and what counsel he pleases; and, in his own [illegible] fit; yet all this you presume to deny to your [illegible] obey your commands? Therefore my resolu[illegible] ciary, nor the treasurer, at your pleasure; nor will I appoint any other. I expect a sufficient [illegible]

[illegible] swer, 'That they would no longer impoverish themselves, to enrich foreigners; as they heretofore done, when they gave money for the [illegible] of themselves; but the king was hereby reduced to so great a necessity, that he was [illegible]

In March, 1251, a great parliament was held at London, in which Henry de Bath, chief [illegible] a great number of armed men of his wife's kindred and his own, as well as all his servants; he accused him more highly than the [illegible] 'That he was a disturber of the whole kingdom, from which a general sedition might be [illegible] against him; and one of his own brother jus[illegible]

[illegible] on high, and called out with a loud voice, that 'if any man whatsoever will kill Henry de [illegible] pronounce him acquitted accordingly; and then [illegible] checked their fury. 'My lords and friends, said he, I am not against prosecuting him, but it [illegible] perhaps our lord the king by this time repents [illegible] great measure their fury was appeased; and [illegible] some gain in the case, and a certain sum of [illegible] leased both from death and bondage; and in a short time after, on the payment of 2000 [illegible] tered again into his office, as if nothing had [illegible]

[illegible] year following; the exactions of the pope on the [illegible] the goods of the clergy for his own use. The [illegible] was done to alleviate this complaint; and only [illegible] ment, a curse was denounced, in the most so[illegible] 13 other bishops, in Pontificalibus, against all [illegible] in the great hall at Westminster; the form of [illegible] been taken from him in that country. During [illegible]

'My lords and friends,—In whose breasts [illegible]

[illegible]

midable and strong against him; some part of

[illegible]

enemy, and proved very unfaithful to him; to

[illegible]

than their own natural lord; therefore, the

[illegible]

ing. 'I that am more powerful and more

[illegible]

saying, 'if things really be as they are re-

[illegible]

doing any thing; and earl Richard sent an

[illegible]

count of his extreme want of money; in order,

[illegible]

force of a very great enemy coming against

[illegible]

singular, says Paris, 'that they had waited now full three weeks in London, in expecta-

[illegible]

Gascoigny; and that they were so often grieved

[illegible]

go to the king's assistance in person, if they

[illegible]

Castile did not at that time assist them, in op-

[illegible]

demanded a pecuniary aid for that purpose.—

[illegible]

council of the kingdom; as had been justly

[illegible]

never be able to bind their Proteus of a king.

But this the king resolutely refused; on which

[illegible]

or marks,) that he might set a pious example

[illegible]

Paris, came such a multitude of persons, of all

[illegible]

pence of recovering; and Apulia now was re-

[illegible]

been elected some time before.

[illegible]

he had sent a kind of a legate to demand the

[illegible]

that business. The king demanded a very

[illegible] between the king and the ba- [illegible]

his great charter; that he had raised to digni- [illegible]

writ to issue out of chancery against them. [illegible]

but to the whole assembly, 'calling for justice; and charged the king with promoting and en- [illegible]

kingdom; by which means he became unable to repel the injuries of so inconsiderable a peo- [illegible]

the adjournment, the barons promised the [illegible]

pope would make the conditions about the affair of Sicily, &c. more easy, so that it might [illegible]

deavour to procure him a common aid, or tax, for that purpose.' The king agreed so far, [illegible]

should be rectified by them, and the pope's legate, if in England. And for the perform- [illegible]

his son Edward swear that he would observe and keep what he had granted.—At the same [illegible]

Oxford, a month after Whit-Sunday, next [illegible]

kingdom. The king promised inviolably to [illegible]

them; whereupon, says M. Paris, the earls [illegible]

aid. These 24 had power to elect 4 that were [illegible]

the king and his kingdom; and the council, or [illegible]

fault. [illegible]

to their adjournment; but came attended by all such as owed them military service. They [illegible]

but their true reason was, for fear of the king's [illegible]

into a snare. However, matters went better than they imagined; for in this parliament all [illegible]

such a justiciary should be constituted, as [illegible]

this order, translated from the original French, is as follows: 'Be it remembered, that the 24 [illegible]

ments in a year; the 1st on the Octaves, or 8 days after st. Michael; the 2nd on the mor- [illegible]

John. To these three parliaments shall come all the chosen counsellors of the king, whether [illegible]

'Be it remembered, that the community have [illegible]

hold for established what the 12 shall do; and [illegible]

treat in the three parliaments in a year, with the king's council, for all the commons, or [illegible]

&c. 'all in abatement,' says dr. Brady, 'of the

refer the curious reader.

to prison, to be punished at the king's pleasure.

date at Winchester, Sept. 21; and Paris

followers was strictly put in execution; but

and determine all matters concerning it; which

them; and therefore, 'all who began the war and persevered in it; all who violently and maliciously kept Northampton against the king;

[illegible] at Chesterfield; all that freely sent their

king or his son; all bailiffs and servants of the

bours; burnt their houses, or killed them, or did any other mischief; all were to pay 5 years

and Henry Hastings were to pay 7 years pro-

pounded, or were fined 3, 2, 1, or half a year's

their offences: those who had no lands were fined in goods. All obligations, writings, or

might have been injured; yet the great char-

in full force by this judgment. The commissioners also requested the king and legate, that

king's reign.

continuator of M. Paris, were summoned to

demanded, 'That the prelates and rectors of

churches, for 3 years next to come, and for the

To this it was answered, 'That the war began

peace of the kingdom; and make use of the [illegible] this it was answered, 'That it was not reason- [illegible] meddle with collecting of tenths; nor would they [illegible] the old should stand.'—'3. That the bishops [illegible] value.' Answered, 'That they were impower- [illegible] marks, for the aforesaid tithes, which a certain [illegible] 'That they would give nothing, because all [illegible] own persons against the king's enemies, or find [illegible] tenements.' To this they answered, 'That [illegible] spiritual sword, that is, with their prayers and [illegible] vice, but what was certain; and would not per- [illegible] it was answered, 'That a great part of the peo- [illegible] would be left to defend the nation.'—'7. That the prelates were absolutely bound to comply [illegible] tutes of Marlborough.

*Taxes in this king's reign.*

The parliament called at Northampton, in [illegible] two marks of every knight's fee. The parlia- [illegible] In the same year a 40th part of all movea- [illegible] of all their moveables, as the bishops and clergy [illegible] land; and levied a 15th. At the same time he [illegible] a 15th, as well out of their spirituals as tempo- [illegible] clesiastical censures. Soon after this, the re- [illegible] advantage to them; and for the renewal [illegible] paid according to his faculty, at the [illegible] shops, bishops, abbots and priors gave a great [illegible] of London to grievous redemption; and [illegible] required a scutage of three marks of every knight's fee, of all that held baronies, as well prelates as laics.—In a parliament held at Lambeth, in 1232, a 40th part of all [illegible] was granted to the king, and was collected [illegible] his sister to Frederic emperor of Germany, and [illegible] In 1237, a 30th part of all moveables was [illegible] quired a scutage of 3 marks from every knight's [illegible] but others say only 20s.—In a parliament held [illegible] for 3 years, and the nobility 3 marks of every [illegible] In 1267, 3 years tenths of all church revenues [illegible] (See M. Paris.)

## EDWARD I.

[illegible] beginning of May 1275; the chief occasion of [illegible] Welsh prince neglected the summons, and sent for excuse, 'that the king having shewn, on many occasions, an extreme animosity to him, [illegible] affairs of great importance; that is, in enact-

these were called the 'Statutes of Westmin-

some to be for novelty sake, or for a good

again to Westminster, on the affair of Lewel-

ment the king confirmed the Charters of Li-

king a 30th part of their moveable goods to-

desirous to stem this torrent; but wanted a

can thunder, and effectually put a stop to

universal joy; nor durst the clergy oppose it,

the 'Statute of Mortmain', because it was in-

to comply with the king's demand; because, their discontent being discovered, a knight,

known and taken notice of, as a breaker of

Shrewsbury. Here it was that a parliament

that of the prince his brother, and his four quar-

[illegible] York, Bristol [illegible] He [illegible] still extant on record; the first of which is to [illegible] same county; as also a third directed to several cities and boroughs, and a fourth writ to the [illegible] bly united to the crown of England; which it has ever since continued to be. 'It was cer- [illegible] nations, were hereby extinguished; and they [illegible] the laity granted to the king a 30th, and the [illegible] Wales, came in Dec. to Bristol; where he kept [illegible] general one, but a particular parliament, says [illegible] Acton Burnel, in Shropshire; where was made [illegible] him 3 years in that kingdom. In his absence, a parliament was held at London, in Feb. 1288, [illegible] their spokesman, 'that they would grant nothing unless they saw the king personally present.' Hereupon the treasurer imposed a tal- [illegible] demesnes (*e*). At his return, in Aug. 1289, his first care was to reform several abuses, intro- [illegible] ing such great abuses being propounded, the [illegible] were fined to pay these following sums: sir R. de Hengham, chief justice of the King's Bench, [illegible] common pleas, 3000 marks. Sir W. Bramp- [illegible] marks; Sir W. Hopton, 2000 marks; the four last were itinerant justices; Sir W. de Saham, 3000 marks; R. Lithebury, master of the rolls, 1000 marks; Roger Leicester, 1000; Henry [illegible] clerk of the courts, no less than 34,000 marks; [illegible] ever out of the kingdom. Hollingshead in- [illegible] nation had long desired it; but the Jews still [illegible] could not do it; the king being unable to pro- [illegible] cated; but they had leave to carry away the [illegible] ment willingly granted a 15th. It was at this time, also, that the statute called 'Westmin- [illegible]

---

(*a*) Sam. Daniel in Kennett's History of England, p. 191.

(*b*) See Statutes at Large. Called the Statute Merchant for the Recovery of Debts.

[illegible] Part II.

[illegible] Ecclesiastical History, p. 465.

(*e*) Chron. T. Wikes, p. 117.

(*f*) Chron. T. Wikes, p. 118. Chron. de Dunstable. MSS. Daniel's History. Tindal's Notes on Rapin.

[illegible] them.' The chief justice having ended his [illegible] they [illegible]

[illegible] The

---

(y) See Br[illegible] C[illegible] hist. Vol. [illegible] he [illegible] proceeded with all the other [illegible] tion put to them, and received from them the [illegible] vol. ii. App. No. ii.

[illegible] tions, to the number of fourscore in all; and [illegible] matter is amply taken notice of by most of our more modern historians; and, as the English [illegible] tence in this weighty affair, a full parliament [illegible] Tweed, where all the commissioners appeared, [illegible] clared, in full parliament, to be the only person that had a right of possession. Edward [illegible] him; saving, however, to himself and suc- [illegible] jection, being often summoned to appear be- [illegible] private people; by which he was become rather the absolute slave than vassal to the king of England. And, in a parliament held in [illegible] stand at the bar, like a private person, and an- [illegible] hands till he gave full satisfaction. The Eng- [illegible] was pronounced, Baliol presented a petition, [illegible]

[illegible] The [illegible] but so incensed at the affront he had received, [illegible] himself from so intolerable a yoke.

[illegible] seemed favourable to Baliol's design. The king of France had by a stratagem seized upon [illegible] they were told by Edward's ambassadors [illegible] towards the expence of this war, the revenues of his paternal estate in England for 3 years. Notwithstanding this concession of the Scotch king, he hoped for greater advantages from this rupture; and accordingly he concluded a secret alliance with the king of France, and [illegible] transported his armies abroad. Edward got intelligence of this plot, contrived against him at Paris, and called another parliament at [illegible] to allow the king the 11th part of their goods, the clergy the 10th, and the merchants a 7th.—Edward having got this supply, neglected his more foreign concerns, and entirely bent his mind on the conquest of Scotland; which [illegible] Scotland's designs, he demanded of him the [illegible] However, being assured of his revolt, Edw. lost [illegible] army directly for Scotland; and Baliol, being certain of assistance from France, bids de- [illegible] legiance, as unlawfully promised; alledging that it was not in his power, without the consent of the states, to do any such acts. 'And [illegible]

We shall, however, pursue these wars no farther than is consistent with our design; suffice it to say that Edw. in a short space of time overrun all Scotland, and reduced Baliol [illegible] peace. After which, he called a parliament [illegible] homage and fealty to him in a most submissive manner, binding themselves to serve him faith-

---

[illegible] process, [illegible] of this matter, relating to Macduff, the son of Malcolm earl of Fife, will be found at large in Ryley's Plac. Parl. p. 192, &c.

(i) The petition was made by his own mouth, [illegible] in French, translated by [illegible] p. 70.

without a strong guard to secure their persons;

[illegible]

"No manner of tax or aid shall either be

[illegible]

duced, we will and grant that such customs or

[illegible]

England; and others the earls, barons, knights,

[illegible]

[illegible]

tenes, twice in a year, all those who shall seek

[illegible]

present writing, together with the seals of the

[illegible]

their aid and advice for ever."

[illegible]

induce his father to consent to all their de-

[illegible]

firmed and sealed. The king being driven to a strait, took 3 days to consider of this message; and then, that he might gain the hearts

[illegible]

clergy a 10th; the abp. of York, with his

[illegible]

of danger, a 5th penny, as a subsidy to carry

[illegible]

Edward having concluded a truce for two

[illegible]

after; and the first thing he did was to re-

[illegible]

called a parliament to meet in that city, where

[illegible]

subjects to be ready with horse and harness,

[illegible]

---

[illegible]

[illegible]

fall upon several rash and imprudent projects [illegible] I per- [illegible] e your [illegible]

[illegible]

out what servants he pleases; but if I may not [illegible]

[illegible]

ing reasons:—1st. That Henry III. had asked [illegible]

[illegible] rons; and the same king Henry acknowledged [illegible]

[illegible] of a governor, to himself, he declared it was [illegible]

[illegible]

their king could not act in that manner, nor refer a right, which was so clear and open, to [illegible]

[illegible] and is deserving a place in our history. The following is a translation of it:—

"To the most holy Father in Christ, Boni- [illegible]

[illegible] de Hastings, b. of Bergevenny; H. de Percy, [illegible] more; Rob. Fitz-Walter, b. of Wodham; Wm. [illegible] of Hawarden; Rob. de Tateshall, b. of Buck- [illegible] Wurmgeye; Robert de Tonny, b. of Castle-Mawde; Rob. de Clifford, chatellaine of Appleby; Peter de Malo Lacu, or Mawley, b. [illegible] de Ferrers, b. of Groby; Alan de Zouch, b. of Ashby; Theo. de Verdon, b. of Webberley; [illegible] b. of Torby; Tho. Baron Berkely; Foulk Fitz- [illegible] Corbet, b. of Caux; Wm. de Cantalupe, b. of Ravensthorpe; J. de Beauchamp, b. of Hacche, [illegible] Nevil, b. of Raby; Brian Fitz-Alane, b. of Bedale; Wm. Marshal, b. of Hengham; [illegible] of Cameia; H. de Tyes, b. of Chilton; Roger le Warre, b. of Isefeld; J. de Rivers, b. of [illegible] Garinges; Ralph Pipard, b. of Lanford; Walter, b. Fauconberge; John le Strange, b. of Cnokyn; Roger le Strange, b. of Ellesmere; [illegible]

circumstantial, may give our readers a notion [illegible] in those times; translated from the old French, [illegible]

[illegible] don, and in Westchepe, in these words: 'know [illegible]

[illegible] method of dissolving a parliament at that time. 'All abps. bps. and other prelates, earls, ba- [illegible]

[illegible] country; going forthwith and without delay, [illegible]

[illegible] the like nature for the future; and messen- [illegible]

We shall conclude our historical account of [illegible]

[illegible]

*parliament.*

[illegible] cester and Hereford; Th. e. of Lancaster; Humphrey Bohun, e. of Hereford and Essex; John Warren, e. of Surrey; Edm. e. of Arundale; John de Britain, e. of Richmond; Guy [illegible]

[illegible] Somerset, Wm. Grandison, John Hastings, [illegible]

[illegible] Mountacute, Walter de Tey, Edm. de Hast- [illegible]

[illegible] wich, Rochester, Durham, Carlisle, Ely, Wor- [illegible]

[illegible] St. Edmund's-Bury, St. Alban, Westminster, [illegible]

[illegible]

3s. 4d. a quarter, when it was dearest; and in [illegible]

And in 1299, a fat cock was sold for 3 halfpence, two pullets for 3 halfpence, a fat capon for 2½d. a goose 4d. a mallard 3 halfpence, a partridge 3 halfpence, a pheasant 4d. a heron 6d. a plover 1d. a swan 3s. a crane 12d. two woodcocks 3 halfpence, a fat lamb from Christ- [illegible]

In 1276, Edward had a 15th granted him by [illegible]

[illegible] value, upon oath, throughout all England; to [illegible]

[illegible] dom, gave an 11th; and the citizens and bur- [illegible]

[illegible] the kingdom, gave a 12th part; the citizens, [illegible]

[illegible] a 10th, and the province of York a 5th. In [illegible]

[illegible] having summoned a parl. at Westminster to [illegible]

[illegible] had a 15th granted to him in parliament. In [illegible]

[illegible] gesses also unanimously granted a 20th.

* * *

[illegible] ther, a marriage was, also, concluded in this [illegible]

[illegible] every fresh favour granted to this foreigner, by [illegible]

[illegible]

nagement of, and keeping in due subjection the [illegible] in that kingdom; and for which, adds our au- [illegible]

[illegible] mon a parliament to meet 15 days after. Which [illegible] as abusing the king's ear by obtaining inno- [illegible]

[illegible] Mr. Tyrrel; but he omits what J. Stowe adds [illegible] passage from that history, viz. that the lords told the king, 'that Gaveston's father was ex- [illegible]

[illegible] earls of Lancaster and Hereford, that he would [illegible]

[illegible] should immediately quit the kingdom.' The [illegible] take up arms; but, he, fearing the ill consequence of a downright denial, after many alter- [illegible]

[illegible] tribution of all the estates: and to make it [illegible]

[illegible] in this matter, was to send him [illegible]

[illegible] king to leave to certain lords, appointed by the [illegible] dom, and his own domestic affairs.' This very [illegible] made them smart for, this weak prince gave his [illegible]

[illegible] mitted the parliament to chuse 7 bishops, 8 [illegible] constituted, but they all took an oath, 'That [illegible]

[illegible] found in dr. Brady's Hist. p. 103, and is print- [illegible] us a translation of them, in effect, with the king's confirmation of them, both of which are too long for our purpose.

Another parliament met at Stamford, July 26, 1309: it was summoned to suppress the ill intentions of the Scots; but we do not find any [illegible] Gaveston should enjoy the earldom of Cornwall during life.

[illegible] other parliament, or rather a piece of a parliament, at York; for here several discontented lords refused to come; being greatly dissatis- [illegible]

[illegible] king's cousin German; and the earls of War- [illegible]

[illegible] tain by the oath he took at his coronation; and [illegible] before him, and answer to all such as

[illegible]

in full county, and in all cities, boroughs and

[illegible]

should think expedient, ' that it was his great

[illegible]

happen, sent an order to the mayor, aldermen, and common council of London, ' to secure

[illegible]

better the king's cause; nor another, wherein he sets forth, ' that he was resolved to preserve

[illegible]

him, or contrary to the form of the commis-

[illegible]

' that in his presence, whenever he pleased

[illegible]

Thomas earl of Lancaster was made general. After which they sent a message to the king, ' that they besought him either to deliver

[illegible]

with him from York to Newcastle; where the

[illegible]

borough castle, they besieged it; which, after

[illegible]

off, the lords in the confederacy sent a haughty

[illegible]

' that, if it was not done speedily, they would

[illegible]

selves in the country about Dunstable, the

[illegible]

with a great number of armed men, raised

[illegible]

king had sent him a positive inhibition against it, as well as to some other lords of the same

[illegible]

had lately received from the barons; of their taking Pierce Gaveston and cutting off his

[illegible]

cusations, 'that they had in no wise offended [illegible]

[illegible] boldly declared, 'That they would no longer [illegible]

[illegible] them. By their mediation, therefore, the king [illegible]

[illegible] fore him, and beg his pardon in whatever they had offended him, and' thereupon the king [illegible]

[illegible] ture as his liegemen and subjects; and, con- [illegible]

[illegible] home with joy and satisfaction.

[illegible] worse than at home; Rob. Bruce, their new [illegible]

[illegible] a parliament, or a council of his shattered no- [illegible]

[illegible] dreadful famine which lasted 3 years, and de- [illegible]

[illegible] time, the king summoned a parliament to meet at Westm. on the 20th of Dec. this year. [illegible]

[illegible] cil, praying, that a proclamation might be is- [illegible] the manner following

[illegible] cow for 12s. A fat hog, of 2 years old, for 3s. 4d. A fat weather or mutton, unshorn, for [illegible]

A fat capon for 2d. A fat hen for a 1d. Two [illegible] and 24 eggs for 1d. And those who would [illegible]

[illegible] 24d. the ounce, which must argue a great [illegible]

made by a parliament, from thence it became a temporary statute; yet it did not take suffi- [illegible]

[illegible] for a mark; the sheep being, also, mostly dead [illegible]

[illegible] the king a 20th part of their goods or moveables; but in Staffordshire and Shropshire [illegible]

[illegible] granted on certain conditions; viz. 'that the king should cause the great Charter of the Li- [illegible]

[illegible] put in execution.' The king was much sur- [illegible]

[illegible] bulations; whereupon that he might be the [illegible]

In 1315, the king summoned a parliament

[illegible]

land; the king, 'besought and enjoined all

[illegible]

they should be sold as formerly or as reason-

[illegible]

whole body assembled, 'that he would ob-

[illegible]

time; saving to the king his reasons against

[illegible]

in the kingdom one stout footman, except cities, boroughs, and the king's demesnes; and

[illegible]

the towns, and their expences to be paid, until

[illegible]

charged; the king promising to give his letters

[illegible]

'that this grant should be no precedent nor

[illegible]

questing him, in behalf of the king, prelates,

[illegible]

touching himself and his realm; together with

[illegible]

may be discharged from the council; and that

[illegible]

him; and if any of the prelates, earls and ba-

[illegible]

Scots had invaded England and come into [illegible] plunder-ing, wasting and burning the country; so that [illegible] and bring them to a submission; and therefore this parliament was put off.

[illegible] agreed to petition the king, 'that for the ho- [illegible] please to assent that 2 bps., 1 earl, 1 baron, 1 [illegible] him in due manner; and that they might deliberate and advise about all considerable matters [illegible] to the form of the said indenture; and if any [illegible] rons to advise him in the form aforesaid; yet [illegible] earl of Lancaster, his people, or party and fol- [illegible] until st. James's day this year; and that the [illegible] absolute without condition, and if better secu- [illegible] by the king and his baronage; the king by the [illegible] ment, granted a pardon to the earl of Lancas- [illegible] the 7th of Aug. last past, and a pardon of out- [illegible] making of their charters; and commanded the [illegible]

[illegible] the great seal, the king now willed and grant- [illegible] to be likewise enrolled in them."

[illegible] wards him, and he became as great a favourite as Gaveston; for which he was persecuted [illegible] the clergy for some time; but at a prorogation [illegible] pope's licence; but allowed that a messenger [illegible] grant a 10th for one year, which was done ac- [illegible]

[illegible] and Tyrrel, under the year 1320.—After many [illegible] to the king, 'to demand in their names that [illegible] mildly, 'that Hugh, the father, was beyond [illegible] and disorders he had called a parliament to [illegible]

The parl. met at Westm. on the day appoi- [illegible]

[illegible]

as follows:—

[illegible]

to the person; and this appears, for that be-

[illegible]

against their liege lord.—3rd. By their evil

[illegible]

who received him accordingly: but when these

[illegible]

After which, sir Hugh the younger being

[illegible]

until his heir was of full age; which grant, [illegible] king at Lincoln, at the request and assent of the peers of the land in parl.: yet the said sir [illegible] king to repeal this grant, without cause; and [illegible]

[illegible] upon, and received their fees, as it had been [illegible]

[illegible] king do against his oath in parliament.—10th. [illegible]

[illegible] were the Templars: also by usurping power- [illegible] prelates; so that in matters concerning them and their friends, or which they undertook, no [illegible]

[illegible] agreed and made fine with sir Hugh the son, [illegible]

[illegible] land; therefore we the peers of the land, earls [illegible]

[illegible] summoned; and to quit the realm between the [illegible]

[illegible] father and son. Yet it is remarkable that these [illegible]

[illegible] sed a kind of a petition, or rather a remon- [illegible]

"That the two Despensers, usurping royal [illegible] other manner, without the king's leave; and [illegible]

[illegible] nies; which things having been so done by [illegible] punished by law; nor can be without great [illegible] suaging of anger and rancour, and making [illegible] prelates, earls, barons and commons; that no [illegible] displayed; nor for the taking or detaining of [illegible]

and surrendered himself prisoner to the king [illegible] prosecute his complaint, and that right might be done him in these matters: that the king received him as he ought to do; and caused [illegible] to the abp. of Canterbury, the bps. and other prelates and clergy in the province of Canterbury, then being in a provincial council at London; charging them by the faith they owed to him, to advise [illegible] thoughts concerning it. And when they had [illegible] made; wherefore they agreed, and unani[illegible] king repealed, and annulled for ever. And they said further, that they, nor any of them [illegible] was made, did make protestation in writing, that they could not, nor would assent to it for several reasons. And the earl of Kent, the [illegible] being before the king, said, the award was wrongful, and against law and right; and prayed him, as the prelates had done before, to null and make void the award: and the said earls affirmed, that for fear of the force, which the great men suddenly brought to the parl. in or[illegible] it, and also advised the king to suffer it to pass; [illegible]"

[illegible] a like petition delivered in parl. by Hugh le D[illegible] with that of his son's; setting forth, "That the same great men before named, and other ad[illegible] the king, came to his manor of Fastern in W[illegible] other counties, viz. 6 in Gloucester, 4 in Dorsetshire, 5 in Hampshire, 2 in Berkshire, 6 in Oxfordshire, 3 in Buckinghamshire, 4 in Surrey, 1 in Cambridgeshire, 2 in Huntingdonshire, 5 in Leicestershire, 1 in Yorkshire, 1 in Lincolnshire, 5 in Cheshire, and 5 in Warwickshire;' in all 63 manors there named; which shews [illegible] only greater; as 'the driving away of 28,000 [illegible] the spoiling of two crops, one in the barn, and the other upon the ground; the taking away [illegible] quantity of provisions of all sorts, and armour for 200 men: and the destruction of his houses [illegible] Marlborough, 36 sacks of wool, a chalice and [illegible] damage of [illegible]"

Next follows the king's judgment in this form, "We afterwards at our parl. held at York 3 weeks after Easter, in the 15th year of our reign, caused to come before us the [illegible] of the said Hugh the son, and Hugh the father, in these words; to the honour of God, and [illegible] fully, against the laws and usages of the realm, [illegible] we would annul and defeat the said award, [illegible] awards. And hereupon hearing the reasons of the said Hugh and Hugh, we caused the process to be examined in full parl. in the pre[illegible] award was made without calling them to an[illegible] the great charter of the franchises in England; [illegible] they were not called in court, to make answer, &c. for these errors, and for that the causes of the said award were not duly proved: as also hav[illegible] and alliances, or come with armed men; yet [illegible] notwithstanding our command; and when they [illegible] their councils and assemblies without coming [illegible] to promote, should deliver them: and after pro-

[illegible]

[illegible] advice.' The bishop being a shrewd and learned [illegible]

[illegible] being further urged, he answered, 'my lord the king, saving all due reverence to your ma- [illegible] church, and a consecrated bishop, though un- [illegible] without the licence and authority of my lord [illegible]

[illegible] plored the king's mercy for him; and he was [illegible]

[illegible] caused a bill of indictment to be preferred [illegible]

[illegible] for that purpose, under this title, '*Statutum* [illegible]

[illegible] had formed a scheme of a very scandalous and [illegible]

[illegible] way: he made some struggles, it is true, to [illegible]

[illegible] king himself made a prisoner in Kenelworth [illegible]

[illegible] it by a parliamentary sanction. Accordingly a writ was issued out for proroguing a parl. [illegible]

[illegible] likely that it was a trumped up writ for form [illegible] for both Tyrrel and Brady agree in this, that [illegible]

[illegible] who put this memorable question, 'Whether [illegible] should reign over them?' He was seconded by [illegible]

[illegible] honour of himself, and destruction of holy [illegible]

[illegible] vernment of his kingdom: but always gave [illegible] works and employments not [illegible] [illegible] which were with him; neither regarded the [illegible] purpose, had a power given them 'to resign [illegible] election of his son, and to procure his voluntary resignation of his crown; or, if he re- [illegible] to the king to smooth the way; and that these [illegible] crown to his son. 'Promising him as much honour after his resignation as before; and, on [illegible] a king out of the royal line.' After this deputation from the grand committee had softened and brought the king to their own temper, the [illegible] away, and had fallen to the ground, had he [illegible] 'That he was very sorry he had so misbehaved [illegible] for it of all that were present, but, seeing now [illegible] thanks for chusing his first-born son in his [illegible] sioners had taken care to bring for that purpose; after which, one sir Wm. Trussel, chosen [illegible]

"I, Wm. Trussel, procurator of the prelates, [illegible] curacy named, having for this full and suffi- [illegible] you Edw. k. of England, before this time, the [illegible] them, for certain causes therein mentioned; [illegible] all those that will not for the future be in your [illegible] the kingdom admitted Edw. a youth of 14, to [illegible] of his reign; for from that time he acted as [illegible]

*Taxes in this king's reign.*

[illegible] silver, of knights and other freemen, and of [illegible] granted a 15th of their moveables; as also did [illegible] ed a 25th of their moveables. In his 7th year [illegible] mons of counties, gave a 20th of their goods; [illegible] ties of cities and boroughs, gave a 15th. In [illegible] ties of the kingdom assembled in parl. In his [illegible] burgesses, and tenants in ancient demesnes, [illegible] Lincoln; the same year, the community of the [illegible] Lincoln, the other at York; the former of which the abp. of Canterbury was immediately [illegible] him a 10th of the goods of the community or [illegible] of citizens, burgesses, and tenants of ancient demesnes. Mr. Tyrrel observes, 'that in this king's reign we find few or no complaints of any taxes imposed or collected [illegible] contrary to law, notwithstanding the exorbitant power of the two Despensers: but this might be owing to their policy, who having made themselves so obnoxious to the nobility, would do what they could to make the common people their friends. But towards the latter end of his reign, the confiscation of the estates of the earl of Lancaster, and the rest of the barons attainted, were so considerable, that though he gave away a great deal of lands to the Despensers and [illegible] that [illegible] have a greater revenue than any of his predecessors since Henry II.'s time.'

*Price of Provisions in this reign.*

In 1309 wheat sold for 7s. 2d. a quarter; [illegible] tun. Oats 4s. a quarter. A hog about 3s. 2d. A mutton about 3s. A goose about 3½d. A fowl about 3d. A pig 6d. A shield of brawn 4s. But these being for a prior's feast seem to be charged high. In 1314 a corn-fed ox for 1l. 4s. and a grass-fed ox for 16s. A fat mut- [illegible] 1315 wheat sold for 20s. a quarter; malt [illegible] sold at Leicester for 2l. 4s. a quarter, being excessive scarce; and in the same year fell to [illegible] drawn out with the utmost nicety, in bp. [illegible]

## EDWARD III.

[illegible] assigned him 12 guardians, viz. 5 bishops, 2 earls, and 5 barons. Over all these, by general [illegible] themselves, Henry earl of Lancaster, Lincoln, Leicester and Derby, the king's cousin, was [illegible] coronation, a petition was presented to the [illegible] of Lancaster, 'praying to be restored to their [illegible] were also pardoned and indem-

nified. This parl. continued sitting [illegible] a month after the king's coronation: in which [illegible] queen and her accomplices; besides pardons, and indemnifications, to a vast number of [illegible] caster, and the other barons. In 1328 a parl. [illegible] ticles of peace, which had been propounded [illegible] But nothing was done at it, because several [illegible] calling another 3 weeks after Easter to Northampton. In this parl. a scandalous peace was [illegible] Mortimer. The articles were, 1st. 'that prince David, son and heir to Robert king of [illegible] to grant the Scottish king a charter, to release all his claim to superiority, which Edw. or his ancestors had over Scotland; and to deliver up all charters and instruments concerning the same. In this parl. also the Despensers, fa- [illegible] the insurrection at London, were attainted of [illegible] the queen mother and the lord Mortimer. [illegible] implacable malice which pursued them beyond the grave; or to cover their late unjustifiable actions against these persons by a parliamentary sanction; it is certain that in all the proceedings of this parl. the honour and profit of the king and realm was not so much regarded, as the enriching, security, and advancement of the lord Mortimer.

Some matters of moment happening soon after this last parl., new writs were issued out, bearing date Aug. 28, for another to meet at [illegible] St. Michael. The earl of Lancaster, the lord [illegible] the earl giving for reason, 'That being appointed by parl. the king's chief counsellor and guardian of his person, the lord Mortimer had now taken to himself the regal power, and would not permit him [illegible] tect him according to his trust. That though it had been decreed that no person whatsoever should presume to come armed to this parl., yet the lord Mortimer came with a great many [illegible] think his person in safety.' This being certified to the king and parl., it was thought very rea-

[illegible] confidence; and he surmised to the king, in [illegible] enemies beyond sea, in destruction to the [illegible] others, not as yet fit to be declared, he had [illegible] peers [illegible] the king, and they all delivered their opinion, by one of their body, 'that all things contained in the said articles were notorious, and [illegible] wherefore they, as judges in parl. by assent of [illegible] as a traitor and enemy to the king and king- [illegible] assisting with the earl mareschal at the execution; which was performed accordingly on the 29th of Nov. at a place then called the Elms, [illegible] notoriously known to the said peers; whereupon they came before the king in parl. and said all with one voice, 'that the said Simon was [illegible] bound to judge him as a peer of the land [illegible] said; and that he was guilty of divers other felonies and robberies, and a principal maintainer [illegible] king and realm, to be drawn and hanged; and [illegible] ecution; which was done accordingly. But it [illegible] upon those that were no peers; yet hereafter [illegible] hanged and beheaded as a traitor, when and wherever he should be found; and the peers [illegible] should have 100*l.*; or if he brought his head, he should have 100 marks; and he that could [illegible] judgment was given likewise against Thos. de [illegible] Thomas alive, was to have 100*l.*; or if he could bring his head, 100 marks. he that could [illegible] for the death of Edw. II. to this effect; for that [illegible] was murthered; the said sir Thos. saith, 'that [illegible] senting thereunto; and thereupon put himself upon his trial by 12 knights, named in the re- [illegible] fled, or withdrew himself upon it; but since he [illegible] was murthered, he had a day given him to hear his judgment in the next parl.; and in the [illegible]

In 1331 Edw. called a parl. at Westm. to meet the day after Michaelmas day; in which [illegible] cause of the summons to be, 'concerning the dutchy of Aquitain, and the king's possessions [illegible] should be preferred before any other. [illegible] prelates, earls, barons, &c. for their advice, 'Whether they thought it best for the king to proceed by way of process of war, or by an [illegible] treaty with the king of France [illegible] ing; and the bps. of Winchester, Worcester, and Norwich, with the lords Beaumont, Percy, [illegible] John de Shoreditch, were sent to the French [illegible] resolved, 'that the king in person should go thither; but, to prepare his way, a certain number of forces, under able commanders, should be sent before him; and that those es- [illegible] Also it was ordained, 'that all learned men in [illegible] should by no means be excused on any pretence whatsoever.' And further it was ordered, 'that search should be made into his [illegible] been formerly taken for the civilizing and well governing the people of Ireland.' In this parl. [illegible] the king and his council should otherwise ap- [illegible] allowed her for her maintenance. And that none of the estates in parl. should retain, sustain [illegible] Barnes's Edw. III. p. 63.

Another parl. was summoned to meet at Westm. March 12, 1332; reciting in the summons the king's reasons for calling them [illegible] 'that no man, upon pain of forfeiting all his substance, should presume to use or wear any [illegible] women, or children, should be used in Westm. [illegible] adds he, we shall mention the laudable custom [illegible] mittees were appointed not only to be receivers, but also tryers of petitions, who were to enquire of the matter of fact, expressed in the petition; that so it might be cleared and [illegible] with a speech, more fully declaring the king's [illegible] ceived a message, that the k. of France, with [illegible] in the king's presence, and at his command, declared further, 'that this meeting was called, as well to redress the breaches of the [illegible] it was notorious to all, that divers people defying the law, were gathered together in great [illegible] king's justices; taking and detaining some of [illegible] had received great fines and ransoms, at the pleasure of the evil doers; putting some to [illegible] he very much desired to undertake; as also [illegible] said, 'that it did not properly belong to their [illegible] themselves. The earls, barons, and other grandees, consulted also apart; and the repre- [illegible] time having no particular speaker. The result of these separate consultations was, that [illegible] was, 'that he should ordain justices in every [illegible] out to the sheriffs, and best men of every coun- [illegible] *posse-comitatus* against them; and cause them to be indicted and punished according to their [illegible] the time mentioned by the French king for [illegible]

[illegible] their opinion, 'That the king could no longer, with honour, put up the wrongs and injuries [illegible]

[illegible] as holding of Edw.; but he understanding that [illegible]

[illegible] conquests: for in a very short time he had [illegible] Baliol's homage to him, in a parl. at Edin- [illegible]

[illegible] ther parl. at York, which had been summoned [illegible] there enacted were, "That the Great Charter [illegible]

[illegible] Statutes at Large, and Cotton's Abridgment of [illegible]

In the same year, after a great council held [illegible] the summons; which was, 'That the king being [illegible] France, had formed a resolution to take a [illegible]

[illegible] these ships had been miserably shattered at [illegible] any effect; and also that Scotland seemed [illegible], he was the more willing to partake with the rest of the princes, in this pious and honourable enterprise; though he had set no [illegible]

[illegible] this declaration; but whether they agreed to [illegible] news the parl. granted the king a 15th from the lords and knights of shires, a 10th from [illegible]

The king soon turned all his thoughts to- [illegible] York about Whitsuntide, 1335; there to treat [illegible] for at the intercession of a bp., sent by the [illegible] more statutes were enacted, very serviceable to the peace and welfare of the realm.—The [illegible]

When at a parl. called at Northampton, [illegible] assist them; and to that purpose, had sent [illegible] casion to turn his arms against France; and [illegible] head of the forces of both nations. Having [illegible] sea, and finding nothing to resist him, he re- [illegible] Nottingham, Sept. 25, this year. Here Edw. [illegible] Scotland and Gascony, of a 20th from the [illegible]

It was here enacted, 'that no wool of Eng- [illegible] seas; and that all cloth-workers should be re- [illegible]

[illegible] to [illegible], except the king, queen, and their children:' also, 'that [illegible] full parl. the king created his eldest son prince Edw. duke of Cornwall, being the first that [illegible] earls, Hy. of Lancaster, earl of Derby; Wm. Montacute, earl of Salisbury; Hugh de Audley, earl of Gloucester; Wm. Clinton, earl of [illegible] whole nation was then very hearty in the cause, and their representatives cheerfully [illegible] of Canterbury and his convocation gave a 10th of their temporalities for 3 years. Some fur[illegible]

[illegible] affair he was about to undertake; another was [illegible] whole 10th, causing them to pay 9 marks for every pack of the best wool; but one half he [illegible] he took, also, a 15th of all the commonalty in [illegible] king, also, issued out a commission for seizing [illegible] tion in usury, were become odious and a pub[illegible] into his hands the goods and revenues of all [illegible] who paid a sufficient rent for them during these [illegible]

[illegible] many for 40l. a sack, amounting in all to [illegible] exceeding cheap. A qr. of wheat was sold at London for 2s. a fat ox for 6s. 8d. a fat goose for 2d, and 6 pigeons for a 1d.—On the [illegible] a royal navy of 500 sail, accompanied with [illegible] short time after arrived at Antwerp, belonging [illegible]

[illegible] father, called a parl. to meet at Northampton. [illegible] Michaelmas following. Here was granted such [illegible] fore; and shews how well this king, and the [illegible] bought at a low price; which must have amounted to a vast proportion, since only the 3 counties of Leicester, Lincoln, and North[illegible] piece, according to their estates and abilities. At a convocation, also, held the 1st of Oct. a 10th was granted from the clergy for 2 years [illegible]

[illegible] bp. of Durham, and sir M. de la Pole, were [illegible] lords and commons, 'what he had done beyond sea, with his condition there, and the [illegible] lowers, for want of supplies from England. [illegible] entered into obligations for 300,000*l.* ster. and more, towards the charge of his auxiliaries, and [illegible] thence without giving his creditors satisfaction. Lastly, for this cause, and for the maintenance [illegible] a very large sum.'—This remonstrance was an- [illegible]

years; desiring, at the same time, that the il- [illegible]

and that this grant should not turn into a cus- [illegible]

the king, yet prayed the regent, 'that he would summon another parl. in a convenient [illegible]

the sense of their constituents about it, de- [illegible]

to Antwerp, 6 commissioners were appointed [illegible]

time of the next session of parl. approached [illegible]

John St Paul, any 4, 3, or 2 of these, were [illegible]

guardian should do, until his, or the king his [illegible]

granting the king an aid, for keeping of the [illegible]

sider thereof till the 19th of Feb.; and then they unanimously offered to the king for aid [illegible]

2500 sacks of wool; so, as if the king liked [illegible]

of their grain, wool, and lambs, and of all their [illegible]

return into his own country, to raise more [illegible]

sealed with his new broad seal; they were [illegible]

necessity, a parl. might be then called within [illegible]

declared to be, "for granting him a great aid or else he should be for ever dishonoured, and [illegible]

to return to Brussels, and stay there as a pledge, [illegible]

these mischiefs would be prevented, and his [illegible]

chattels, according to the true value, for two years next coming. They, also, granted a 15th on all foreign merchants that did not reside in [illegible]

those that lived by labouring at husbandry; beggars, cottagers, and slaves, only excepted: [illegible]

but half a mark; and of lead, tin, hides, leather, or wools, nothing but the ancient custom. [illegible]

and of every other sort of merchandize, to be [illegible]

on a sack of wool, belonging to the English; [illegible]

26 stone, every stone being 14lb.; and that [illegible]

of quality; and, after riding out a furious storm, which held them for 3 days together, he landed [illegible] morning, Nov. 30, in the year 1340. Upon [illegible] and a few servants that waited on them: for [illegible] committed him to close confinement in his own [illegible] chester, and Litchfield and Coventry, the one his chancellor, the other lord treasurer, he turned out of their offices and imprisoned for a time; but durst not detain them, for fear the [illegible] imprisoned, should affect him. But the great- [illegible] in this affair, was the abp. of Canterbury who he well knew was as culpable as any. Many [illegible] were returned. At last the king resolved to [illegible] opinions how he ought to proceed.

Accordingly, a parliament was summoned to [illegible] of was declared to be, 'how the king might be [illegible] was detained from him by evil officers; and how a sufficient sum of money might be raised [illegible] a declaration was made in the king's name, 'that whoever of his subjects should think [illegible] though he had no writ of summons; attended [illegible] there took a copy of the articles, of which his [illegible] cause of his coming to be, 'for the honour, [illegible] and commodity of the realm, and for the in- [illegible]

[illegible] this question, 'whether the nobility of the [illegible] their peers in open parl.?' A committee of 12 [illegible] cannot do better than give it in his own words.

"Whereupon are named 4 bps. 4 earls, and 4 barons, to draw up the platform for the [illegible] concerning the crimes laid against the abp. and [illegible] and set down a request, that all conditions and [illegible] about him, 'My friends, the king by his writ [illegible] that he would not stir from that place, till the [illegible] ed the realm. To whom the abp. said, 'the [illegible] him: but he was referred to the consideration [illegible]

[illegible] having no mind to destroy so able a minister, but only to humble him and break his high prelatical obstinacy, which for a while seemed [illegible]

[illegible] Barnes; "Upon occasion of the late contest [illegible]

[illegible] to him sufficient, for either that, or other their [illegible]

[illegible] to which the king answered, 'that he intend- [illegible]

[illegible] them away. The king answered, "that he would not his officers should do thus: but that [illegible] goods in such places, then the privilege should [illegible]

[illegible] magna charta might in all points be observed [illegible] nor indicted, nor presented at the suit of any, [illegible]

"Commons. That the chancellor and other [illegible]

[illegible] may be repealed; because on pretence thereof [illegible] king doth revoke it.—C. That many commis- [illegible]

[illegible] done in the presence of him, of the lords, and [illegible] cellor and all other officers, there named, may [illegible]

[illegible] said. K. The king yieldeth only thus much, [illegible] choice to remain solely in the king: he taking therein the assent of his council: but that [illegible]

[illegible] hands all such offices: so as the said officers shall be left liable to answer all objections. Hereupon at the request of the whole 3 estates [illegible]

[illegible] cross of Canterbury to perform the same; only [illegible]

[illegible] commissions to enquire after oppressions, were [illegible]

[illegible] being thus ratified and passed into a Statute, the king soon after sought to revoke, by a me- [illegible] which was a stretch of the royal prerogative [illegible] three estates of the realm were established. [illegible]

[illegible] and in the Statutes at Large. The whole writ [illegible] terbury, which we think is somewhat more [illegible]

"The king to the venerable father in Christ, [illegible] land, greeting;—" Whereas some time since [illegible] prejudicial, but reproachful also to our royal [illegible] have been drawn into a statute, the said parl. had been without success, and dissolved in discord, and so our wars with France and Scotland [illegible] bid, in ruin: and we, to avoid such dangers, permitting protestations of revoking those [illegible] permitted them to be sealed with our seal at that time: and afterward by the advice and as[illegible] for lawful causes, because our consent was [illegible] to the sheriff of Lincoln, 'Because we never consented to the making of the statute; but as then it behoved us, we dissembled in the premisses, &c.'] "we have declared it null, and [illegible] of a statute. And we understand, you have commanded a provincial council to meet at [illegible] your province against us, and to ordain and declare some things prejudicial to us, about [illegible] the enervation, depression, and diminution of [illegible] oath; also concerning the process depending [illegible] things: we willing to prevent so great mischief, do strictly forbid, that in that council you dare [illegible] be attempted any thing in derogation, or diminution of our royal dignity, power, or rights [illegible]

On the 23d of April 1343, Edw. summoned a parl. to meet at Westm. The causes for so doing expressed in the writ itself, 'being to treat and advise with his great men what was [illegible]

[illegible] Barth. Burghersh to come into the house; who, [illegible] to this purport, 'That after the king had begun [illegible] and forts in Bretagne; but that whilst he lay [illegible] truce, until a peace could be treated of: and [illegible] him and his allies, assented to it: that, during the continuance thereof, a treaty of peace might be had, before the pope, as a mediator and friend, but not as a judge; which peace, [illegible] accept of; if not, he would pursue his quarrel. [illegible] to treat, advise, and agree among themselves, [illegible] advice was, "That the truce was honourable, [illegible] all christians, might soon end in a peace: [illegible] (but not as a judge) his rights and demands, in order to a treaty of peace, according to the [illegible]

[illegible] of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] prince of Wales, investing him with a coronet, a [illegible] French."

[illegible]

[illegible]

ed, 'that all the king's justices, throughout [illegible]

[illegible] ever paying for them; he caused a strict en- [illegible]

[illegible] others condemned to pay great fines; whereby [illegible]

the king's officers were made, at least, more [illegible]

Having provided thus for the settlement of justice during his absence, and left the regency [illegible]

[illegible] tend him, went to Southampton; where mustering up all his officers, he made a short speech [illegible]

to the whole army, to this purport, 'he set [illegible]

[illegible] 'that they were all ready to follow him, even [illegible]

During the absence of Edw. a parl. was [illegible]

[illegible] usual formalities at that time. A time was ap- [illegible]

[illegible]; the receivers also, and tryers were con- [illegible]

ferring to England, Ireland, Wales, Scotland, [illegible]

[illegible] they adjourned to the day following. At which [illegible]

[illegible] claration was made in open parl. that the reasons of their present meeting, were, 'because [illegible]

[illegible] condition; and that according to the issue or [illegible]

concerted at home, for the safety of his maj. [illegible]

dom; which last was visibly damnified by the sufferance of false money to go current in it.' [illegible]

[illegible] parl. sir Barth. Burghersh, for, and in the [illegible]

estates of the kingdom, declared the good suc- [illegible]

in Normandy, as in surprising and taking many towns and castles of war, as well at Caen, as [illegible]

France was discomfited; and how the king [illegible]

he had won the same: after which he intended to pursue the enemy without return, till [illegible]

[illegible] of France, in reference to his son the duke [illegible]

to this effect; 'that the duke of Normandy [illegible]

[illegible] should be bestowed on the churches, and fa- [illegible]

rights of his holiness. And that hereupon sur- [illegible]

and annexed unto the crown of England.''— [illegible]

king, towards the furtherance of his enterprises, and the defence of the realm: in an- [illegible]

shedule at large, the sundry, particular, for- [illegible]

[illegible] mons with their Answers, made by prince Lin- [illegible] entirely observed; so as there pass forth no commissions of array. Ans. The first point the king grants; of the rest he will be advised. [illegible] 6 miles of the sea may have a supersedeas for [illegible] sea-coasts shall have a supersedeas. It is [illegible] be open, as heretofore; item, that those who [illegible] and of the peace, shall enquire thereafter.— [illegible] of be not without parl. Ans. The first is granted; the other respited.—Pet. That the 40s. [illegible] up of victuals. Ans. Order shall be taken for [illegible] ed: for the 2nd the king will appoint justices [illegible] county may have sufficient in their counties; [illegible] life, or in fee: item, that purveyors, who have [illegible] sworn, as ought to be; so as they take nothing, [illegible]

[illegible] posed of to young English scholars: and that such aliens, enemies, as are advanced to livings (they being in their own countries, but [illegible] that their livings being in the king's hands, [illegible] made to any cardinals, living in France, to [illegible] shall be observed; and the king shall signify [illegible] advancement of 2000 marks, granted out of the province of Canterbury, may be restrained, and that those, who sue for recovery thereof, [illegible] same reasonable; and it is further commanded, [illegible] grue received of every religious house within the [illegible] knights, and 2 men of the

enacted, that ... pr

their petitions, in order t
o their own homes.

enacted, that all religious persons, for | 17th

clergy, shall pay 15ths.

worst that might happen; that this war which

parl. might have a prosperous ending, and be

“ To their most hon. and most redoubted

for which they had also thanked him, accord-

viz. 40s. upon every knight's
ldest son knight; whereas by

[illegible]

for the future no subsidy upon wool may be granted by the merchants; and that no impo-

[illegible]

that 2 prelates, 2 lords, and 2 justices might

[illegible]

being changed or altered. That the justices do inquire of false money, which ruins the people.

[illegible]

Michaelmas next coming, so as every year 1-15th. may be levied, and no more, at 2 terms

[illegible]

debts; and if the war should cease, or a truce

[illegible]

the last parl.; and in case the war should break

[illegible]

to the 15th of Feb., that none might plead for

[illegible]

hold a parl. during the king's absence. But

[illegible]

mons, declared, "that the cause of their sum-

[illegible]

was adjourned for 5 days, on account of the

was opened by a speech from sir Wm. Sh[illegible]

[illegible]

them, "that Philip of Valois had usurped it

[illegible]

be done; and that it had been declared, after

[illegible]

not bring him to a reasonable peace. That [illegible] to truces; but his enemy, during those truces, imagining to deceive the king, broke them [illegible] and his friends. That now, after Philip's decease, John his son, continuing the same [illegible] the kingdom of France; and contrary to the [illegible] and also upon the sea; and had, actually, sent to Scotland to renew the antient alliance [illegible] his commons for the aids they have already [illegible] found in them; and prays them that they [illegible] next day; and that *at sun-rise* in the morning they would come to the painted chamber in [illegible] would say any thing further to them; and to shew the king their grievances, if they had any, that relief might be given them at this [illegible] charging the commons, in the king's name, to shorten their stay in town; and, for the [illegible] out of their whole number, to be in the morn[illegible] would send a number of lords to them to con[illegible] mons chose a committee, as directed, who had [illegible] well to raise a necessary aid for the king, as to [illegible] mons in their whole body came before the king in full parl. and represented to him, "that the common people of the land was much impoverished by the late mortal pesti[illegible] them; yet, notwithstanding all these damages, having a due regard to the national interest [illegible] mies, they delivered the king a Roll, contain[illegible] the king to give a good and speedy answer." [illegible] now granted; and for the good will and kind[illegible] well in this as in former affairs. Then follows the grant of 3-10ths, and 3-15ths to the king, [illegible] tions following: "that all fines, profits, amerciaments and imposts, levied or to be levied, [illegible] towards raising the subsidy." But this statute, [illegible] lete, "That hereafter no tax, taillage, aids or [illegible] reasonable petitions the king is pleased it [illegible] "that the loans which were granted to the [illegible] the future against his will, for that it was against reason and the franchise of the land; [illegible] was, "that it should be done." Also, that [illegible] raigned before them as traitors, for divers [illegible] treason; therefore it was desired that the king [illegible] of treason." The answer was, "that a statute was made in the last parl. setting forth and de[illegible] mention in the sequel. It may not be amiss [illegible] II. having some years before come in and sub[illegible] confirmed in parl. which, in consideration of his late faithful service to the king in Flanders, was granted accordingly; and he was again [illegible] moned by writ, dated July 15, before. The [illegible]

### [illegible] *this Parliament*

[illegible]
Hugh Courtney earl of Devonshire
[illegible] Huntington
[illegible] of Arundel
[illegible]

[illegible] earl of Stafford
John lord Mowbray
[illegible]
Ralph lord Neville
[illegible]
Robert lord Morley
[illegible]

| | |
|---|---|
| [illegible] earl of Oxford | Thomas lord Berkeley |
| [illegible] | Bartholomew ld. Burghersh, senior |
| Pet. ld. Mauley the 5th | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] lord Willoughby of Eresby | Geoffrey lord Say |
| | Michael lord de la Pole |
| Roger lord Chandos | John lord Beauchamp of Somerset |
| John lord Charlton | |
| William lord Zouch of Harringworth | John lord Beauchamp of Warwickshire |
| John lord Bardolph | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | John lord Furnival |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| Thomas ld. Bradestan | [illegible] |
| Jn. l. Grey of Rotherfield | Henry lord Scroop |
| | [illegible] |
| Jn l. Grey of Codonore | [illegible] |
| John lord D'Archy of [illegible] | James lord Audley |
| | Thomas lord Holland |
| Roger ld. Mortimer of Wigmore | [illegible] |
| | [illegible] of the Cinque Ports |
| [illegible] | |

[illegible] 7 [illegible] this parl. sat to business; when being all assembled [illegible] Westminster [illegible] "that the king, considering how he might best [illegible] him; had sent lately some of the most noble [illegible] and noblemen, to Guisnes, to treat with his adversary, in presence of a cardinal whom the pope had sent thither as a mediator; and that [illegible] and desiring to spend the rest of his time in an- [illegible] sary's inclinations to a further treaty; yet, with protestation, that if he should not accept it, all [illegible] been done in this affair, who brought back no- [illegible]

[illegible] war against his adversary, as well for the defence of [illegible] to him." The said chamberlain shewed further, "that the late tax or subsidy on wool, [illegible] requested the parl. to grant him the said subsidy [illegible] Michaelmas last for 3 years to come, if the war should continue so long; upon condition that [illegible] and towns therein mentioned; with several [illegible] ed of Provisors against Appeals to Rome; to- [illegible] the Statutes at Large, or in Cotton's Abridg- [illegible] out his writs of summons to call a parl. to meet [illegible] Being accordingly assembled, the aforesaid lord [illegible] ber, "That the cause of this parl.'s being called was for three things: 1st. For establishing the [illegible] 2dly, How they might treat of a peace with [illegible] of petitions and redressing of grievances; all which without a parl. could not be effectually done."—A day or two after, the lord chamberlain informed them, "That there was great hopes of bringing about a peace between England [illegible] and agree to a peace, if it might be had by [illegible] commons being asked again, "If they con- [illegible] pope's notary, to enter this in a public instru-

[illegible] Southampton [illegible]

the writ purchased. K. The old law shall be

of him. K. The law heretofore used shall

C. That any one attainted upon a writ of

pending his suit against the other. K. The

jury after they depart therefrom. K. This last

4 years before this. W. Edendon, bp. of Win-

features of his widow's dowagers: but not of

cording thereto. K. There is a Standard in

attorney of the unable. K. The king will be

house, "That there was a treaty of peace between the king and the French, and a good

swered, "That therein they wholly submitted

rents and revenues; because though they bring meet on the 12th of Nov. following; about

self to this effect:—“He first gave them an

Avignon; and that during his stay there the

willingly enter into a league with the English
against them; and for assurance of the same

duke, and knowledge of the affair, with a great

the French were marching a strong army to-

Calais, where he paid off his mercenary troops

pose:—He required them to weigh and con-

of Berwick, as he had been informed; he de-

ing had a short conference with the lords, to

wool-fels, for 3 years to come; provided that

able to expend a 1000 marks a day on a just

p. 383.

Pet. That the Great Charter, and the

kept: that the statute, that the staples shall

served: that the statute made for yearly re-

tute made for purveyors be kept. Ans. The

coroner, or such like, be a justice.—P. That

countries, as upon appeals join issue on good

kept.—P. That remedy may be had against

of verdicts given in other courts.—The old law

land, where he soon retook Berwick, and performed several other martial exploits in that called in such a time, or that the grant of the last subsidy, on wools, &c. for 6 years was sufficient for the national expence for that term, we know not; but we meet with no [illegible] whole assembly; and both lords and commons [illegible] torians.

[illegible] the peers were expressly commanded to ap- [illegible] the lord chief justice, sir H. Green, to be "for [illegible] for observation of the peace; for settling affairs with Scotland; and for enhancing the [illegible] well ordered, as may be seen in the records [illegible] houses, to be removed from London to Calais. For we find by the records, that when the lords were commanded to speak, "what they [illegible] they all agreed, "that it seemed to them to be a matter very profitable to the realm." The commons, indeed, demurred a little at [illegible] the Staple there for 3 years." These mer- [illegible] the town, every man having a guard of 6 men at arms and 4 archers, at the king's charge. [illegible] dens of the town, 40d. more, as custom, on [illegible] statute, "that all pleadings and judgments in [illegible] in English," whereas before they were wont [illegible] any man who could not spend 10l. a year. [illegible]

[illegible] for 3 years; besides the former subsidy on [illegible] Hy. Green declared to both houses, "that the [illegible] age, intended to keep it as a jubilee; and to [illegible] people. He therefore granted a general and [illegible] for the seal; and set all debtors to the crown, and prisoners for criminal matters, at liberty." The king also confirmed Magna Charta; which [illegible] this reign.

In 1363 the king issued out his writs of summons, dated June 10, for a parl. to meet at Westm. on the 6th of Oct. following; when, there not being a full attendance of members, [illegible] and chancellor of England, declared before [illegible] the grievances of his subjects; and, particu- [illegible] wrongs that had been done to holy church; also, to reform all enormities, especially about the manner of exhibiting petitions in parl." [illegible] humble thanks for the great goodness he had [illegible] parl. and humbly prayed "that the king would [illegible] in order to the peace and good govt. of the [illegible] king and both houses declared, "that the [illegible] of Apparel, and therefore charged them all [illegible] both houses, "whether they would have such [illegible] dinance or of Statute?" They answered, "by [illegible] the same at their pleasure." In this parl. it was enacted, that poultry should be sold in the following manner; a young capon for 3d. an old one for 4d. a hen for 2d. a goose for 4d. For the Statute appointing Apparel, see Statutes at Large. A. 1363.

On the 4th of Dec. 1364, Edw. sent forth [illegible] journed to the next morning in the painted chamber, there to hear the king's pleasure. At which time, bp. Langham, lord chanc. of England, began a long and formal harangue, [illegible] 'Faithful judgment doth adorn the king's seat.' [illegible]

[illegible] and goods; all which blessings he desired, as [illegible]

[illegible] "That he was willing to preserve a perpetual [illegible] charged from all homage to that crown; since to hold it otherwise would be a constant re- [illegible] severally, to one and the same effect, "That [illegible] any account, without a disherison of the king, [illegible] name, gave thanks to the estates in parl. "For their ready compliance in assisting the [illegible]

[illegible] sums of money, at stated times; and that for [illegible] and countries agreed upon; had made no pay- [illegible] and other places; killed some of the king's [illegible] and counsel.—The prelates took 2 or 3 days to [illegible] "Whether the king was released from his oath [illegible] assistance; he requested them, therefore, to [illegible] king a subsidy on wools; that is 43s. 4d. on [illegible] fells as much; on every last of leather 4 l. that [illegible] toms for 3 years, to commence at Michaelmas next. On strangers was laid, for every sack [illegible]

[illegible] were [illegible]

[illegible]

cover the secrets of the realm, as well as all [illegible]

lands; that remedy may be had against the [illegible]

[illegible]

own mouth, "For the great pains they had taken, and the aid they had given him; and, [illegible]

[illegible]

cover and conquer; whether duchies, earldoms, viscounties, cities, towns, castles or lordships, persons, names, arms and honours, to hold the said possessions of him, as k. of [illegible]

[illegible]

were issued out for a parl. to meet on the 24th [illegible]

[illegible]

fore; and ordered so great an army to be [illegible]

[illegible]

had such a fleet ready as seemed sufficient to destroy the whole English navy; and that he [illegible]

[illegible]

of less. The clergy, here also, granted the king a separate aid of 50,000l. more for one year, towards carrying on the French war; for [illegible]

according to their annual stipends; as like- [illegible]

been taxed before. A great council of the [illegible]

[illegible]

The king, immediately on the granting this [illegible]

of every county in England, to cause them to [illegible]

in each shire. After which the chancellor ac- [illegible]

[illegible]

were taxed to a 10th; and, as before, parishes [illegible]

[illegible]

and their several taxations fixed; which, since [illegible] met with, well deserves our notice.

| | | l. | s. | d. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | 0 |
| [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | 10 | 0 |
| Buckingh[illegible] | [illegible] | 1160 | 0 | 0 |
| [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | 0 |
| [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | 0 |
| [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | 0 | 0 |
| [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] |

the rest of the estates, considering the great expence the king was to be at for the defence

on wool, leather and wool-fells, for 2 years

fells as much; of every last of leather 4l. of denizens, besides the old custom: of foreigners 4 marks on every sack besides the old custom;

aforesaid; the said estates granted a 15th for

them for their great aid: and then the peti-

Whereupon, they being again assembled the same day before the prince, prelates, and

ships and goods, a custom of 2s. on every tun

46. Ed. III. N. 1. 2. 3. 9.

arms, and no others; and of every city two

greatest skill in shipping and merchandizing."

mies; and, lately, had sent his son, the k. of

speedy dispatch; and that he desired that all

the points abovesaid; telling them, they might

During this consultation a committee of

Scroop; and it was agreed that they should go

aid granted, which was read, beginning thus, "The lords and commons of England

2 15ths to be levied in 2 years; and if the war

wool, leather, wool-fells, and wine; of every tun of wine 2s. for 2 years, on the same con-

[illegible]

it is laid, and no where else. A. The king meneth not to alter the law as to this point [illegible] king and lords, in this parl. "That it would [illegible] the whole realm, which was grieved in divers [illegible] to the number of 10 or 12, who should be continually near the king; so as no great business might pass, without the advice and assent of 6, [illegible] cute their offices, without the presence of any of the said counsellors; whom the king was to [illegible] rich in treasure, so that he should not have [illegible] with so great subsidies, or tallages, considering [illegible] of the merchants undone; wherefore they [illegible] the commons promised the king, "That if he [illegible] pounded 3 especial points to be enquired into and amended: 1st "Whereas the staple of [illegible] merchants, and their continual residence there, [illegible]

[illegible] money for his wars and otherwise; some per- [illegible] damage of the king. 3rd. Whereas the king [illegible] peached by the commons; as Rd. Lyon, mer- [illegible] sidy, and the lord Latimer his confederate, [illegible] before the king's council, and not to be re- [illegible] in the courts of judicature, both civil and ec- [illegible] she had undertaken to promote: and there- [illegible] for her removal from the king's person: though [illegible] reign; and that for no other reason, but be- [illegible]

The king issued out writs for a parl. to meet [illegible] subject was, that, "They being wise desired

[illegible]

covery from a dangerous sickness." From

loved the king and the realm; the king be-

loveth he chasteneth; and further, from that

[illegible]

christian prince could be so happy; which

[illegible]

nowned a prince; the said recovery happening

[illegible]

sisted, "That the said prince should, without

[illegible]

"For that the French king, under colour of

[illegible]

land, who said, "That he had a particular

profit of the realm; that because divers usur-

[illegible]

it." The commons were then desired to repair

[illegible]

The result of these consultations was, that

[illegible]

prayed the king, "That he would please to
name 2 earls and 2 barons for his treasurers,
as well of this subsidy, as of that the clergy

[illegible]

should wholly be expended upon the wars, and

[illegible]

prayed, "That the high treasurer might be

customed."

the king, "That a charter lately granted in the [illegible] ticle, "That no foreign merchant ought to sell [illegible] and boroughs, as to them, with a charter, or [illegible] was, that, "The king will be farther inform- [illegible]

[illegible] of London, petitioned the king, "That where- [illegible] city, by reason the coroner was not punishable by the mayor, aldermen, and other officers; that they might chuse a coroner of themselves, [illegible] answer was, "The king will not depart from [illegible] tioned in this case, "That all provisors of benefices from Rome, with their officers or servants, may be put out of the king's protection, if they sue, prosecute, or any ways disturb, or [illegible] The answer was, "The pope had promised [illegible]

[illegible] Cotton's "Abridgment," has added a remark of [illegible] count of this parl. "The prelates, dukes, earls, barons, commons, citizens, burgesses, and merchants of England, in this parl. petition the king, not only "for a pardon in gene- [illegible] ral;" which this "Abridgment" only touch- [illegible] which I thought meet here to supply, "That [illegible] mons of your realm of England, and that in full parl.: nor no imposition put upon their [illegible] cient custom; that is to say, of one sack of wool half a mark, and of 300 wool-fells half a [illegible] 14th year of your reign; saving to you the [illegible]

great necessity, and for the defence of the [illegible] of the commons of this realm; there is a sta- [illegible]

### *Taxes in the Reign of Edward III.*

In his 6th year he had granted him a 15th [illegible] the same, and a 10th granted by the clergy. In [illegible] given him by the clergy in convocation, a 3-years [illegible] bond tenants, with the 10th fleece and the [illegible] meet 8 days after st. Hilary, or 20th of Jan. [illegible] 9th sheaf, fleece, and lamb; but the citizens [illegible] according to the true value, for two years [illegible] ties and boroughs, nor lived upon tillage or [illegible] according to the true value. Upon the king's writing to the parl. for speedy supply, seeing [illegible] In his 15th year the 9ths were revoked, in re- [illegible] Canterbury granted a 3-years 10th, and the [illegible] two years in cities, boroughs, and ancient de- [illegible] three 15ths, to be levied in 3 years; so as one [illegible] some time; to which prayer they unanimously [illegible]

[illegible]

and having there a short conference with the

[illegible]

coming; so as during that time no other impositions or charges be put upon the said

[illegible]

one mark for every last of leather of denizens, and 20s. of strangers, for 3 years. In

[illegible]

and leather for 2 years; of every sack of wool,

[illegible]

every last of leather 4 pounds, besides the an-

[illegible]

as above for 3 years; of every sack of wool

[illegible]

last of leather 4 pounds, besides the ancient

[illegible]

marks, of every twelvescore wool-fells 4 marks, and of every last of leather 8 marks, besides

[illegible]

great men and commons granted a subsidy of

[illegible]

granted for 2 years the subsidy on wool,

[illegible]

goods for a year. In his 47th year the lords and commons granted a 15th, as it had been in ancient manner levied for 2 years; they also gave tonnage and poundage for 2 years, as it was given the last year, of all merchan-

[illegible]

Wykes.

[illegible]

ing account of the

*Price of provisions in this King's reign.*

[illegible]

arable land was worth 35s. per an.; 12 hens at 1s. 6d.; 1 cock and 13 hens, at 1s. 7d.; 8 porkers and a half, at 15s.; 80 acres

[illegible]

of pasture, each at 1d.; 14 acres of meadow, each at 4d.; 18 acres of arable, each at 3d.; 27 acres of arable, each at 4d.; 2 acres of meadow, each at 10d.; a cock 1d.; 3 hens,

[illegible]

was sold at London, by the qr. at 2s.; a fat ox, at 6s. 8d.; and Fabian adds, for a fat sheep, 6d.; and at most 8d.; 6 pigeons, 1d.; a fat goose, at 2d.; a pig, 1d.; and all other victuals after the same rate; occasioned by the king's

[illegible]

1338, wheat sold per qr. at 3s. 4d.; barley, at 10d.; pease and beans, the qr. at 1s.; oats, the qr. at 10d. In 1339, several undertakers pro-

[illegible]

each qr. at 9s.; oats, beans, and pease, each qr. at 5s. This was a high price. (See Col-

[illegible]

6s. 8d.; a good fat ox, at 4s.; a cow, at 1s.; an heifer, or steer, at 6d.; a fat mutton, at 4d.; an ewe, at 3d.; a lamb, at 2d.; a hog, at 5d.; a stone of wool, at 9d. The historian says,

[illegible]

qr. at 2s.; a fat ox, at London, for 6s. 8d.—In 1359, wheat was very dear, a qr. says Fa-

[illegible]

was so cheap, that a qr. was sold at 2s.; 2 hens, for 1d.—In 1363, a widow paid 4 hens, or in money 4d.; 12 hogs, at 18s. each hog, at 1s. 6d.

[illegible]

sold at 1l. 4s.; and, according to Stow, at 1l.; barley, at 13s. 4d.; oats, at 8s.

[illegible]

writs of false judgement. 5. Touching over-

[illegible]

peals. 8. Against offenders in Forests

[illegible]

Year.—1. A confirmation of the Great Char-

[illegible]

rest; seizing of the temporalities of bishops, 3. A confirmation of k. Edw. II.'s pardon to

[illegible]

king's debts. 5. Limiting how far the subjects

[illegible]

tax of the aid granted to the king. 7. For wages to be given to soldiers. 8. That no money be taken for fair pleading. 9. A con-

[illegible]

An. 2 Edw. III.—1. A confirmation of the

[illegible]

ride armed. 4. A confirmation of the statute

[illegible]

writs to sheriffs to be executed. 6. A confir-

[illegible]

holden in their usual time. 16 For *Nisi Prius*

[illegible]

ceipts given in a *Scire facias* in a plea of

An. 4 Edw. III.—1. A confirmation of the

[illegible]

fines. 6. A confirmation of the statute of Car-

[illegible]

cient in the county. 10. Sheriffs and gaolers

[illegible]

12. For the sale of wines. 13. A confirma-

[illegible]

2 Edw. III. for granting of pardon. 14. For

[illegible]

An. 5 Edw. III.—A confirmation of the

[illegible]

2. Against the king's purveyors. 3. A contri-

[illegible]

ligious houses. 4. That sheriffs and other of-

[illegible]

penalty if any do sell ware at a fair after it is

[illegible]

taint, but no essoin or protection: days given.

[illegible]

where the king's writ runneth not. 5. That

[illegible]

An. 10 Edw. III. Stat. 1.—1. A confirma-

[illegible] at Northampton, an. 2 Edw. III. c. 2. 3. They [illegible] the wearing of furs. 5. Licensing clothworkers [illegible]

An. 14 Edw. III.—1. A confirmation of liberties of the church, and the Great Charter. 2 and 3. An act of the king's pardon. 4. [illegible] in the king's courts. 6. For amendment of [illegible] their offices. 8. Concerning escheators and coroners. 9. Concerning bailiffs errant, and a- [illegible] gaols. 11. The clerk of the statutes shall be [illegible] *Prius* before any justices. 17. Touching a [illegible] vouching to warranty a dead person. 19. A- [illegible] 21. Of subsidy of wools, and customs for the [illegible]

Statute concerning the Clergy made in the same Fourteenth Year. Stat. 3.—A statute [illegible] Edw. III. Stat. 3. reciting some former grants, and limiting the custom on wool, plate, &c.

[illegible] hands. 4 and 5. Against waste done by es- [illegible]

An. 15 Edw. III.—1. An act for the main- [illegible] Charters. 2. Concerning trial by peers. 3. The [illegible] ing who shall punish usury. 6. Ministers of [illegible] justices for things done touching the jurisdiction [illegible] Year. Stat. 2.—A revocation of the said former statute, made 15th Edw. III.

[illegible]

An. 17 Edw. III.—An act for the searching [illegible]

An. 18 Edw. III.—A statute for declaration of exigents.

[illegible] Stat. [illegible]—1. An act for [illegible] Touching exigents in trespass. 6. For the new [illegible] Clergy. Stat. 3.—1. A triennial *Disme* granted to the king by the clergy towards his war in France. 2. An act for trial of bigamy. 3. Against purchasing lands in Mortmain. 4. Confirmation of the statute of purveyors. 5. Touching prohibitions. 6. Temporal justices shall not make commissions, to inquire of process [illegible]

[illegible] done by justices to all men. 2. That right be [illegible] rels but their own. 5. Lords and great men [illegible]

[illegible] 1. What persons shall be compelled to labour. [illegible] within their term. 3, 4, and 5. For labourers wages. 6. For victuallers. 7. For beggars. 8. For artificers.

[illegible] and other artificers. 5. For punishment of the offenders of this statute. 6. An act against extortions by sheriffs, &c. 7. For holding of [illegible]

[illegible] the same 25th Year [illegible]

Stat. 2.—An act touching such as be born be- [illegible]

[illegible] the same 25th Year. Stat. 3.—1. A confirmation of all li- [illegible] touching the king's presentment to a church of another's right. 3. That the king's title shall be examined when he presents to a benefice [illegible] 7. [illegible] in a *Quare Impedit.* 8. For cognizance of matters pertaining to the church. 9. Touch- [illegible]

A Statute for clothes made in the same 25th [illegible] to be [illegible]

A Statute of Purveyors made in the same 25th Year. Stat. 5.—1. An act touching purveyors for the king's house. 2. For declaration of treason. 3. No indictor shall be put upon [illegible] ful presentment. 5. Touching actions brought [illegible] of wood or timber for the king. 7. For the gathering of the foresters. 8. None shall be constrained to find men of arms. 9. Auncel weight abolished. 10. For true measures. [illegible] knight, or to marry his daughter. 12. For ex- [illegible] purring of money. 14. What process shall be awarded against men indicted of felony. 15. [illegible] needful. 16. Exception of nontenure of parcel shall not abate the whole writ. 17. Touching [illegible] and replevin. 18. Touching villenage. 19. [illegible]

[illegible] Stat. 6.—A statute of provisors.

Stat. 7.—A statute of the form of levying of the fifteen.

A[illegible] 27 Edw. III. [illegible] pardon for felonies. 3. For commissions to be [illegible] and a subsidy granted upon every cloth. 5. Forestalling of Gascoigne wines, felony. 6. For [illegible] wines. 7. That it shall be felony to sojourn in Gascoigne, and buy wines there by English merchants. 8. For gauging of wines.

[illegible] their merchandizes in the staple. 3. Mer- [illegible] disturbed by the purveyors. 5. The king's jus- [illegible] 7. Touching licence of passage of wools, lea- [illegible] be shipped. 16. For the rent of places in the [illegible] staple. 23. For a certain number of porters, [illegible] prejudice of the staple. 25. Credence to be [illegible] them that be convict for shipping of wools. [illegible] constables of the staple.

[illegible] and other officers shall answer the king the [illegible] bill as upon a writ of trespass. 9. No writ shall be directed to a sheriff to charge an in- [illegible]

[illegible]

An. 31 Edw. III.—1. Confirmation of the [illegible]

[illegible] chequer. 4. Against extortion in bishops officers for probates of wills. 5. The contents of a tun of wine, and the true gauging [illegible] ments of labourers. 7. Justices shall inquire of the offenders of the laws of the staple 8. What refuse shall be made of wool. All [illegible]

[illegible] reformation of the victuallers of London. [illegible] ministration, where a man dieth intestate, and [illegible] reform and examine errors in the exchequer. [illegible]

One and Thirtieth Year. Stat. 2. 1. Touch [illegible]

Stat. 3.—1. For fish coming within the haven [illegible]

Stat. 4. *Ordinatio facta pro Statu terra* [illegible]

[illegible] measures. 7. Attaint shall lie as well in plea real [illegible] for giving their verdict. 9, 10, 11. For labourers. 12. There shall be no forfeiture of [illegible] 14. For traverse of offices. 15. Confirmation [illegible] Henry the Third, &c. 16. Nonclaim of fines shall be no bar. 17. Merchants, aliens, or [illegible] them that have possessions in Ireland. 19. No [illegible] in. 20. For passage of corn to Calais. 21. [illegible] lers there [illegible]

[illegible] statutes. 10. A parl. shall be holden once [illegible] the quarter sessions of the peace. 13. Con- [illegible]

[illegible] silver vessels. 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15 [illegible] In what case a writ shall not be abated by exception of cognizance of villenage. 18. How [illegible]

[illegible] pledges. 4. Certain penal bonds in the third [illegible] not to be lost for a little thing therein not cus- [illegible] jaries.

[illegible] taining 4 Chapters.

An. 42 Edw. III.—1. Confirmation of the [illegible] 2. Confirmation of a pardon. 3. None to be [illegible] inquests.

[illegible]

4. The king's pardon.

[illegible]

## Richard II.

[illegible] issued out for the calling a parl. to meet 15 [illegible]

*List of Peers summoned to this Parliament.*

[illegible] Lancaster, &c.

[illegible]

Wm. Ufford e. of Suf-[illegible]

[illegible] Salisbury

[illegible] Nottingham.

[illegible] tingdon

[illegible]

[illegible] Codenore.

[illegible]

Ld. Mich. de la Pole,

[illegible]

Lord Peter de Mauley

[illegible] of Wemme

[illegible]

Lord Wm. Morley

[illegible]

[illegible] for trying his friend in the time of adversity, [illegible] "That the king, their undoubted liege lord [illegible] all the three causes. For the 1st, to rejoice [illegible] by special descent of inheritance; and for their good wills towards him, he was therefore come to give them thanks." For the 2nd, "To visit and comfort them in their necessi-[illegible] to proffer himself in aid, but to confirm all their liberties; to maintain the laws and peace [illegible] the contrary." Thirdly, "To try or assay [illegible]

[illegible] le Scroop, steward of the king's household, by [illegible]

[illegible] ford; which was accordingly granted by the [illegible]

[illegible] to hear him a little in a weighty cause which greatly concerned himself, and said, "That [illegible]

[illegible] excuse him, for that the commons had spoken [illegible]

[illegible] man in the kingdom. That if any man, of [illegible]

[illegible] wise, as the king and lords should award, as if [illegible]

[illegible] mons also said, in their own defence, "That [illegible]

[illegible] the kingdom; and that he wondered much [illegible]

[illegible] first inventor of such speeches, by which de- [illegible] peers of the land, was a manifest traitor; since [illegible]

[illegible] forgiven."

[*A Speaker chosen.*] After these alterca- [illegible]

[illegible] first upon record, (see Cotton's Abridgment, p. 155), made a protestation and said, "That [illegible]

[illegible] practised, for which this nation was so renowned; and said, that by the decay of the same, [illegible]

[illegible] ters of their own ships, and had the free dis- [illegible]

[illegible] time." He therefore prayed that, "Because the king was of tender age, for the amendment [illegible]

[illegible] ferent estates, to be continual counsellors to [illegible]

[illegible] preservation of the realm; and that the com- [illegible]

[illegible] wars:—2nd. That they would please to name [illegible]

[illegible] king's person, who were to be men of virtuous [illegible]

[illegible] tutes and ordinances of the land might be observed, ratified, and confirmed, and the people [illegible]

[illegible] mons would have no prejudice done any way [illegible]

[illegible] given to these petitions was, "That the pre- [illegible]

[illegible] return to their place.

[illegible] granted; yet so as the chancellor, treasurer, [illegible]

[illegible] bench and the other, and all others officers of the realm, might execute their offices, without the presence of those counsellors, who by advice of the lords were then appointed, being 9 in number, viz. the bps. of London, Carlisle, [illegible]

[illegible] sir Rd. de Stafford, and sir H. Le Scroop, bants. [illegible] knights bachelors; who being thus chosen in [illegible]

[illegible] the 2nd request, the lords of parliament an- [illegible]

[illegible] acceptable to him; or to remove any officer, or servant, if it were not by his express will. [illegible]

[illegible] such officers and servants: wherefore the lords [illegible]

[illegible] lords answered, "That they would take good [illegible]

[illegible] of the king's household about it, and if by their [illegible]

[illegible] honour of the king, what they desired should [illegible]

[illegible] and boroughs for two years; praying the king, [illegible]

[illegible] But with this proviso, "that this law, particu- [illegible] things, should not be made use of, nor drawn [illegible]

[*Petitions of the Commons.*] The following [illegible]

[illegible] any thing, but what belongs to their office."— As to the 1st request, the king granted it; and [illegible]

[illegible] tition was, "That during the king's minority, [illegible]

[illegible] the exchequer, the steward and treasurer of [illegible]

[illegible] this side Trent and beyond, might be made by parliament; and if it should happen, that any of these ministers or officers should be laid [illegible]

[illegible] earl of Oxford, to the office of chamberlain; [illegible]

[illegible] "that upon the king's special grace, and for [illegible]

[illegible] in divers senses, that then the sense they claim- [illegible]

[illegible] the answer was, "that the interpretation of [illegible]

[illegible] The commons prayed, farther, "That a parl. [illegible]

[illegible] purpose shall be observed and kept; and as to [illegible]

[illegible] Feb. 1378, writs were issued out to call a new [illegible]

[illegible] coming for a long time; but some sheriffs hav- [illegible] adjourned to next day; and for the same rea- [illegible]

[illegible] with a speech to this purport:—"1st. That [illegible]

[illegible] be of his continual council; but, by reason of [illegible]

[illegible] chosen of the latter. Yet, what were being [illegible]

[illegible] to weigh well the necessities of the nation, and to provide accordingly; and not to wonder at [illegible] it was done for the king's honour and the safety [illegible] saying, "That for the expences borne and [illegible] ready, and should be ready, to exhibit their [illegible]

[*A Poll-Tax granted.*] The lords and com- [illegible] the last parl. should be remitted; and in lieu [illegible] as it was before that parl. for one year from Michaelmas next. They likewise granted a [illegible] kingdom; which being a tax quite new, and [illegible] shall give, at length, as translated from the [illegible] barons, 40s. Every baroness, who is a widow, as a baron; and a banneress as a banneret, 40s. [illegible] ought to be made a knight, 20s. Every widow [illegible] man, widow of such an esq. or sufficient mer- [illegible] hospital of st. John, as a baron, 40s. Every [illegible] a batchelor, 20s. Every other brother, knight [illegible] great towns in England, each as a baron, 40s. [illegible]

[illegible] All lesser merchants, and artificers, husband- [illegible] try, according to their estate, 6s. 8d. or 40d. [illegible] 2s. or 12d. All advocates, notaries, and proctors, who are married, shall pay as serjeants of [illegible] neys, each according to their estate, 40s. 20s. or 6s. 8d. Apparitors that are married, according to their estate, 3s. 4d. 2s. or 12d. [illegible] unmarried, of such an estate, and above the age aforesaid, 4d. Also every strange mer- [illegible] selves very high, viz. every abp. bp. and mitred abbot as much as a baron; every abbot was [illegible] and the beneficed clergy 6s. 8d.

[illegible] great hall of the abbey of Gloucester; dr. [illegible] "1st, for the liberties of the church, the [illegible] that a parl. should be holden once a year; [illegible]

[illegible] stand with the [illegible]

[illegible]

o'clock, to hear further declarations; and di- [illegible]

[illegible]

prelates, lords and commons, "That the na- [illegible]

[illegible]

and Brest, which of a long time had been in [illegible]

[illegible]

second instance on record, where a Speaker of [illegible]

[illegible]

to this effect:—"First, if he should utter any [illegible]

[illegible]

been said; for the commons highly desired to [illegible]

[illegible]

against them; the commons humbly thanked [illegible]

[illegible]

his lordships, lands, towns and forts beyond [illegible]

[illegible]

king, at which time they answered, it was apparent the king had not so great need for an [illegible]

[illegible]

the heirs of them; and that therefore they still [illegible]

[illegible]

might be for the destruction of his enemies, they (the council) hoped he might have money suf- [illegible]

[illegible]

To this the commons replied, "that in hopes [illegible]

for a long time, they had granted a greater [illegible]

be levied in so short a time; and that all things [illegible]

[illegible]

charge the commons, who were in a lower [illegible]

[illegible]

granted, that a great part of it was still in the [illegible]

[illegible]

tained; and therefore they were to know, that [illegible]

their complaint." Whereupon the commons, after a short deliberation, made it their request to [illegible]

[illegible]

der age) for the next year, as it had been be-

Richard, " that though there never was any ac-

made in parl. or out of parl. to the commons,

for the future. As to the others, the king

he would shortly give them in writing. That

defence of the kingdom; which not only con-

day: another was, " that if any fault was found in any part of the kingdom or go-

mons desired " to have a time limited to bring in their common bills or petitions, and

mons prayed the king " to have a copy of

on their request. They prayed likewise, " that 5 or 6 prelates and lords might come to the

charge;" but the lords answered, " they nei-

lords to choose a small number of 6 or 10, and

together without noise; and then report what

nourable for the king and kingdom; and only said, " that 40,000*l.* which was expended in

Cherburgh, Gascoigny, and Ireland, was not to be charged upon them; nor, as it seemed

king's council, " that Gascoigny and the forts

the kingdom would be quiet, otherwise it

fore, " to advise about their charge, and give

much haste as might be, for the common profit of the kingdom, and ease of the lords and themselves."

agreed and granted the king the former subsidy of wool, leather, and wool-fells for 3 years,

fells as much, that is, for every 240 of each, [illegible] vation of the peace:—2nd. because the rega- [illegible] as otherwise; and therefore the provisions [illegible] only the enemies of France, Spain, and Scot- [illegible] beyond sea. All which, because they could [illegible] cordingly." He further told them, "That the [illegible] increase of wools, and 6d. in the pound on [illegible] armed men, and as many archers had fallen short; for the charge of those soldiers came to [illegible] clared, for all which the king stood indebted: [illegible]

[*A Speaker chosen.*] After appointing receivers and tryers of Petitions as usual, the [illegible] They likewise prayed that a commission might [illegible] granted, and a commission was made out to the [illegible] mons together, "considering that the king [illegible]

[illegible] granted to the king one 15th and a half, with- [illegible] half within those places. With this prayer, [illegible] where else."—"Considering also that the sub- [illegible] an express protestation against it, that it had [illegible] The answer the king gave to this, was, 'That [illegible] whence that author observes 'that the clergy assembled in convocation, were not then look- [illegible] men, without any just grounds have supposed.' [illegible] then looked upon as a degradation to his ar- [illegible] been forced to pawn his jewels; the subsidy [illegible] burgh, were in arrear more than 3 months, and [illegible] ended; and that the king was also at a very [illegible] to his subjects; and how the kingdom might [illegible] by sea and land, in as short a time as possible."

[*Debate upon raising a Supply.*] The com- [illegible] where, in the presence of the king, prelates, [illegible] Speaker, "demanded a more clear declaration of what had been said to them; and, especi- [illegible] charge; praying, that no more might be re- [illegible] a charge any longer." Whereupon, a schedule [illegible] commons replied, "That they thought the [illegible] and prayed that no more might be demanded [illegible] "1st, that a certain sum of so many Groats [illegible] chandizes, bought and sold within the realm, [illegible] their advice was to raise a certain sum, by [illegible] pitch upon the Groats; and proposed 4 or 5 [illegible]

The commons, after debating a long time [illegible] that if the Clergy would support a third part of [illegible] raised by a certain number of groats, so that [illegible] reasonable, for that they possessed a third part of the kingdom; and prayed the king and [illegible] "That their grants were never made in parl, nor ought to be: that the laymen neither could nor should constrain them in that case; and [illegible]

[*A Capitation Tax granted.*] At last the lords and commons agreed upon a Capitation- [illegible] age of 15, of what state and condition soever, except beggars; the sufficient people in every [illegible] enacted, "That no knight, citizen, or burgess [illegible] 'new and a strange subsidy:' Hollingshead writes, that 'great grudging, and many a bitter [illegible] consequences; Walsingham and Knyghton, [illegible] day after All-Souls; and by reason of a quarrel [illegible] who came to parl. with each a great retinue of [illegible] the king could make up the difference, which [illegible] tucum, "*Rex convenire facit consilium.*" He [illegible] vernment of the king, during his reign; affirm- [illegible] able to do it." And, after the usual form for [illegible]

[illegible] their meeting should be more specially declared [illegible] Hugh Segrave, treasurer of England, by the [illegible] oration, and said, "That the chief cause of their summons was; first, to take care of the [illegible] tenance of the peace; and, especially, to pu- [illegible] bond-tenants and villains of the realm, under [illegible]

[illegible] parl. the said sir Rd. desired to be excused and discharged from the office; but the king insist- [illegible] came, unanimously, to this resolution, "That [illegible] al-o petitioned the king, "That since the rest [illegible] have certain bps. and lords to consult with [illegible] was, "That they should give in the names to [illegible] done, and the king granted their desire. And [illegible] swered, "That the king had charged the [illegible] upon the said matters; but the ancient custom [illegible]

*The Commons complain of the Government.*] After the commons had conferred [illegible] ament, "and made great complaint of the go- [illegible] the kingdom would be in a short time ruined: [illegible] and of grievous oppressions in the country, by [illegible] who behaved themselves like kings in the country, so as there was very little law, or right; [illegible] council, granted, "that certain prelates, lords, [illegible] the bps. of Winchester, Ely, Exeter, and Rochester; the earls of Arundele, Warwick, Stafford, Suffolk, and Salisbury; the lords Zouch, [illegible]

[illegible] *Commons.*] Then follow certain Petitions of the Commons, though their answers are not set down.—First, they peti- [illegible] ed by the king for that purpose, "To place [illegible] were done."—They also petition, "That an [illegible] enemies of the nation took, by sea and land, [illegible] whole realm."—They likewise petition, "That certain of the chief clerks in chancery, certain [illegible] ances above; and that certain merchants might [illegible] draught, containing 3 articles, for as many [illegible] without due process of law. The 2nd, to up-

[illegible] great grace he would please to command, that [illegible] person, out of the most wise, honest and dis- [illegible] counsel him; and further, that he would please, by the advice of the lords, so to order his [illegible] of the crown; and that the subsidy on wool, [illegible] the war." The king answered, "That he [illegible]

[illegible] our notice. At that time there was a great [illegible] elected, and each supported by different na- [illegible] would go with him into France, for the de- [illegible] sent to the bp. of Norwich, and by him pub- [illegible] a great sum of money; besides jewels, neck- [illegible] devotees gave to purchase heaven, and to obtain the benefit of absolution and pardon for [illegible] abilities, in order to make their absolution more valid; some found men at arms, others [illegible] in their own persons

But, to give the greater credit to this sanc- [illegible] further consideration, made a second proposal, which was, "To serve the king, one whole [illegible] within 20 days after the first payment; and [illegible] his council, and both houses of parl.; and since [illegible]

which still continued. But though the bp. [illegible] siderable success at first, yet, in the end, this [illegible] either to the prelatical leader of it, or to the [illegible] shop's return from this extraordinary crusade, writs had been sent out to call a new parl. to meet on the 1st of Nov. 1383. The cause of [illegible] the writs, "That by advice and assent of the council a parl. was called for their mediation and assistance, in a treaty of peace, then in [illegible] subjects, on the one part; and Robert king of [illegible] the state and defence of the realm, and the [illegible] ed the session by a speech, excusing first his [illegible]

"That the truce which had been concluded [illegible] France and Flanders. And here he offered [illegible] And further observed, "That these wars were [illegible] these great charges." The chanc. then ad- [illegible] told them, "That the king commanded them to have a due consideration of the necessary matters that had been declared to them; the [illegible] threatened all, and the great necessity the king [illegible]

[illegible] had promised to serve the king with a certain number of men for a whole year, and had served but half a year, and then returned with [illegible]

[illegible] to be seized for that purpose; and thus ended [illegible]

[illegible] land being renewed, a parl. was appointed to [illegible]

[illegible] them, "That there had been a treaty of peace [illegible] which, at a proper opportunity, he should shew them the articles. Which, although the king [illegible] knowledge and consent." He added, "That [illegible] not well be ratified without a meeting of both the princes; which, for their own sovereign's [illegible]

[illegible] Guienne and Ireland; and how all this was to [illegible] to consult and give their answer." The triers [illegible]

[illegible] be granted to them for conference; hereupon [illegible]

[illegible] lords and commons gave the king a moiety of a 10th and of a 15th, providing further, that if [illegible] moiety of a 15th; so that the clergy should tax themselves accordingly; and if a peace [illegible]

[illegible] Nov. when, in the presence of the king, the [illegible] standing, the lord chanc. as before, put them in mind, "of the king's great care of the church, commons, and laws of England;" and further told them, "That the nation was en[illegible]

[illegible] safety and defence of the kingdom; and to [illegible]

[illegible] ed them, "That the king would go in person, [illegible]

[illegible] who, in the last treaty of peace at Calais, had gone from their own offers; which, he added, was a good cause of assurance to the English, in so just a quarrel to look for victory.' The [illegible]

'That four ways or means would greatly further and speed this consultation; first, to be early in the house; next, to repel all melancholy passions; the third, to begin always on [illegible] out mixture of any orders;' and lastly, to [illegible]

[illegible] bury, should not be paid; and in case the king [illegible] that a peace or truce should be made with [illegible] not be levied.

[illegible] the 20th of Oct. 1385, the king thought it ad[illegible] of Suffolk and still chancellor of England, open[illegible] the other estates to this purport: "That the [illegible]

[illegible] might be effected 4 several ways; of which 2 were foreign and the other 2 domestic. The [illegible]

[illegible] selves, and how the war was to be best sup[illegible]

[illegible] abroad, were grown very rich thereby; whilst [illegible]

[illegible] hereupon both houses, with joint consent, [illegible] "That the chanc. and treasurer ought to be [illegible] moved in the office of chanc." The king was [illegible] manded them, "Not to make mention of any such thing for the future; but forthwith proceed to the business for which they were summoned, and hasten to a conclusion;" and rashly added, "That he would not [illegible] them, or at their instance, remove the [illegible] that the king was so much in debt that less [illegible] at all, the lords and commons returned their joint answer to the king, "That they neither [illegible] least article of it, till the king should come and shew himself in person amongst them, and re[illegible] ed for answer, "That they should order 40 [illegible] opinion of all the rest." But this message [illegible] his own safety; for a private rumour had [illegible] designed to be massacred. For," adds our authority, "it was told them, and it appeared [illegible] go to the king, a large party of armed men should set upon and murder them. Or else, that being invited to a feast, some armed ruffians should destroy them. Or, yet another [illegible] stant, in their lodgings in London." "This last [illegible] R. de Exton, then mayor of London, who refused to give his consent to such a piece of villainy; by which it was deferred, and this cursed [illegible] that they should, in the behalf of the lords [illegible]

[*The Parliament's Remonstrance to the King.*] "Sir, the prelates, lords and commons, in parl. [illegible] vation of your soul, as for the unspeakable [illegible] our ancient constitution, from a laudable and [illegible] and commons of the kingdom *once a year*, unto [illegible] any spot, clear as the sun; and wherein as well poor as rich may find never-failing shelter [illegible] and peace, and removing all kind of injuries; [illegible] redressed; and wherein with the most prudent [illegible] repulsed, by such means as most conveniently and honourably may be done; and also with [illegible] the king and [illegible] considered, be supplied: they conceive also, that since they are to support all public charges [illegible] to be expended: they say moreover, that this [illegible] cause disabling him), but obstinately by his ungovernable will, shall withdraw himself, and be [illegible] grievous expences; that then from that time it [illegible] you for a longer time have absented yourself, and [illegible] come among them."

[illegible] To this the king answered to this effect: "Now we do plainly discover, that our people and the commons in[illegible] insurrections against us: and in such case no[illegible] cousin the king of France; and from him to [illegible]

[*The Parliament's* [illegible]] [illegible] replied: "Sir, this council is not safe for you, [illegible] and if he should [illegible]

[illegible]

your throne, than in the least to lend you his [illegible]

[illegible]

quarrel: remember also the inestimable trea- [illegible]

for the maintenance of that war. And yet, what [illegible]

of your wars, as that now they are reduced [illegible]

[illegible]

cured and undone; for a king cannot be poor that has a rich people, nor that king be rich, whose subjects are beggars: nor do these ills [illegible]

[illegible]

us that we must mention it) "that if the king, [illegible]

contempt of his people, or out of a perverse [illegible]

statutes of the realm, according to the laudable ordinances, and their faithful advice: but will [illegible]

will; that from that time, it shall be lawful for [illegible]

such a grievous and unhappy dissention may never spring up amongst your people; that [illegible]

your evil counsellors subverted; and that this [illegible]

evil govt. be miserably laid waste; and that [illegible]

as a scandalous mark upon your reign; recall, [illegible]

truly remove them from your presence; for in [illegible]

after 3 days he would come to the parl. and [illegible]

M. de la Pole, earl of Suffolk; John Gilbert, bp. of Hereford, was made treasurer, instead of John de Fordham, bp. of Durham; and [illegible]

"*Articles of Impeachment exhibited by the Commons in full Parliament against Michael de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk, late Chancellor* [illegible]

"I. That the said earl being chanc. and [illegible]

nements, and rents to a great value, as ap- [illegible]

have the said lands again intirely, and the said [illegible]

"II. Whereas 9 lords were assigned by the [illegible]

king as well by word of mouth, as in writing; the said late chanc. did say in full parl. 'That [illegible]

[illegible]

the issues.

[illegible]

ous burdens miserably impoverished; the rents [illegible]

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] grant [illegible]

Letters Patent must find a place in this work, since, though not strictly parliamentary, they [illegible]

very severe trial in parl. Thus they stand [illegible]

"Richard, king, &c. to all those to whom [illegible]

of our realm in this present parl. assembled, that our profits and rents, and the revenues of our realm, by private and insufficient council, [illegible]

by oath, and obliged to maintain, are not, nor [illegible]

certain knowledge, good pleasure, and free [illegible]

hon. fathers in God, Wm. abp. of Canterbury, and Alex. abp. of York; our most dear uncles, [illegible]

Nicholas Abbot of Waltham; our beloved and [illegible]

continual council, for one whole year next after [illegible]

they shall think meet, of all rents, revenues, and profits belonging to us, or which are due [illegible]

realm or without: and of all gifts, grants, alie- [illegible]

lands, tenements, rents, annuities, profits, re- [illegible]

franchises, liberties; voidances of archbishop- [illegible]

possessions beyond the sea; and of the bene- [illegible]

that are in rebellion against the pope: and of [illegible]

or in any other manner: and of lands, tene- [illegible]

our crown: and also touching the jewels and [illegible]

levied and expended; how garrisons and forts have been maintained; and of all defaults and [illegible]

courts, and all other places of our realm; and [illegible]

great officers aforesaid, full power and authority, general and special, to enter our palace [illegible]

officers, and to command all rolls, records, and other monuments and evidences; and all de- [illegible]

all deceits, extortions, oppressions, damages, [illegible]

crown, and the estate of our said realm in ge- [illegible] and establishment: and also to hear and re- [illegible] s of the common law, and to discuss and finally de [illegible]

[illegible] that the lords were the king's friends, and th [illegible]

[illegible] ment was the less to these courtiers, l [illegible]

[illegible] s a true freedom observed in choosing, n [illegible]

[illegible] s here under specified, [illegible]

[illegible] means the troubles in the kingdom, for want of good govt. might be ended; the king better [illegible]

[illegible] fell on his knees before the king, and said, "That he understood his maj. had been in- [illegible]

Upon this, the king declared, openly, "That [illegible] course of parl.; and not by the civil or common law of the land used in the lower courts [illegible]

[illegible] *King's Ministers.*] Then five lords, who were [illegible] tation, in full parl. touching their appeal and suit [illegible]

[illegible] granted half a 10th and half a 15th, with pro- [illegible] granted; and further, they prayed the king, [illegible] parl. might hold on its course; and be adjourned if need were; and that all things [illegible] the end thereof, as in manner accustomed. [illegible] further gave the king, in defence of the realm, [illegible] on condition, that the five Lords Appellants should have out of it 20,000l. by assent and grant of the king, "for their labour and ex- [illegible]

[illegible] mons prayed, "That no person, of what de- [illegible] der of the continual council. And also that [illegible] and put others in their places." To which the [illegible]

"If any lord of the council, or other lord of [illegible]

[illegible] *Appellants.*] And now, as a prelude to what [illegible]

"You shall swear, That you will keep and cause to be kept the good peace, quiet, and tranquility of the kingdom; and if any will do to [illegible]

[illegible] Abp. of York, Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland, Michael de la Pole Earl of Suffolk, [illegible]

"I. That as false traitors to the king and [illegible] served; encroaching and assuming to them- [illegible] servitude and bondage, against his honour,

by imposing of heavy taxes and tributes laid

and treasure of the realm; as 10ths, 15ths,

realm; yet they have been by them disturbed

law of England, and put to intolerable delays, losses and costs; and the statutes and judg-

prosecuting; which thing is against the

crown of England; and the people of Ireland,

[illegible]

king in that behalf used · and thereby com-

tices and people of the law; that is to say,

questions; to which they answered in manner

[*Proceedings thereupon.*] This Impeachment

default was recorded accordingly; whereupon

king and lords, 'that they might be adjudged

the 13th of February

appeal. Who answered, "That they well un-

"That in so high a crime as is laid in this ap-

or court, except that of parl.; and that it be-

verned by the law civil; and therefore it is not

ments of parl.; and it was the judgment of the

appeal was well and duly brought, and the

king and lords to record their default; and

recorded; which was done accordingly. After

king, and assent of the lords temporal, entered

No. 9 'et 10

[illegible]

parl. there present, as judges of parl. in this

[illegible]

and earl, with Rob. Tresilian, so appealed as

[illegible]

person of an abp. or bp. the lords would ad-

[illegible]

any point, and said, " he was there ready to

[illegible]

the king, and his

answer it before

[illegible]

from thence drawn upon a hurdle through the

[illegible]

there to hang by the neck; and that the exe-

[illegible]

vance of interpretation whatever; but that the

[illegible]

jeant to the king, were accused and impeached

[illegible]

were such as were then asked them, but the

answers were not such as they put their seals

[illegible]

was wholly taken out of the king's

[illegible]

[illegible]

cles exhibited against them were 16; the first art. in the appeal was the first art. in the for-

[illegible]

accused "as traitors and enemies of the kingdom, for that they knew of all the treasons in

[illegible]

aiding, assisting, counselling, and assenting to

[illegible]

Burley and J. Beauchamp were principal act-

[illegible]

they were accused "for conspiring and designing with the 5 persons appealed, to destroy

[illegible]

not guilty. The commons replied, "they

[illegible]

into the parl. was by the lords, after due and

[illegible]

J. Salisbury, J. Beauchamp, and J. Berners,

[illegible]

and of the laws of the land. Then it was resolved, "that this bp. sir Rob. Belknap, sir

[illegible]

40*l.* a year; sir Jn. Holt and Wm. Burgh 40

[illegible]

whole kingdom; and also in pursuance of the same petition, had a full pardon for all things

[illegible]

made and given in this parl. should be ap-

[illegible]

execution as a traitor, provided always that

[illegible]

establishment, touching appeals, pursuits, ac-

[illegible]

petition was, "that none of the traitors at-

[illegible]

made in this parl.; and any one that should endeavour to have such a thing done, should be judged, and have execution as a traitor." The Answer to all these petitions was, "that

[illegible]

they had done it before; which was also us-

with great solemnity in the said church; at

and the temporal lords did him homage; and

took a new oath, as followeth: "You shall

much as in you lies, that any judgement, statute or ordinance made in this present parl. shall in

in any time to come; and further, that you

prorogation, near 3 months. The lords and

Mr. Collier says a 15th was given by the laity

vants; of bailiffs and all sheriffs officers; of

being put out of his protection; against beggars; and against riding armed, and giving of

tinct rank and quality. "This last affair,"

that time; for there was so much pride amongst

the servant from the master, or a priest from

*A new Parliament called.*] On the 6th of

men; and that both clergy and laity should enjoy all their liberties. He further told them,

mies in France, Spain, and Guienne, on one

peace was to be had, or a proper defence made

houses; as did also the bp. of st. David's, being treasurer, the keys of the exchequer; and prayed that they might be discharged. After

tation "that, for any thing then done he would

investing him with a cap, a coronet, and a ducal of York, earl of Rutland; and gave him, to-

authority; which protestation, at their request

revived, and a penalty laid on him that should accept a benefice contrary to that statute. Likewise, a forfeiture awarded against any who should bring a summons, or excommunication,

prelate for executing of it.

*A Subsidy granted.*] There was also a sub-

which 10s. should go to supply the king's present occasion; and the other 30s. to be re-

of every sack of wool from a denizen 1l. 2s. 8d.

*A Parliament called.*] The king summoned a parl. to meet at Westminster on the 12th Nov. 1390. The bp. of Winchester, ld. chanc. informed them, "That the chief cause of the summons was concerning a truce made with

they refused; so there was nothing but war to be expected from thence; the charges where-

about a lasting peace.

*Clergy.*] In this parl. says Knyghton, "a pro-

out a special licence from the king, and the

and all sorts of monasteries; Likewise to cir-

the trouble and expence of a licence, and at

the said capital lords; and they might enter

*Statute of Appropriation.*] An act was also

benefice to a religious house, upon condition

a perpetual vicar sufficiently to supply the cure

*A Parliament called.*] A Parl. was called to

cause to be for "to consider how to raise the price of wools, then too much debased; and

to him; concluding with these words, *Reddite* test, "that as their assent to this was indeed a novelty, they prayed that it might be no

the king half a 10th and half a 15th; with o

commons also in open parl. declared, "that if

readily. On the 2nd of Dec. which was the

trary; and particularly that made at Glouces-

king held a parl. at Winchester, when the abp.

the last parl. had done, till the next; and

15th. The bps, lords, and commons, in fu

ney, abp. of Canterbury, and primate of all

any ecclesiastical dignity recovered in the

within the realm, without the king's leave; for

prayed might be entered on the roll. See Collier's Hist. vol. i. p. 594.

1394, a parl. was called to meet at Westmin-

in full parl. sir John Bussy as their speaker;

earl of Arundel exhibited a complaint against the earl of Lancaster, which he said

the said duke to walk arm in arm with him:

bitter words, that he,

s of his quality, durst

the dutchy of Guienne, and, 5th, he wanted

don, in full parl. and in the very words following, which he spoke accordingly: 'sir, sith

grieved and displeased by my words; it fore-

lordship to quit me your mal-talant.'

*A Supply granted.*] The king designing to over in person, in order to reduce Ireland,

mons granted him for 3 years a subsidy upon

, and 12d. upon every pound of merchandize, so as this money should only be

over, otherwise only half a 10th

*A Parliament called.*] The duke of York,

king's great necessity for money, occasioned a full 10th, and the commons a 15th; but not without a protestation was first made, "that

*A Parl. called.*] In a short time after his

ing all assembled, the bp. of Exeter, then chan-

cause of summons, in a speech, wherein he al-

prove 4 points on which a prince ought to consult his parl. The 1st. was, "that the church might enjoy her liberties in peace." The 2nd, "that all his subjects should be governed without oppression." 3d, "that the good laws

justice executed." And, lastly, "that the

"that the commons required of the king that

"that it would be too long and tedious for

*The King resents the bringing in a Bill for*

mons desired a conference with the chancellor

it, the king commanded him to declare the re-

"that the commons by a bill required 4 things;

For, being told the king's mind in a conference

had conceived such a resentment against them, "humbly praying him to accept their excuse,

or be against his royal estate and liberty; espe-

solely to the king himself, and in his own or-

mitted themselves to the king's will and fa-

commons that, 'out of his royal benignity and

As a farther proof of their attachment to the

death of a traitor. But here the church inter-

made protestation, "that their sincere and

saved and preserved without diminution: and

in the said statute.

*A Supply granted.*] This parl. granted the

[illegible]

a 10th on their temporalities.

*A great Council at Nottingham.*] On the [illegible]

[illegible] accused lords had a day assigned them to an- [illegible]

[illegible] by a speech, which he began with a text taken [illegible]

[illegible] rities, "that no realm could be well governed [illegible] conduct of a good king 3 things were wanting; 1st. that he should be powerful; 2nd. severe [illegible] verned; and 3rd. that the subjects should be [illegible]

[illegible] consult. That laws ought to be executed up- [illegible]

[illegible] parent; for that no man could claim any pro- [illegible]

[illegible] to confirm to holy [illegible]

[illegible] a general proctor, who might have sufficient [illegible]

[illegible] straint, and compulsion, against the king's [illegible]

[illegible] entered as a record on the roll of parl.; which [illegible]

[illegible] making a commission, directed to Tho. duke [illegible] ther commissioners to see it put in execution; [illegible]

[illegible] his consent; thereupon, the said commons [illegible]

"Because the accusation and impeachment touched so high a person, and a peer of the [illegible] on the 19th of Nov. in the 10th of the king, [illegible] which was expressly against his state and dig- [illegible] judgment against the said abp. as the cause required." Hereupon the king commanded it to be recorded in parl. "that the abp. had been before him, in the presence of certain [illegible] erred in the exercise of the commission, and therefore put himself upon the king's grace [illegible] lords temporal, with sir Tho. Percy, the proc- [illegible] the king himself; for which they, also, adjudged and declared him a traitor. And it was awarded in parl. "That he should be [illegible] g assigned him a time of passage, which was from the eve of st. Michael, until 6 weeks next ensuing; to pass from the port of Dover into France: and further, that he should for- [illegible] which he had in fee simple by descent, or pur- [illegible]

## *The D. of Gloucester, the Earls of Arundel* [illegible]

[illegible] in several articles of Impeachment then brought against them, by way of bill, by the Lords Ap- [illegible] m. The bill, as appears by the record it- [illegible] this effect. First, it sets forth, "That the [illegible]

[illegible] a miserable condition you would be; so that in very fear of their power, you then granted [illegible]

### *Articles of Impeachment*

[illegible] in their traiterous design; who, by agreement, [illegible] sex, with a great number of people armed and [illegible] in several parts of your realm, to rise, and [illegible] before your presence, until they were secured [illegible] turn safely; and then they all appeared before you in your palace at Westm. with a great [illegible]

"The said duke, the earls of Arundel and Warwick, and Tho. Mortimer, continuing their [illegible] him to your parl. held on the morrow of the [illegible] caused you to come into a secret place at Westm. and there shewed you the particu- [illegible] was not Guilty in any of those points. And [illegible] assent, and contrary to your will, in your ab- [illegible] be drawn, hanged and beheaded; and there-

Lancaster earl of Derby, and Tho. Mowbray

ed, how he demised his crown; and they

polity."—IV. "Which treasons so imagined,

above declared: we the Appellants (there

and honourable court, your parl. shall order."

"That he had a general pardon in the parl.

themselves royal power, in prejudice to the

royal dignity; wherefore, upon the request of

judged the said earl of Arundel, "Guilty and

pealed, and as a traitor to the king and realm,

der their liege homage, and depose the king,

the king, or afterwards; and also all the lands

be forfeited to the king and his heirs for ever."

tered; and to shew equity as well as rigour,

in England; and further to receive the orders of

Bears date at Westminster, Sept.

That he could not bring the said duke before

Sept. 21. Upon the reading of this warrant [illegible]

[illegible] to him; as having levied war in this kingdom [illegible]

[illegible] goods and chattels might be forfeited; as, in [illegible]

[illegible] way, in the county of Middlesex, with a great [illegible]

[illegible] serves particular notice, as a specimen of the [illegible]

[illegible]

"I Thomas of Woodstock, the zear of my [illegible]

[illegible] of other [illegible]; to assent to the making of a com[illegible]

[illegible] he that I did evil, wherefore I put me lowly [illegible] lord, I knowlech, that I did evil and wick[illegible]

[illegible] evil therein, nevertheless I wot and knowlech [illegible]

[illegible] I [illegible] g other, communed and asked of [illegible] homage for drede of our lives or not, and [illegible]

[illegible] was; but forsouth there I knowlech that I did [illegible]

[illegible] lord to me, wherefore I beseech to him, not[illegible]

[illegible]

Westmoreland; Tho. Piercy, earl of Worces- [illegible]

[illegible] mind "that this parl. was first summoned to [illegible]

[illegible] laws might be duly obeyed and executed, [illegible]

The chancellor then applied himself particu- [illegible]

[illegible] duke of Surrey, Jn. duke of Exeter, Jn. marq. [illegible]

[illegible] mon a parl. at Westminster, on the morrow [illegible]

[illegible] at the time aforesaid, were read over before [illegible] estates in parl. were severally asked, "What [illegible]

[illegible] king's serjeants, said, "The answers were good [illegible]

[illegible] the king's bench, said, "The declaration of treason, not already declared, belonged to parl.; [illegible] manner." So, likewise, Wm. Rickhill, a judge of the common pleas, and Wm. Clopton, chief [illegible] affirmed the same things: therefore, the former [illegible]

[illegible] king was [illegible]

[illegible] established, "that the parl. holden the said [illegible]

[illegible] cause of action, or title of right, all manner of [illegible] time, with restitution of goods and chattels."

[illegible] proclamation.

*Sir J. Cobham impeached.*] On the same [illegible]

[illegible] sitting in judgment, awarded Simon Burley and [illegible]

[illegible] the impeachment read, the knight said, "That [illegible] guilty; and as to the use and exercise of the [illegible]

[illegible] and told him, he, with others, were made com- [illegible]

[illegible] then about him; but that the commission was [illegible] judgments the king graciously pardoned; yet so that he was to be a prisoner in the isle of Jersey during his life

*A Subsidy granted for the King's Life.*] On

fells, for his life; with one whole 10th and 15th,

of grace, or a general pardon, was passed for

nulled.] A private petition, but which had a

cestors made to the king, in a parl. held at

not appealed, or called to answer, nor due

terwards made void in the 1st. of Edw. III

all the articles and things contained in it, for

fore expressed, but also "considering that the

the impeachments." This could proceed from nothing else than a mortal quarrel which had

him: "My liege lord, I know well that many re-

confess my offences, and in so doing I beg

with a protestation, at the same time, to add or diminish when he pleased, or as it might be

"That in the month of Dec. in the 21st year

of Norfolk with a great train, and discoursed

[illegible] appointed to go to king Richard, then a pri- [illegible] granted him; and in the same year a poll-tax [illegible] ther, and wool-fells was granted for 3 years; [illegible] a capitation-tax of 3 groats of every person of [illegible] under Wat. Tyler, &c.—In his 5th year, the former subsidy on wool and leather was farther continued for 4 years, for the as- [illegible] a 10th and a 15th was granted for the war [illegible] land; a full 10th and 15th, and half a 10th and 15th. The clergy also granted a 10th.— [illegible] in spirituals, and half a 15th on all temporals. [illegible] was granted half a 10th and half a 15th; and also a subsidy upon leather, wool, and wool- [illegible] a 15th from the laity; in order to carry on [illegible] of 40s. on every sack of wool; of which 10s. [illegible] to the king half a 10th and half a 15th, with [illegible] 15th; conditionally, that if the king went not [illegible] ed in the 11th year of his reign, for 3 years; together with half a 10th and half a 15th.— [illegible] king for 3 years, a subsidy upon wool, wool- [illegible] The clergy granted also a full 10th, if the king went over; otherwise, only half a 10th.—In his 18th year, the clergy gave a 10th, and the [illegible] afe; with one whole 10th and 15th, and half a 10th and 15th. But this extravagant grant was made one of the articles against this unhappy prince in the succeeding reign.

*[illegible] R[illegible] II*

In 1379, wheat was sold for 4s. a qr.; white wine, 6d. a gallon, and red, 4d. The low price [illegible] mons against granting a supply.—In 1382, wine sold for 4l. a tun.—In 1387, barley was sold at Leicester for 2s. a qr. and wheat for [illegible] 18s. 4d. a qr; wool, on account of a law [illegible]

*[illegible] II*

1 Rich. II.—1. A confirmation of the Liber- [illegible] a debt paid. 6. Against villains that withdraw [illegible] maintenance. 8. Touching protections cum [illegible] sheriff shall be sheriff within 3 years after. [illegible] 15. That no spiritual person be arrested during divine service.

2 Rich. II.—1. That merchants may safely bring any merchandises into this

a prior be dative and removeable, or perpetual.

11 Rich. II.—1. The abp. of York and others attainted of high treason. 2. Clause to pre-

others also forfeited. 4. The penalty of concealing any part of the said estates. 5 Issues

of the said estates during the war. 7. Al merchants, aliens and denizens may buy and

&c. 10. That no letters from the king under

town, for demeanour of labourers. 4 and 5.

behave themselves. 6. Concerning weapons

peers or great officers of the realm. 12. In

and other places. 14. For the measure of

to obtain any benefice of holy church. 16.

15 Rich. II.— 1. The king's presentee shall not be received into a church full of an in-

12. Touching tanners and cordwainers. 13.

ing protections. 17. Where he in reversion may be received in a suit commenced against the particular tenant. 18. Touching attaints in Lincoln. 19. For the preservation of fish.

6. In appropriation of churches there shall be provision made for the poor and a vicar. 7.

for repeal of a statute made 14 Rich. II. c. 7.

staple. 10. Touching cloth made in Surry,

munire for purchasing bulls from Rome. 6.

tion of worsteds. 4. For the cleansing of

to have no estate in their offices for life

6. For damages for them that be vexed be-

[illegible]

be held the Tuesday next before. Which

[illegible] of Lancaster, and having long waited for him, [illegible]

[illegible] king Richard II. after the conquest, and likewise the acceptance of the same renun- [illegible]

[illegible] tices; Tho. Stow and John Burbache, doctors [illegible]

[illegible] said." And so forthwith, although, [illegible] for avoiding so tedious a labour as the [illegible] by others into a schedule of parchment; [illegible]

"In the name of God, Amen. I, Rich- [illegible] condition they be; the dukes, [illegible] lutes to my person, to every effect of law [illegible]

[illegible] all other my dominions and possessions, or any [illegible]

[illegible] kingdoms belonging, or that may be belonging; [illegible] gality, and celsitude royal, purely, voluntarily, [illegible] these writings, I do renounce, and them do to- [illegible]

[illegible] for my notorious demerits I deserve to be de- [illegible]

“ And presently to the said renunciation [illegible]

[illegible]

“ But on the morrow, viz. Tuesday the feast [illegible] York, and the duke of Lancaster, and other [illegible] mons of the said kingdom, assembled in a great [illegible] duke of Lancaster being seated in a place due to his quality, and the chair of state, being solemnly adorned with cloth of gold, but then empty, without any person whatever presiding therein; the above-named abp. of York, in the name of himself, and of the said bp. of Hereford, according to the order of the said king, did publicly declare the Cession, and Renun- [illegible] English.

“ Immediately after which, it was demanded [illegible] wit, first of the abp. of Canterbury, to whom, by reason of the dignity and prerogative of his metropolitan church of Canterbury, it [illegible] of the realm, ‘whether, for their interest and the utility of the kingdom, they would be [illegible]

“ Imprimis, It is objected against king [illegible] persons unworthy; and his indiscreet squan-

fully labour about the just govt. of the realm:

before him and his favourites privately in a

cester, and the earls of Arundel and Warwick,

all offences; and had for many years shewn

earls, and to the rest appeared with a plea-

king always and continually bearing gall in his

duke, detained, and without answer, or any

them and their heirs, and giving the same t

himself a great multitude of malefactors of

within the king's palace as without, did cruelly

wives, and other women; and though there

against all others of his kingdom; for which [illegible] royalty, and kingly maj.; and that it was not [illegible] grieved; yet the said king, at last, in his parl. [illegible] judge them to death; and very many of the [illegible] sembling, and trooping, he did, for fear of [illegible] a great number of his people. And so he did subtlely, fraudulently, and maliciously de- [illegible] many were impoverished; which was a great [illegible] cured, and caused it to be granted, "that [illegible] the states of this kingdom, should remain in [illegible] the king; in derogation of the state of parl. [illegible] against the effect of the said grant.—IX. Not- [illegible] had sworn, "that in all his judgments, he [illegible] the said king, for Henry duke of Lancaster [illegible] concern himself about the same; yet the afore- [illegible]

[illegible] presume in any thing to act contrary to the said statutes; all which are well known to tend [illegible] combat; and the said king had declared, that [illegible] and this by a decree publicly proclaimed before [illegible] cute for livery to him to be made of all man- [illegible] spited, paying a certain reasonable fine; he [illegible] sometimes his favourites or creatures, and [illegible] paid again at a certain term, notwithstanding [illegible] such creditors are much aggrieved; and not [illegible]

[illegible] for his said voyage, or in lieu thereof great [illegible] of such religious out of fear to fulfil his will and [illegible] that of his kingdom: the said lords, justices, [illegible] Rolls of Records touching the state and govt. of [illegible] of the crown of the said kingdom: and all this, [illegible] other lords out of the kingdom, and within it, [illegible] the whole kingdom, and especially amongst fo- [illegible] un, unless they be forfeited: yet the said [illegible]

XXVII. Although it was enacted and ordained, [illegible] shall be taken, nor any way destroyed; and [illegible] bodies, and not otherwise; notwithstanding [illegible] acted contrary to such a statute of this king- [illegible] transgress; yet the said king desiring to trans- [illegible] destruction of his people; and that they should [illegible] displeasure, and also for fear of death.—XXIX [illegible] judges to proceed in such causes, thereby evilly [illegible] whereof he was sworn, and damnably incur- [illegible] him sworn to us aforesaid.—XXXI. By inspec-

the clause or article. "Item, we will that the residue of our gold, the true debts of our hous-

reserving to our executors, 5 or 6000 marks;

judgments, made, given, and rendered in our

in the 21st year of our reign, and in the same

Iden; and also all the ordinances, judgments, and establishments, of the 16th Sept. in the 22d of our reign, at Coventry; and af-

Edw. duke of Albemarle, John duke of Exe-

ber, and our wardrobe, and reserving 5 or

ments, ordinances and judgments, to their utmost power, even unto death, if it be neces-

pear, that the said king did obstinately strive

repugnant to all law and reason. And this not only during his life, but after his death too;

manor of Langley, in the presence of the dukes

uncle the duke of Gloucester, then there pre-

him the said king; did voluntarily and of his

endamage, trouble, or grieve him, the said

fence, if any were. Yet afterwards, notwith-

and desired that he might be thereunto ad-

as the event of the matter has declared, speaking graciously, and with a chearful coun-

and expect a better and more fit time to

parl. but wait at home without any fear; be-

withstanding all which, the said king, in his

the said abp. to be banished, during the King's

as if it were the doings of others; insomuch

by way of lamenting his own condition, "That he was not the first that had suffered banishment, nor should he be the last; for he thought

lords would follow him; and confidently averred [illegible] tonished, hastily replied, "That he verily thought it might so happen; and that he [illegible] And that the abp. might the rather credit his words, he shewed him a certain great jewel, [illegible] that jewel for a token, he would not delay [illegible] more confide in him; the said king sent to him, advising him, that he should privately send all his jewels, and other things of value, [illegible] under the greatest confidence in the world, being [illegible] the abp.'s clerks; and keeping the said coffers [illegible] broken open, and disposed of the goods therein, at his will and pleasure. Furthermore, the said king faithfully promised the said abp. that if he would but repair to the port of Hampton, in order to go out of the realm, he [illegible] get him recalled. And if it should happen, [illegible] realm, he should without fail return into England [illegible] in any kind lose his archbishopric: and this he faithfully promised, swearing upon the cross of the late martyr st. Thomas, abp. of Canterbury [illegible] touched: all which promises notwithstanding, [illegible] the realm; and forthwith transmitted special [illegible] deceitful tricks of the said king, the said abp. being a well-meaning believing man, was subtilly circumvented."

[illegible] the Record proceeds thus; "And because it [illegible] verally as jointly; that these causes of crimes [illegible] depose the said king; considering also his own [illegible] openly delivered; all the said states did unanimously [illegible] should proceed unto a deposition of the said king; for the greater security and tranquillity [illegible] and sir Tho. Grey, knights, and sir Wm. [illegible] sentence of deposition; and to depose the said [illegible] sitting on a tribunal before the said royal chair [illegible] words;—

"In the name of God, amen. We John bp. [illegible] of the said realm, sitting in tribunal; and having [illegible] touching his govt. committed and perpetrated [illegible] ing the time of his governance; all of them [illegible] ded, exhibited, and recited; which have [illegible] be concealed with denial or excuse. And considering [illegible] acknowledging and reputing, and truly, and of [illegible] have been and to be utterly insufficient and [illegible] be deposed; as by him the said Rd. was be[illegible] acted in this affair before the said states and [illegible]

[illegible] earls, barons, knights, vassals, and valvasors, and other subjects, and liege people of the [illegible] obey or regard the said Richard, as king or [illegible]

"Furthermore, the said states willing that [illegible] before nominated commissioners, to be their [illegible]

[illegible] the crown of England, with its appurtenances was vacant; the aforesaid Henry duke of Lan[illegible] and appurtenances; in this form of words in [illegible]

"In the name of Fader, Son, and Holy Ghost, I Henry of Lancaster, chalenge this rewme of [illegible] helpe of my kyn, and of my frendes to recover it; the which rewme was in poynt to be un[illegible]

"After which claim and challenge, as well [illegible] the said abp. taking the said king Henry by [illegible]

[illegible] before it, had prayed a little while, the said [illegible]

[illegible] dominabitur populo; A man shall reign over [illegible] muel, and teaching him how a person should [illegible] have a king given. And not unfitly may they [illegible] m. 'I will make children to rule over them.' [illegible] xiii. 'I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child.' The apostle repeats it thrice, 'As a child I spake, I understood and thought.' As to speech, tis certain that a child is unconstant in speaking, he easily [illegible] inconvenient and dangerous in a king; nor is [illegible] But from such mischiefs a kingdom is freed, whose sceptre is swayed by a man, for it belongs to a man to set a watch before his [illegible] over whom not a child, but a man is set, and [illegible] that in Eccles. ix. 'Blessed is the man that hath not erred with his tongue.' Then saith the apostle, 'I understood as a child:' now a [illegible] it; and therefore tis plain and apparent [illegible] written Eccles. ix. 'Blessed is the man that abideth in wisdom.' For as a child is delighted [illegible] in our nation; for now a man shall rule, who [illegible]

Thirdly, it is said, I thought as a child, for a [illegible]

[illegible] will, and not according to reason: therefore [illegible]

[illegible] flight, and great danger ensues; from which [illegible]

[illegible] over us; to wit, one that speaks not like a [illegible]

[illegible] that as a man, not a child, he will meditate on [illegible]

[illegible] a child wantoning in foolish stubborn humours, a man shall reign, and such a man that it shall be said of him—a king shall reign in wisdom, [illegible]

"Sirs, I thank God and zowe spiritual and [illegible]

[illegible] the gude laws and customs of the rewme: ex- [illegible]

[illegible] and marshal of England, on Saturday next, be- [illegible]

[illegible] signed to the parl. there was a Protestation made by the king, "That it was not his intent [illegible] upon the states of his kingdom; nor that the [illegible] ample; but that such abbreviation of time was [illegible]

[illegible] a cheerful and benign countenance, retired [illegible]

[illegible] there to a vast multitude assembled.

[illegible] procurators, in the name of all the states and [illegible]

"The words which Wm. Thurnyng spake to [illegible]

[illegible]

demerites, as it is more pleinelich contened [illegible]

[illegible]

of all the dignite and wyrshippe, and of all the [illegible]

[illegible]

He adds, that after a little pause and expecta- [illegible]

"I assure myself, that some at this present, and many hereafter, will account my case lamentable; either that I have deserved this de- [illegible]

could not avoid it. Indeed I do confess, that [illegible] the commonwealth, than I should, or might, or intended to do hereafter; and have in many [illegible] yet I did not at any time either omit duty or [illegible] e of these [illegible] myself; and the rather because I have [illegible] which I have done, or to testify to the world [illegible] such quality as they are laid; or whether, [illegible] pecially in the heat of youth, and in the sp [illegible] doth not sometimes, either for advantage, [illegible] upon displeasure, in as deep manner grieve some particular subject, I will not [illegible] mine: it helpeth not to use defence, [illegible] place left for the one, nor pity for the other: [illegible] accuse no man, I blame no fortune, I [illegible] plain of nothing; I have no pleasure in [illegible] vain and needless comforts; and if I listed [illegible] have stood upon terms, I know I have gr [illegible] favourers abroad; and some friends, I ha [illegible] ward on my behalf, to set up a bloody [illegible] doubtful war; but I esteem not my dignity as [illegible] realm, as thereby might have been occasion [illegible] Therefore, that the commonwealth may [illegible] ther rise by my fall, than I stand by the [illegible] thereof, I willingly yield to your desires; [illegible] lawful for you to create for your king, Her [illegible] I know to be as worthy to take that place, as I see you willing to give it to him."

*A Speaker chosen.*] The next day the parl [illegible] declared, that by reason of a sudden disorder [illegible] chose sir John Dorewood in his place; be- [illegible] seeching the king to allow the said sir John [illegible]

[illegible] to be speaker for the [illegible] commons gave to the king for 3 years the sub- [illegible] on every sack from denizens, and 4 pounds from aliens; also one 10th and one 15th.—The [illegible] the late troubles, had taken up arms in favour of the king, then duke of Lancaster; likewise to pass an act for the repealing the whole pro- [illegible]

Also it was enacted, that nothing, for the fu- [illegible]

[illegible] for their consent to address the king, that he would please to create Henry, his eldest son, [illegible] royal seat, in full parl. put a coronet on the head of the said Henry, his eldest son, a ring of gold on his finger, and gave him a golden rod in his hand, and kissed him; also by a [illegible] of Wales, &c. His uncle, the duke of York, [illegible] should succeed his father in the realm of England; and they all promised to accept and [illegible]

[illegible] all, the earl of Northumberland put this important question to the house, 'What they [illegible] tody: for the king would have his life saved?' [illegible] swered, "That it seemed adviseable to them, [illegible] guard, and in such a place where no concourse of people might resort to him; and that he be [illegible]

Abp. of Canterbury
Archbishop of York
[illegible]
Bishop of St. David's
[illegible]
Bishop of Durham
[illegible]
Abbot of St. Mary's
[illegible]
The Prince
Duke of York
Earl of Arundel
[illegible]
Lord Grey of Ruthin
[illegible]
Lord Morley
[illegible]
Sir Henry Piercy
Sir Robert Scroop
[illegible]

[illegible] in this list, and, indeed there is great reason for it; he being the only man, either in the [illegible] Hayward has given us a speech made by this [illegible] tain, that this honest man suffered greatly for [illegible] prived of his dignity, put under a long impri- [illegible] died the death of a traitor. If it be objected, [illegible] a man both learned and wise, and always used [illegible] pose, declare it; therefore now, adds he, being in a place to be heard of all, and by order of

---

[illegible] to his sovereign's right and his own [illegible] you resolve upon it, I pray you call to your [illegible] or counsel

1st. point we are first to examine, whether it, if it break forth into action; yet

Sixthly, what king did hath [illegible] in particular

not speak what may be done in a popular [illegible]. All laws do except a [illegible]

and [illegible] although for his [illegible] he [illegible] touched [illegible] for taking away the [illegible] id lent his mind (as h

daineth, that he which doth presumptuously

Lord's anointed; 'thou shalt not rail upon the

of man, but of the Lord in regard hereof,

what if the father be a robber? If a murderer?

shrink for the other; for, as Nehemiah saith,

a constant courage submit ourselves to all

tion by enduring, and not performing; yea,

to hold that a prince may be slain or deposed

expect, either a reformation, or else a change

seeing the authors thereof are become a

what conquest can a subject pretend against

ancient jewels and ornaments pertaining to

ty of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

1401, when the knights and burgesses were [illegible], which he, again, desired might be put

then rehearsed, “ What great charges the[y] should [illegible] him. The same day, on [illegible] the

subsidies, for his expedition against the Scots, [illegible] they required the king to commit the
and, lastly, for resisting the rebels in North [illegible] of [illegible], and the inventory of

king's other fortresses abroad, especially for [illegible] to do.” At the same time the com-

the wars in Scotland and Ireland. [illegible] from thenceforth.” Upon this the king re-

sider the importance of them, he concluded this answer, “ That there was never any such

[illegible]

several others, who were, for their treasons [illegible]

[illegible] to be unity; and therefore prayed the king to [illegible]

[illegible] ties, notwithstanding the judgment given a- [illegible] with thanks for their motion, also granted.

[illegible] vice-chamberlain to the king, of being a stirrer in the last insurrections, or at least a favourer [illegible] the king ordered him to be placed in his accustomed seat: then his maj. declared, "that [illegible]

[illegible] burning of Wm. Sawtre, a clerk, convicted of [illegible] be burnt. There was also a statute made to [illegible] roneous opinion in religion; but Cotton remarks, "that the printed statute differs greatly from the record, not only in form, but much more in matter, in order to maintain ecclesi- [illegible] this note upon it: "that this was the first sta- [illegible]

"that no provisions should be brought from [illegible]

[illegible] or silver coin out of the nation, without a spe- [illegible] dily granted. Then the whole assembly heard [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] A parl. was summoned to [illegible] their meeting to be, "1st. for preserving t [illegible]

[illegible]

to give him thanks." [illegible] estate."

[illegible]

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

of parl. to whom only such judgment be-

[illegible]

felony, but only a trespass fineable to the king.

[illegible]

and they required that 4 persons should be re-

[illegible]

according to the desire of the commons, and

[illegible]

taking of them."—And a war with France being

"That the Commission for arraying and mus-

[illegible]

the request of the commons, a committee of

[illegible]

[illegible] of the anti-pope, be not suffered to be

[illegible]

queen; except the queen's two daughters, Moris and St. Miches; Alder and John Pa-

[illegible]

firmed by the king, with the lords assent; and full charge was given to the chief officers of

[illegible]

In which grant it appears, that the profits of

[illegible]

2000l. per ann. – After settling the King's

[illegible]

duke of York, the earl of Northumberland,

[illegible]

all his true liegemen; and that neither they

[illegible]

hereafter."

[illegible]

parl. held in the 11th of his reign, created he

[illegible]

"It is agreed by the king and lords, that the

[illegible]

covery; wherein shall be allowed no protec-

[illegible]

by warranty; and in order to render the value,

[illegible]

*Several Annuities granted.*] At the petition [illegible]

[illegible] therefore, for himself and his soldiers, in time [illegible]

[illegible] session.—On the petition of Joan, late wife to [illegible]

*Sheriff fined for a false Return.*] The sheriff [illegible] king's pleasure

[illegible]

[illegible] ses damages a treble. *Responsio.*[*] Y ad suf- [illegible]

[illegible] a knight of a shire attending the parliament. [illegible]

[illegible] had 20 pounds lands a year, and 1s. in the [illegible]

*A Parliament called.*] In the same year, [illegible] for a parl. to meet at Coventry, on the 3rd of Dec. though there is no account of any pro- [illegible]

[illegible] which he learnedly argued. "That for the [illegible] and particularly for repressing the Welch rebels; for resisting their enemies in France and [illegible]

[illegible] subduing the Welch, neither was there a com- [illegible] day to the king

Sir [illegible] Speaker, and a [illegible]

---

Rot. Parl. Vol. III. p. 541.—"Item priont les communes, q come "solone la custume [illegible] mandement "venantz, illeoques demurrantz, & a lour propres retournantz," & "lour [illegible] mesme temps; & ja soit ensy q sovent foitz [illegible] ments, & autres lour hommes & servantz [illegible] subsidy on wools, wool-fells, and skins; that is,

for every 240 wool-fells the like sum, and for every last of skins 5l.; of aliens 10s. more, to

castle by the Welch rebels; the king appoint-

York's late service in Guienne and elsewhere,

*Motion for applying the Revenues of the*

went in a body, and, by their Speaker, addressed him, remonstrating, "That without

clergy." They set forth, "That the clergy

of the state: that it was evident the riches of

sented to the king, "That though the ecclesiastics served him not in person, it could

a stop to their prayers, night and day, for the welfare of the state; and there was no expect-

ed to smile, and said openly, "That he thought the prayers of the church a very slen-

knees before the king, "he strongly pressed

leave her in a better state than he found her."

gion and avarice. "You," said he, "and

them all; for you have extorted, or, at least

for it at the year's end. "And, verily," added he, "I will sooner have my head cut off, than

persist in their petition, and brought in a bill

[illegible]

tuns and pipes of wines granted to any person [illegible]

[illegible]

III. were not certainly known: he would up- [illegible]

[illegible]

any annual value for life, or years, do, on pain [illegible]

[illegible]

Commons prayed, "That the money borrowed for saving of the honour of the lord John, the [illegible]

[illegible] may be paid what to him is due; and also to [illegible]

[illegible]

Likewise, That no stranger born be a customer, [illegible]

[illegible]

The king's answer to the 4 first was, "The [illegible]

[illegible]

*A Parliament called.*] On the 21st Dec. writs were issued for a parl. to meet at Coven- [illegible]

[illegible] the 9th of Feb. writs were a third time issued [illegible]

[illegible] us; and said, "That in the weighty affairs [illegible]

[illegible] *penitebit*; wherein he purposed to begin also, [illegible]

[illegible] and presented sir John Tibetot for their Speak- [illegible] youth, and other causes; but the king con- [illegible]

[illegible] parl.

*The Speaker proposes several Regulations in* [illegible]

[illegible] mon protestation, and required a confirmation [illegible]

[illegible] for confirming all their liberties, for safe keep- [illegible]

[illegible]

year, when, because the abp. of Canterbury, [illegible]

[illegible]

to be of his council; and that by authority of [illegible]

[illegible]

sons, in general tail, &c. As a matter of such [illegible]

[illegible]

gins with a recital of the act made last session [illegible]

[illegible]

Large; they unanimously petitioned us, with [illegible]

and make void the said former statute; and [illegible]

nances, privileges, &c. belonging thereto; and [illegible]

possessions, honours, and customs, with all other appurtenances, belonging to the dutchy [illegible]

| | |
|---|---|
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| Thomas, of Durham | Abyndon |
| Robert, of Chichester | St. Mary's, York |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| The Guardians of the | St. Peter's, Gloucester |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |

[illegible]

| | |
|---|---|
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| Reginald, lord Grey, of Ruthyn | Ralph, lord Cromwell |
| | Ralph, lord Greystock |
| William, lord Ferrers | Wm. lord Bergavenny |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| Wm. lord Willoughby | Robert, lord Poynynges |

[illegible] reign."

*The Lords Address against the Lollards.*—[illegible] suborned Henry prince of Wales, for and in [illegible] the commons; to exhibit a long and bloody [illegible] against those that preached or taught any [illegible] Other points touching Lollardy, I read none; [illegible] dition in this exploit, they joined prophecies [illegible] no sanctuary should protect them."—But it will [illegible]

[illegible]

take the like oath again; which the king, at [illegible]

[illegible]

mised: and that certain lords, by name, might [illegible]

[illegible]

fatigue and good conduct in Wales; for which both the king and the prince returned back [illegible]

[illegible]

*A Subsidy granted.*] The lords and com- [illegible]

[illegible]

promised, that for 2 years next ensuing, he [illegible]

his subjects; and, for more assurance thereof, [illegible]

[illegible]

formerly, in this parl. for a diffe [illegible]

[illegible]

redress them; without disclosing the same to [illegible]

[illegible]

*A Parliament called.*] Another parl. was [illegible] lled to meet at Westminster, on the 18th of [illegible] ey did not sit to do business [illegible]

[illegible]

rnance, as in a proper defence against a [illegible]

[illegible]

a new [illegible] built, a [illegible]

[illegible]

called this assembly for, a full consultation; [illegible]

their Speaker, and present him the next day [illegible]

29th of Jan. the Commons presented sir Tho. [illegible]

ally bestowed; and the clergy considered

ous a body against him." For this reason he

to these proceedings, he signed a warrant for

from the laity, without a meeting of a parl. this

*Petition of Rd. de Hastings.*] A matter of more private concern came also before this

the counsellors names; whereupon two of

the like subsidy as in the 9th of this reign, so

grant, 'that it was provided of their own

mitted satisfaction in this matter at a proper

the good governance of the realm hel

assembled." He added, "That it was the

tions and persons, should enjoy their wonted

desired the commons to chuse a Speaker, and this, the Speaker desired a respite for 3 days

other Speakers had made; and, that if he

*A Supply granted.*] Then the commons, by

whereupon a law was made this parl. for pro-

ney, as well of Scotland as other nations. . Da-

this remark, "That hence it most manifestly

parl.; and they desired that the king would

the more private petitions of the commons

them forfeit 100l. for every such offence.

22, or two days after the dissolution of it.

sent to all the sheriffs in England; and there

Henry was seized with a distemper, which, in

on every sack of wool from denizens; and 4 pounds from aliens for 3 years: also a 10th and a 15th.—In his 2nd year, a subsidy was [illegible] wool-fells and skins, for 3 years; also 3s. on [illegible] merchandize, besides a 10th and a 15th.— [illegible] and skins; that is, of every denizen, for each [illegible] years; 3s. on every tun of wine, imported or [illegible] had one 10th and a half, with the same subsidy as in the last parl. for 2 years.—In his 11th year, the same tax was granted; and, in his [illegible] 20l. a year clear estate.

[illegible] A thresher for a day's labour 2d. An ox sold [illegible] bushels of sowing oats 4s. 6d. For a dung-cart and all materials 1s. 2d. For a pair of [illegible]

[illegible] tutes heretofore made and not repealed. 2. [illegible] in the 21st year of king Rich. II. 4. Confir[illegible] year of king Rich. II. 5. For restitution of those which were attainted in the 21st year of [illegible] officers of king Rich. II. 10. Touching of[illegible] Confirmation of divers statutes, made for pul[illegible]

[illegible] 2 Hen. IV.—1. Confirmation of Statutes [illegible] of 1 Hen. IV. cap. 6. concerning gifts and [illegible] ibiting religious persons to purchase bulls from [illegible] for a fine levied. 9. For discharge of [illegible] maintainable against a disseisor with force. [illegible]

[illegible] found in default. 19. No officer of a lord of a franchise shall be an attorney in the same. [illegible] resident upon their offices. 21. For the office [illegible] Against examination of judgments given in the king's courts. 24. Touching Aulnage of cloths. [illegible] Against bearing armour in Wales. 30. [illegible]

5 Hen. IV.—1. For the forfeitures of the [illegible] a knight in parl. 7. For the well intreating [illegible] seised in the king's hand. 12. Execution may be awarded upon a statute merchant, [illegible]

6 Hen. IV.—1. Touching first fruits of be[illegible] chants aliens.

7 Hen. IV.—1. Confirmation of Liberties [illegible] making of arrow-heads. 8. Against pardons to benefices full of an incumbent. 9. Cloths [illegible] ers. 15. The manner of the election of knights [illegible]

9 Hen. 4.—1. Confirmation of Liberties and Statutes not repealed. 2. Touching the seal[illegible] South Wales. 4. Touching disclaimer in felo[illegible] franchise. 6. Repeal of a statute made 7 Hen. IV. c. 10. touching the length and [illegible] the knights of parl. 2. No common hostler [illegible] peace. 6. Touching the Aulnage of cloths. [illegible] stices of assize and gaol-delivery. 3. Con[illegible]

hold a parl. 3 weeks after Easter next follow- ; had the King's approbation.

[illegible] : he told them, "that the king desired tonnage and poundage, for 3 years, as they had ders to the bps. to rectify them: and if they

vessel, going on any river, be taken for a deo-

prosperous. It was enacted, "That all Aliens

the king's will: also that all the Livings of

By another act it was ordained, "That every Juror in all Inquisitions should be questioned

other act it was ordained, "That in every

other statute, "That no such quarrel, action,

seated, "that contrary to this act, Alien

to his enemies." The king consider-kingdom, it was ordered by parl. "that they

the king's pleasure."—There was another

act was passed to revoke all these patents and

Paul's. Thos. Arundel, abp. of Canterbury,

long been a grievous thorn in the sides of the

late had sent out the year before, he had collected a large bundle of accusations, which

convocation, it was, at length, decreed, "That

them, should be next dealt withal; and that, without delay, a process should be issued out against him, as a most notorious heretic."

them; that, having obtained his leave, their

being openly abetted by some, but secretly by

the clergy. And, in the very first year of

ards gave the young monarch a warm resent-

*A Parl. called.*] A parl. was called to meet

"That whoever read the scriptures in English, which was then called 'Wickliffe's Learning,'

heresy against God.

had again put the king in mind, of what had been desired in parl. 4 years before, relative

Clergy to the service of the state. "This bill," says Hall, "made the fat abbots to

priors to curse; the silly nuns to weep, and.

the active and bold spirit of a young prince, agitated by counsels which had a natural ten-

*The Clergy prompt the King to a War with* to attempt the recovery of

*The Abp. of Canterbury's speech in favour of*

after put in execution; for, we are told, that

The Abp. of *Canterbury* rose up, in the house of lords, and addressed the king in

since I owe all my fortune to your favour, gratitude, as well as the duty of a subject,

mote the honour of so gracious a sovereign,

to your people with a noble equity, you are illustrious in the arts of a peaceful govt.; but

in a reign of serenity and plenty, in great

being till above 400 years after

a law, that none of that sex should inherit

But what is all this to France? How will the

those two German rivers? but though all were true, which they report of this boasted law,

colour of a title, asserted that he sprung from

and reason? God declares, that if a man died

to the daughter: and there never was a law

earth, that they may devolve the right of

who is warden of the marches, with a few se-

nobles, they all declared for a War with France; which being thus resolved on, the

John, d. of Bedford, Tho. lord Berkley, of

W. l. Ferrers, of Groby list

opened the session by a speech; wherein he declared, "That his maj. would, that the

truly, but he was also strengthening himself

the attempting such a mighty exploit, great provision was required." Then taking for his

labour, and another for rest; to princes, the heads of men, a time for peace, and another

his subjects, and a chearful relief from them. That they ought to grant a larger subsidy, con-

*T. Chaucer, Esq. elected Speaker.*] Ac-

him to the usual form. They then proceeded to consider of the Supplies, and by the assent

should continue till the next parl."

of age, and a prisoner in Scotland, presented

he therefore required a general restitution to it

amounted, in the whole, to a very large sum;

gain a more specious pretence for war, it was

before a treaty of marriage set on foot between

with the princess; and by his ambassadors to the court of France, insisted on a restitution

desirous the French court was of an alliance

must refer for a description of the glorious ex-

*A Parl. called.*] After Henry's return to

ing. On which day the parl. met at West-

chanc. to open the cause of the summons;

church and all other persons and corporations

his text, *Tobis Ivan*, &c.—In discoursing on which he endeavoured to demonstrate, "That a thing well begun and continued with diligence, must have a prosperous event, according to the saying, "*Dimidium facti, qui bene*

successes, who had made so glorious a begin-

who had pursued his gallant enterprize in a

general Battle at Agincourt. That it being

so prosperous a beginning. Which, that the

emperor Sigismund was the mediator in it; in

about it.

are the most remarkable Petitions in this parl.

motion, the bps. promised to provide a remehad long enjoyed them; it was therefore or-

provisions of the pope; that whoever disquiet-

in the Statutes of Provisors before named; and

of Money, treason: and whereas, (by rea-

able, if hasty execution and remedy were not

than half a crown, or a crown at the most, was paid for proving a will, the ordinaries did

should take above that old customary rate

the 2nd year of this king's reign, had been re-

*d Parl. called.*] Next year great prepara-

to call a parl. in order to raise supplies for

such a speedy summons. On the day of the

[illegible] He alledged, "that

as God had in 6 days created all the world,

just administration at home, and the securing

with telling them, that the king intended to

15ths, to be levied on the laity; the clergy

the same time it was enacted, "that all per-

the king, should have letters patent to be paid

Winchester, for a vast sum, and to borrow

*An Act for a general Pardon, and others,*

grant a general pardon for all crimes which

dry were settled, and a penalty ordained for

was established, "that the taker only should

[illegible]

sion, the duke thought proper to call a parl

[illegible]

the 16th of Nov. following at Westminster.

[illegible]

his theme, *Confortamini et viriliter agite, et*

[illegible]

and the victory at Agincourt: and who now,

[illegible]

who, with the common protestation, was al-

[illegible]

n 15th.

[illegible]

taken as a traitor to the king and realm: that

[illegible]

st. Giles's aforesaid, did conspire to subvert

[illegible]

tick; it passed in the affirmative.—Thus far

[illegible]

mercy above judgment; that vengeance per-

[illegible]

nsev. Accordingly he was executed on a gal-

a former crying him up as a martyr to

an heretick. Mr. Goodwin says, 'he had all the qualities of a brave and gallant gentleman,

abhoring him, 'that if he saw him rise from

latter part of his life, as little better than an

le of insurrections, of which the

abettors, and a

quire after them; answer was given, "That

and from thence told them, "That his maj

esq. a 3rd time as their Speaker; and, on the

enacted, "That all necessaries should be

death of the king, it was ordained, "That all

is brought to a conclusion, by a marriage be-

cords, there is a list of the peers summoned to a parl. to be held at Westminster on the 2nd of March this year; but no farther account is

land; therefore, if a parl. should be summoned [illegible] upon penalty of fo[illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] The next year Henry, covered with laurels, returned to England, and [illegible] to them the state of affairs, "What conquests [illegible] cities and provinces against him being subdued, [illegible] give him a 15th, though a petition was pre[illegible] would prove the ruin of England. This was [illegible] more affecting their own private interest, than [illegible] part with any money to advance the greatness and honour of the government.

During this session, there was a convoca[illegible] king a 10th on these conditions; "That the [illegible] the Clergy. That if any of that body were accused of a capital crime in the king's courts [illegible]

*A Peace with France.*] The next thing the [illegible] their consents, and promise to observe it. And since that peace had not only been sworn to, [illegible] the same solemn manner, in parl. Whereupon Tho. Langley, bp. of Durham, lord chanc. having by the king's order read the articles [illegible] lably observe it.

[illegible] which it was ordained, "That whereas wash[illegible]

[illegible] "That every third benefice, the presentation [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] Whilst Henry was advanc[illegible] the regency in England with great wisdom and fidelity. This governor thought fit to call a [illegible] the laity; but with this condition, says Wal[illegible] in the money then current. It was also or[illegible] if they did not want in weight more than 12d. in the noble; or if they did, those who paid them were to make up the defect. The pe[illegible] could, and hoarded up their silver: by which [illegible] "That all the statutes unrepealed, concern[illegible] and silver, should be strictly observed and executed." "That the king should appoint his [illegible] the city of London, and other towns, to be [illegible] coined, should have it delivered to them within 8 days, according to the value of what they [illegible] but delivered it into the king's exchangers, should pay 3d. in the noble, and so propor[illegible] in their old; and that, if there was any de[illegible] should not divert the gold and silver received by them to any other use; but should be [illegible] that there might be the fuller circulation of money through the kingdom." A mint was [illegible] ed, "That the new-coined money should be [illegible] just weights of the noble, half-noble, and far- [illegible] quired to make a search after all falsifiers of weights, and to keep them in prison till they [illegible]

An act having been passed, an. 14 Rich. II. wherein it was ordained, "That for every ex- [illegible] to buy, within 3 months following, merchan- [illegible] exchanged, upon forfeiture of the same: and [illegible] y such merchandizes and ship them; and [illegible] nation would be carried beyond sea." It was therefore enacted, "That all merchants, who should make such exchanges, should be bound [illegible] buy, within 9 months following, the merchan- [illegible]

As the parl. granted the king a 10th and 15th, so a convocation, which had met at York, Sept. 22, foregoing, gave him a 10th; [illegible] clergy to be the collectors, and to return their [illegible] ry V. who died of a dysentery, Aug. 31, 1422, [illegible] age, and in the 10th of his reign.

[illegible]

[illegible] staple-ware, tunnage, and poundage, for 4 [illegible] should be vested in the king, for carrying on a [illegible] in his 7th year [illegible] parl. granted to him [illegible] 10th, and one half part of them both.—In his [illegible] day; and 24,000 archers, who received 6d. per [illegible] per ann.; and consequently all Henry's grants, [illegible] he received considerable assistance from the [illegible] Henry's annual income, which is said to have [illegible] nue is founded may be seen in Rymer, Vol. X. p. 113. It is not a little defective; but its [illegible] a comparison of the two records, the following statement is drawn up.

[illegible]

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1. | [illegible] | £. [illegible] | 1 | 2 |
| 2. | Magna custuma on ditto - | 26,035 | 18 | 8½ |
| 3. | Parva custuma on goods - | 2,438 | 9 | 1¼ |
| 4. | Subsidy of tunnage and poundage - - - - | 8,237 | 10 | 9½ |
| | | £ [illegible] | 19 | [illegible] |
| 5. | Casual revenue, [illegible] of wards, &c. - - - | 15,066 | 11 | 1 |
| | Total [illegible] Revenue | £ [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] |
| 1. | Fee farm rents - - | £. 9,612 | 11 | 3 |
| 2. | Alien priories - - - - | 277 | 5 | 0 |
| 3. | Dutchy of Cornwall - - | 2,788 | 13 | 3 |
| 4. | South Wales - - - - | 1,139 | 13 | 11 |
| 5. | North Wales - - - - | 1,097 | 17 | 3 |
| 6. | County of Chester - - - | 764 | 10 | 2 |
| 7. | Manor of Shotswick - - | 33 | 6 | 8 |
| 8. | Ireland - - - - - - | 2,339 | 18 | 6 |
| 9. | Dutchy of Lancaster - - | 4,952 | 13 | 3 |
| 10. | Dutchy of Aquitaine - - | 808 | 2 | 2 |
| 11. | Profits of Calais - - - | 2,866 | 1 | 0½ |
| 12. | Revenue of Windsor - - | 207 | 18 | 5 |
| | | £ [illegible] | [illegible] | [illegible] |
| | Total above - | £. 55,754 | 10 | 10½ |
| | | £. 76,643 | 1 | 8½ |

[illegible]

lected; and, on the whole, it is probable, that

[illegible]

of tunnage and poundage, joined together,

[illegible]

dear as to be sold for 16s. a quarter; and that

[illegible]

1 Hen. V.—1. For election of knights and

[illegible]

and their bailiffs. 5. For addition to be given,

[illegible]

offices in Calais. 10. By what measure purveyors shall take corn.

2 Hen. V.—1. Power given to ordinaries

[illegible]

For granting a copy of a libel in the spiritual

[illegible]

conducts. 7. For reformation of heresy and

[illegible]

gilding of silver ware. 5. To prevent rebel-

[illegible]

in Yorkshire and Lancashire. 9. Britons not

[illegible]

provisions, licenses, and pardons, touching be-

[illegible]

Touching attaints upon a false verdict

[illegible]

5. H. IV. c. 7 and 9. for hosts to be assigned

[illegible]

granted to Irishmen. 7. In what cases letters

[illegible]

men of Lancashire, etc. Process against

[illegible]

and clippers of money. 12. Touching Rochester bridge.

[illegible]

1. Confirmation of all statutes not repealed

[illegible]

tower. 5. Touching the mint at Calais. 6.

[illegible]

counterfeiters and makers of false weights. 9.

[illegible]

## HENRY VI.

*A Parl. called.*] Henry VI. was an infant [illegible] the feast of st. Martin, at Westminster. [illegible] begun, a commission directed to Humphrey [illegible]

[illegible] observed, "That God of his great mercy had [illegible]

[illegible] declared, "That, considering the king's tender age, this parl. was called for 3 causes; the [illegible] son; the 2nd for preserving the peace: the [illegible]

[illegible] He desired them in [illegible] a Moses in Exodus, viz. such as feared God, [illegible] chose a Speaker, and present him [illegible]

*Roger Flower, esq. a 4th time chosen Speaker.*] Receivers and triers of petitions being [illegible]

[illegible] Speaker; who, with the usual protestation, [illegible]

[illegible] *& Angliæ, & dominus Hiberniæ.*"—At the re- [illegible] treasurer of England; and John [illegible]

[illegible] ed John duke of Bedford protector and d- [illegible] said office; which said duke took upon him the dignity aforesaid, under a protestation that n [illegible]

[illegible], who were Tho. Beaufort duke of [illegible]

[illegible] and that all writs, commissions and depend- [illegible]

[illegible] king Henry V. constituted and appointed Hy. lord Fitzhugh, Walter Hungerford, Walter Beauchamp, Lewis Robsart, Wm. Porter, Rob. [illegible] Henry IV. by oversight of the supervisors of [illegible]

*A subsidy granted.*] "The commons, with [illegible] two years to come."—And it was, also, enact- [illegible] their discretion. Also, certain bps. and lords, [illegible] governance aforesaid. And, that all justices [illegible] their determination. That these counsellors [illegible] wards, marriages, farms, and other casualties [illegible] in council but by 6 at the least, or more; and, [illegible]

[illegible] have each of them a key to the king's Receipt, [illegible] enacted and confirmed by parl.; with a proviso, "That all such officers, as held the [illegible] care was taken for the good governance of the [illegible] titles of which we refer to the list given at [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] In 1423 another parl. [illegible] remarkable, that a much smaller number of [illegible] parl. than usual; from whence we conclude, that the greatest part of the English nobility, [illegible] list of the [illegible]

| | |
|---|---|
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| Henry, earl of Northumberland | William ld. Bottreaux |
| [illegible] | Thomas, lord Dacre of [illegible] |
| William, lord Ferrers | Thomas, earl Marshal |
| John, lord Welles | Thomas, d. of Exeter |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |

[illegible] the northern counties, "that a coinage should [illegible] to the executors of Henry V. to the end that [illegible] also, discharge the will of Henry V. which [illegible] Henry V. to the value of 40,000 marks, which [illegible] shall have all the wards, marriages, goods, [illegible] for the payment of his debts." But then it was enacted, "That the executors of both [illegible]

[illegible] it, was confirmed." [illegible] tition of Katherine queen of England, a new [illegible] granted by the last parl. it being, in many [illegible] Henry V., relating to the goods of the said [illegible] thereon, [illegible]

*The Scotch King released, and a Peace concluded* [illegible] he were set at liberty, a firm and lasting peace [illegible] others, a treaty was set on foot at Durham, between the commissioners of both nations; [illegible] firmed by this parl. but the power to deliver [illegible] ship and fidelity, say some; or as other historians write, did homage to the young king of England at his castle of Windsor; wherein he [illegible] under a superior lord. The oath was in these words: "I, James Stewart, king of Scotland, [illegible] kingdom of Scotland, which I hold and claim of you. And I shall bear you my faith and fidelity of life and limb, and worldly honour, against all men; and faithfully I shall acknow[illegible] of Scotland aforesaid; so help me God, and [illegible]" See [illegible] Chron. p. 587.

*Petitions.*] On the petition of [illegible] that were taken from her.—At the petition of [illegible] Leonard's in York, it was enacted, "That [illegible] which happened some years after.—It was enacted, "That if any person should carry out of the realm any staple-ware, from the sta[illegible] of Hampshire, Kent, Sussex, and York, but [illegible] quetine, sole daughter and heiress to Wm. duke [illegible] duke of Gloucester. This princess, by her fa[illegible] unkind usage of her, she left him and came [illegible] John had contrived with him to break out of [illegible] mediately a reward of 40l. a year, to be aiding and assisting to him in his escape; and af[illegible] kingdom again, and cut off the heads of the [illegible] the cause, he would then fly into France, and [illegible] For which escape alone, we suppose, he was [illegible] of parl [illegible]

[illegible] hanged, drawn, and quartered; his head set [illegible]

[illegible] rious success; whilst the Protector thought fit [illegible]

[illegible] on a great horse, to Westminster. The people [illegible]

[illegible] in the throne. "It was a strange sight," says Speed, "and the first time it ever was seen in [illegible]

[illegible] operanti bonum; thus he divided into three branches, viz. *bonum honestum*, which consisted [illegible]

[illegible] *bonum utile*, which was the free and willing re- [illegible]

[illegible] honoured; by the 3rd, the subject's safety better guarded. According to the saying in st. Luke, 'Gloria in excelsis Deo, in terra pax, et [illegible]

God by due obedience in the subjects; the [illegible]

[illegible] by relieving their princes. And in this he af- [illegible]

[illegible] mind that, 'Sicut princeps tenetur regere regn- [illegible]

[illegible] 'Salus ubi multa consilia,' and told them that as [illegible]

[illegible] he wanted a gall; the 2nd for that he was inflexible and could not bow; and the 3rd, in [illegible]

[illegible] mory; all which properties he wished might [illegible]

[illegible] in judgment respect any person; and of a [illegible]

[illegible] victories and great conquests; all which ought [illegible]

[illegible] for their Speaker, before the king and lords, [illegible]

[illegible] session was much interrupted by a quarrel between two great men about a right of prece- [illegible]

[illegible] antagonists; and each laid claim to the higher [illegible]

[illegible] sides; which is prefixed to his account of the [illegible]

[illegible] these earls having finished their pleas and de- [illegible]

[illegible]

mer subsidy on wools was granted for 3 years [illegible]

be strictly looked to for their duties.

[illegible]

son; who, being thereby heir to Lionel duke [illegible]

swer. The king hath commanded the abp. of Canterbury and York to provide a remedy.— [illegible]

which has a more public concern, and which Cotton hath given us in these words:—" It is [illegible]

length become of little value, and the woollen [illegible]

nished. To remedy this, they laid on a heavy [illegible]

was 10s. more than ever was paid before for [illegible]

giving the chanc. of England leave to grant [illegible]

[illegible]

toms; and next, that strangers might not by [illegible]

*Quarrel between the Lord Protector, and the* [illegible]

In short, a civil war it was much dreaded would be the consequence; and, all their mu- [illegible]

this situation the bp. however, thought proper to write a letter to the duke of Bedford, re- [illegible]

came accordingly, and calling a council of the [illegible]

arose; and, nothing being concluded at that [illegible]

to as little purpose; till, at last, it was deter- [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] Accordingly, writs of sum- [illegible] Jan. 7, 1426, for one to meet, at Leicester, [illegible]

shoulders; from whence this meeting got the [illegible]

also, as soon as it was taken notice of, was prohibited. Being all, at length, sat in a peace- [illegible] will was, that all estates should enjoy their

of st. Paul: *Sic facite ut salvi sitis.* These the learned prelate divided into 3 parts, and referred them: 'First to God, for protecting

from lollards and heretics; 2dly, by imparting

his faith; honour to the king, by receiving

has thought fit to extract, relating to this strong contention between these two noblemen; who,

so silent in this matter; they tell us, that when

parl. and each party allowed to plead his

was urged to give in his Answer. Which Arti-

*Articles of Accusation presented to the Parl. by the Duke of Gloucester, against Henry, Bishop of Winchester, with his Answers to*

tower of London, did by the instigation and encouragement of the said bp. of Winchester, pon the lip, replied, "That he was ever a

chiefly.

*A Subsidy and a Poll-tax granted.*] The [illegible] of a Large Subsidy, which was 3s. a tun for all [illegible] merchandize. Besides this, there was a kind of a Poll-Tax granted, which, though not ge[illegible] ioners in it were to pay 6s. 8d. a head. And [illegible] the [illegible] mark. In all corporations, it was ordained, [illegible] were passed in this parl.: the titles of which [illegible] of this reign.

[illegible] it was too wide at first, ever to admit of a tho[illegible] had found means to obtain a cardinal's hat [illegible] church thought himself more than equal, in dignity, to the Protector of England. The [illegible] a motion being made, in this parl. to both [illegible] Power of a Protector, or Defender of the Realm; affirming, that he would not sit in the house till he understood what it was, since, as [illegible] council and the lords of parl.; and after due [illegible] duke by them, "That they did not think he [illegible] ported, only, a personal duty of attendance, in [illegible] it was allowed that in council, as principal counsellor, he had pre-eminence; but in parl. [illegible] duke of Gloucester; so they desired him to be [illegible]

*A female Remonstrance to Parl. against the* [illegible] cester, to the abps. and other lords there pre[illegible] with, our author is silent.

[illegible] "That in the realm of England, 3 causes were [illegible] 1st, want of faith was the root of all vice, '[illegible] every kingdom; for, 'ex justitia sequitur pax, [illegible] tur.' Instead of these 3 virtues, 3 abominable [illegible] and oppression in the place of justice. Through [illegible] fearing God, and man for God; the other car[illegible] kingdoms, according to the wise man, 'regnum [illegible] then no doubt but this would be a flourishing [illegible]

*A Speaker chosen.*] The next day the com- [illegible]

[illegible] it were, into his regal dignity by a coronation. [illegible]

[illegible] lemnity: and very soon after, a motion was [illegible]

[illegible] of Dec. that a supply was granted by this parl. [illegible]

[illegible] ter, just then made a cardinal, granted an- [illegible]

They also gave the king a grant of tunnage and poundage, to continue till the next parl. [illegible]

[illegible] der a protestation that the said cardinal [illegible]

[illegible] joined in a Petition to the king, praying him, [illegible]

[illegible] grant him a full pardon for whatever he had [illegible]

[illegible] tion was granted; and consequently the cardi- [illegible]

Authority was given to the kings council to [illegible]

[illegible] certain quantity of mercantile or staple ware, [illegible]

[illegible] form. Cotton has made but two observations [illegible]

[illegible] but strangers were to pay a small premium [illegible]

[illegible] of people, and of small substance: for the fu- [illegible]

[illegible] county by people dwelling and resident in the [illegible]

[illegible]

of provisions near this period.

[illegible]

A. The king will be advised.—P. That all

[illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] On the 7th of Nov. writs

[illegible]

on the 12th of Jan. 1431; being met in the

[illegible]

England, being seated in the chair of state,

[illegible]

ejus.' On this he endeavoured to demonstrate, "That the king and kingdom ought to be established by a three-fold virtue. The 1st,

[illegible]

viz. 'collectivam,' as in gathering goods together; the other, 'constitutivam,' as in com-

[illegible]

3d, 'consentaneam,' as in union of each

[illegible]

hath over himself; oeconomical, as relating to

[illegible]

secured. And, lastly, justice had its 3 parts;

[illegible]

lowed.

[illegible]

with a subsidy of the like value on all mer-

[illegible]

council, to make securities to the king's cre-

[illegible]

A charge of bastardy was alledged against

[illegible]

Kent, as being his eldest daughter, and a le-

[illegible]

cured a certificate from the ordinary. Against

[illegible]

bastard: that her mother Constance, the late

[illegible]

fraud. All this being fully proved, in order

[illegible]

made 8 Hy. VI. c. 2, touching Denmark,

used.—P. The commons of Northumberland,

land by the year; it is enacted, "That the

*A Peace with the Scots.*] We have no account how long this parl. sat; but historians

duke of Gloucester, to desire that a peace

portant a matter, without the consent of the

settled a peace with them.

*A Parl. called.*] On the 25th of Feb. 1432, writs of summons were issued out for a parl. to

which he did in this manner, taking for his text these words of st. Peter, 'Deum timete,

marked 2 points, the 1st, a general counsel to

according to the saying of the apostle, 'omnis

lived in great want and penury." He concluded, as usual, with acquainting them, that

been informed the commons had made a de-

*John Russell esq. elected Speaker, and a Sub-*

presented to the king John Russel, esq. for

consent of the lords, granted one 10th and half a 15th; also one year's subsidy on wools, and

*and the d. of Gloucester.*] A great complaint

Cotton here remarks, "that the true reason of

more for them, and lend to him besides 14,000l. which was done accordingly; and then he was

consent of the other estates, granted a pardon

[illegible]

Speaker; who, with the usual ceremony, was

...of the king's person; and the other, to

and shewed to his maj. a precedent, in the reign

commons came again before the king and lords,

for his conduct in the battle of Vernoyl. Be-

duke's personal attendance about him; and,

*A Subsidy and a Vote of Credit granted.*] The Subsidy granted by this parl. was a 10th and a 15th, to be levied on the laity. They

the office as freely as others before him, and that for more than 2 years profits of the crown;

*Particular Acts passed.*] In the Statutes at

entering upon the lands for the default of the

ed the suit: whereupon it was enacted, "That

might not be liable to writs of waste, for the

damages for the said waste, provided that it

depending, and determine the same."—VI. An

taking 9 bushels for the qr. it was enacted, "That the statutes for weights and measures

and that there should be a bushel, common

having found out a way to defeat the execu-

debts; it was therefore ordained, "That sure-

having the misfortune to be killed before

them, which were again thrown into a differ-

out, to call a parl. dated Nov. 1st, to meet at

*A Parl. called.*] It was not till two years

he told them, "that the duke of Burgundy

where two cardinals came to treat about a peace between England and France; that al-

French refused and scoffed at; by which nu-

desired the commons to choose a Speaker.

*A Speaker chosen.*] Accordingly they pre-

pound, upon his oath. Also a 10th and a 15th

king, with tonnage and poundage for 2 years.

*A Parl. called.*] Another parl. was called

with an elaborate speech, from this text, 'Co-

demonstrated, "That 3 sorts of men are

are shaven; and all kings in their coronation, who in token thereof wear a crown of gold, set

the faithful care of a prince; for, as gold is

*A Speaker chosen.*] The receivers and triers

was granted for 3 years to come. Authority ciency of freehold than 20l. a year, shall be

form challeng'd."—IV. "A permission was gi-

plead for them, in every hundred or wapentake."—And, V. "A prohibition was laid

shipped, any wool, wool-fells, or other mer-

*Petitions.*] On a Petition of Humphrey,

raise a tower of stone within the said park. John, earl of Oxford, petitioned for a pardon for 300l. the remainder of a fine of 500l.

Pull, of Wirall, in the county of Chester, gentleman, shamefully did ravish; it was

tion, and under colour thereof, ravished her;

which was granted.

*A general pardon.*] The last thing we find on the record, transacted this parl. was the

in this parliament.

*A Parl. called.*] We have now a period of

open the session by a speech. He took for his

deavoured to draw two especial points; the 1st, "What great desire every christian ought

and battles in this world. As to the 1st, that

Israel; he noted that thereby was meant a mystical unity, according to these words in Judges ii, 'Convenit universus Israel ad ci-

them, that this parl. was called; remembering

*A Speaker chosen.*] The prelate having

granted for 3 years, as in the 14 Hen. VI.

"That merchant strangers shall not sell their

a year, except in cities and corporations."—

spear, and 1*d*. for a bow; to be paid to the

"That no person shall be a collector of dismes

ty thereto." A. The same as before.—P.

sea. A. As before.—P. That no Italian, or

mentioned in the record. A. The same as

the king's household, in order to make ready

the judges it was enacted, "That all the jus-

out kissing him; and the same homage to be

given in the Abridgment of the Records. In

a particular nature, we must refer the curious

*A Parl. called.*] It was not till 3 years

sadors into France, as well upon a treaty of

the said marriage was contracted; and a suspension of arms, for a time, was granted. He

April.

*d Subsidy granted.*] This parl. being again

of a Subsidy of a 10th and a 15th, and half a

named, which were wasted. A subsidy or

affair of the peace with France; and we find

of the king and the whole parl. made a protes-

enacted, by the authority aforesaid, "That the statute made of H. V. importing, That no

that now is, and was then called the dauphin of

parl. seems to have been calculated for a com-

house, and made a declaration of his services

Id. the qr. made perpetual.—' No m

s and bailiffs fo

n several cases limited.'—' An act for the

and 3 other letters patents under the seal only

Eton college, founded 20 H. VI. with all the

also the like letters patents of the king's, made for the erecting and endowing a college (king's

; and she a shameful penance and a

*A Parl. call'd.*] This disappointment did

charge of high treason, and committed to close
custody. Accordingly writs were issued out

of state no doubt, other writs were dispatched
after them to summon the same peers, by

2 kinds of counsels; the 1st, of the wicked, ut-

num monet; cogitationes ejus a generatione ad

suing the commons to chuse, and present their

ing appointed; on the 2d day the commons

is mentioned in Cotton is little or nothing to

this parl.: except another article, viz. "That
it is by the king enacted, that Eleanor, the late
wife of the duke of Gloucester, shall be utterly

fully kept out of the Records, the more gene-

*The D. of Gloucester arrested and murdered.*]
"With the new year," says Daniel, "the

Bury; and that the duke of Gloucester might

wealth, hearkened to the caution, and with

things went well enough, and the ceremonies

to know what new matter was found out

Eleanor his wife at liberty. A ridiculous time; in which, because no signs of a violent

ed in private it was not safe to determine by

soon after, revenged upon his enemies; the

in the arbitrary manner they did. In a small

that the King was really a good man, but fitter for a cloister than a palace, therefore the kingdom was to be put into better hands than

the crown was his right; and hoped, that the ol-

order to keep up a connection in history; and to shew, at what time those great disputes be-

*A Parl. called.*] It was 2 years after the

informed us.

*A Speaker chosen, and a Subsidy and Poll-tax*

who was allowed; and soon after, a grant of a

nage and poundage, for 5 years to come, on

as otherwise. Authority was likewise given to

made to the king of half a 10th and a whole

subsidy on wools was granted for 4 years, as

*Normandy lost.*] A message from the duke

that if a war should happen, then the country

subsidies, a considerable reinforcement was [illegible] that place.

[illegible]

[illegible] by free deed, copy, grant of annuity, or office, [illegible]

[illegible] of Southampton [illegible]

might be committed to safe custody; but the lords and judges, upon consultation, "thought [illegible] declared, "That the duke of Suffolk, as it was [illegible] the castle of Wallingford with all warlike munition; whereupon, at the Speaker's request, [illegible]

[illegible] John to her; and thereby for want of issue of [illegible] to depose the [illegible] the delivery of [illegible] Orleans, [illegible] with him to raise the [illegible] the king of Sicily the king's enemy, without [illegible]—IV. For [illegible] French nation.—V. For betraying to the French the strength of the king's castles, ordnance, and munition, beyond sea.—VI. That the said duke, by discovering the king's secrets, caused the peace to be broken.—VII. That the said duke supported the king's enemies, [illegible] have passed [illegible]—VIII. That the said duke has strengthened the king's enemies against him, by not compromising in the last peace the king's [illegible], and the [illegible]." All which articles, the commons require to be enrolled, and that process may be awarded thereon.

March 9th, the commons made a new [illegible] against the duke, in effect following. [illegible] for procuring the king, in his [illegible] year, to give away the inheritance and lands of the crown. For procuring many liberties in derogation of the common law, and hindrance of justice. For causing the king to [illegible] the castle of Mau[illegible] de Soul, and [illegible] territories in Guienne. For that the earl of Armagnac and other nobles of Guienne, were drawn from their obedience to the king, by the said duke's [illegible] of secrets, [illegible] For procuring the king to grant [illegible] of Normandy, [illegible] Orleans, [illegible] without the assent of the council. For that the duke procured the king, in his own presence, to promise [illegible] tion in France, to the king's subversion if it had [illegible] curing himself to be made earl of Pembroke, [illegible] staying the process of outlawry against Wm. [illegible] of murder. For procuring a pardon to the [illegible] On the same day the duke of Suffolk [illegible] at Westminster, before the king and lords; to whom the articles aforesaid were rehearsed, who desired a copy of them, which was granted. And [illegible]

March [illegible], the said duke appeared before the lords, and on his knees [illegible] truth of the first 8 articles of treason against him; and offered to prove them false in any manner the king should appoint. The [illegible] impossible [illegible] of Warwick's [illegible] at the time [illegible] referred himself to the king's letters patent, to some acts of the council. To the [illegible] up of Anjou and Main, he referred to [illegible] acts of the council; which shew, that other lords were privy thereto, as well as [illegible] and said that the same was [illegible] bishop of Chichester, then keeper of the privy seal.

March 17th, the said duke was brought [illegible] before the lords, to whom the chancellor [illegible] answer had been made, and [illegible] that therein he had not put himself upon his peerage, and asked the duke what he would [illegible] who, kneeling, said, [illegible] he had answered [illegible] the king's mercy and [illegible] Thereupon the chancellor, by the king's [illegible], pronounced this sentence, "That [illegible] the duke did not put himself upon his peerage, [illegible] contained in the first bill, would be doubtful. And as to the articles of misprision, [illegible]

[illegible] by the advice of the lords, that it is [illegible] committed [illegible] for 5 years from the [illegible] —After [illegible] and Beaumont, [illegible] the following [illegible] granted, "[illegible] [illegible] and [illegible] assent, at [illegible] that [illegible] nor their [illegible] be barren of their [illegible] and [illegible]." The foregoing [illegible] the [illegible] from the [illegible] the [illegible] proceeding from the [illegible] who was [illegible] might not longer [illegible] the [illegible] in English [illegible] and [illegible] of a [illegible]-boat and his body [illegible] own [illegible].

*[illegible].]* A par[illegible] was called to meet at Westminster, on the [illegible]th of Nov. 1453 [illegible] list [illegible].

*Peers summoned to the Parliament.*

Henry, [illegible]
[illegible] of Norfolk
[illegible] of Buckingham
[illegible] of Somerset
[illegible] of Warwick
[illegible] earl of Northumberland
[illegible] of Devonshire
[illegible] of Arundel
[illegible] earl of Westmorland
[illegible] of Shrewsbury
[illegible] earl of Oxford
[illegible] of Worcester
[illegible] of Wilt[illegible]
[illegible] Beaumont
[illegible] Berkeley
[illegible] Grey of Ruthin
[illegible]
[illegible] Hungerford
[illegible]
[illegible] Greystock
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] lord Dacres, of [illegible]
[illegible] Beauchamp
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] Zouch, of [illegible]
John, lord Scroop, of [illegible]
[illegible] Fitzhugh

Henry, lord Scroop, of [illegible]
Leonard, lord Welles
John, lord Clinton
Walter, lord [illegible]
Edward Nevile, lord Bergavenny
[illegible] Willoughby
Thomas, lord [illegible]
Henry, Viscount Bourchier
[illegible], lord Brooke, of Cobham
John [illegible], of Lisle
[illegible], lord [illegible]
[illegible] Wilton
[illegible] lord Stourton
[illegible]
William Bourchier, ld. Fitzwarren
[illegible] Beaumont
[illegible], Vesey
[illegible] Roos
[illegible] Hungerford, of [illegible]
[illegible] lord Boteler, of Sudley
[illegible] Gray of Richmond
William Beauchamp, lord St. Amand
[illegible] Percy, ld. [illegible]
John Sutton, l. Dudley
[illegible] lord [illegible]

[illegible] prelates, clergy, [illegible] the Painted Chamber at Westminster, John Kemp, cardinal, abp. of York, [illegible] chancellor [illegible] the [illegible] [illegible] was [illegible] the [illegible] and [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] of [illegible] and [illegible] the [illegible] to choose and present [illegible].

[illegible].] But, according to the Record, it was [illegible] in November [illegible], [illegible] the commons presented sir William Oldhall, knight, to be their Speaker, [illegible] allowed with the [illegible]. The first thing we find that this parliament [illegible] was [illegible] several [illegible] and regulations [illegible] the [illegible] and [illegible], the [illegible] not mentioned in the Abridgment. Nor is any thing else given us from the Record, except a complaint and appeal for a murder, though this session [illegible]; when, on the 17th of [illegible] the presence of the king and the three estates, prorogued the parl. to the same place, on the [illegible]; [illegible] on the 20th day of April, it was also [illegible] to the 5th of May [illegible].

*A Monopoly granted, in order to raise Money.]* The first thing that we find now in this [illegible] 1000 [illegible], [illegible] was enacted, "that they shall be allowed to [illegible] they be [illegible]." Also it was enacted, "that certain merchants of the [illegible] [illegible] buy or sell [illegible] the [illegible]." [illegible] strange Mon[illegible] [illegible] of the [illegible] and state [illegible] at that time.

*The Commons desire the removal of most of the [illegible].]* [illegible] most of [illegible] [illegible] that [illegible] Suffolk, Wm. bp. of Chester, sir John Sutton, baron [illegible], John [illegible], [illegible] Myners, John Blackwell, John Pencrike, John [illegible] usher of the [illegible] chamber, [illegible]

[illegible] day the duke of York stood up in the house of lords, and acquainted their lordships, "that [illegible]

The advice of all the judges being taken in [illegible] only they said that a general *supersedeas* of the parliament there was not, but a special there was; in which case of special *supersedeas*, every [illegible] joy the same; unless it be in cases of treason, felony, surety of the peace, or for a condemnation [illegible] sent a committee of their own house to the [illegible] to chuse a new Speaker. Accordingly a com[illegible] fell dangerously sick at Clarendon; his sickness continued a long time, but, at last, he [illegible] the name of Edward. A committee of the [illegible] two articles; the 1st, to know who should be [illegible] to know whether certain lords, there named, [illegible] committee reported to the whole house, "that [illegible] sor, and after 3 several repairs thither, and [illegible]

*The D. of York appointed Protector.*] And [illegible] shall please the king, the said duke thereupon [illegible]

[illegible] r thus, [illegible] and inward rebellion; but no authority of go[illegible] it, after which an act shall be made to settle [illegible]

[illegible] it appears, says a late historian, that it was be[illegible] prince, as in the 1 H. VI. with the yearly fee [illegible] learning to ride and such other exercises: pro[illegible] queen Margaret, the sum of 1000 l. yearly, for her life, out of the customs and subsidy of wools in the port of Southampton; besides sundry manors and hereditaments in the coun[illegible] parliament.

[illegible] earl made a public declaration of his loyalty [illegible] it, as a knight should do; on which the lords wholly acquitted him, as a loyal subject.

[illegible] subsidies; finally, they required that a grave, [illegible]

[illegible] specified; to which they had answers given them. But Rd. duke of York, being appointed [illegible]

[illegible] out; but only raised an army, under pretence of reforming abuses in the government. "The [illegible]

[illegible] land; Rd the present duke, being great grand- [illegible]

[illegible] the three Henrys derived their right to the [illegible]

[illegible] certain; but the former is apparently false, by [illegible]

[illegible] thing should be done against him; for the [illegible]

[illegible] taken no notice of it, we may well suppose it [illegible]

[illegible]

It is certain, however, that the duke of [illegible]

[illegible] suntide together at London; where it was resolved to call a parl. to settle and compose [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] Writs were accordingly issued out for summoning a parl. dated May [illegible]

[illegible] parl. and took for his theme, &c. "other report [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] unto the age of 14; for the which diet, the [illegible] of the king's household.—A general act of re- [illegible]

And after all this business was transacted, [illegible] though we hear no more of a meeting of this [illegible] cording to the will of the conquering lords, [illegible]

[illegible] realm. That all manner of alienations and [illegible] treason, in coming against the king in a war- [illegible] malicious and evil design, kept a letter, sent by [illegible] have taken away [illegible] was in a manner put into the hands of the [illegible] ingratiate themselves with the people. [illegible] was, continued on its basis but for a short time, [illegible] she had then several very eminent lords in her interest; and, being a lady of a masculine spi- [illegible] before it was prorogued: as it is particularly [illegible] up. See Hollingshead, p. 646. [illegible] fered to reconcile them. A grand meeting of

and there, sword-in-hand, as it were, a seem-

which are contained in 8 articles. Which

a peaceable manner after this but a very short time; for the same year an affray happening

appease it. Taking this as a design of the

new commotion. The civil war was again en-

pected, the king's proclamation of a general

a victory, without bloodshed, came to Co-

Coventry, the lords and commons being, also,

made a notable declaration, says our autho-

and pass a Bill of Attainder against Rd. duke of York, and others, his accomplices. The

"A commemoration of the king's great care in bringing the said duke up from a child;

bestowed upon him. Next, the confederation

coming out of Ireland with forces, even, into

due obedience, with a remuneration of divers benefits bestowed upon them after. The ambition of the said duke and earls; their now

readiness in getting together from a great dis-

sons to the said earl; Tho. Parkin, Wm. Stan-

heath, in Staffordshire, by the said earl; and

offered to them, and their refusal. The as-

Parr, knights; John Bourchier and Edw. Bour-

[illegible]

utterly void; except certain persons there

[illegible]

the chancellor, in the presence of the king and

[illegible]

theme, 'congregate populum, & sanctificate

[illegible]

w arrived at the moment when H

[illegible]

king's serjeants, and the attorney-general, to

which an order was made, that every peer

monly called duke of York, gave to the objections aforesaid, was as follows: 1st. "That

Hen. IV. touching a general tail by him a

and of England; only he forbore the same for a time, as he did his claim to the crown. The 5th, being a manifest, and an approved un-

After this Answer of the duke, to the objec-

was drawn up in form following: "That the

life. That the said duke should be from

clear yearly value of 10,000 marks; that is,

lords, in fu

o de-

The king, on his own free motion, and the

the award aforesaid; provided the

marks as aforesaid; in which grant are some provisoes, particularly for the dutchy of Lan-

to the crown; by which also a power was given

had caused him to call a parl they sent mes-

says our author, needs no spurs; the duke pre-

sounding, a naked sword borne before him, a

placed himself on the king's seat or throne;

of that action. At that instant, Thomas Bourings, breaking open several doors and locks for entrance. He staid there but a little while,

the regal authority of England, in a speech for

Devonshire, the lord Clifford, and a consider-

into the north, and, leaving Henry to the care

ing to be cooped up in a castle by a woman,

Salisbury, with many more of note; but none

be struck off, crowned with paper in derision,

jects.

pital, where he was joyfully received; and

which his father had so long been endeavour-

year; upon condition, that foreign merchants

3s. a tun for all wine imported, and 1s. in the

was a kind of a Poll-Tax on every parish that

king a grant of tunnage and poundage, to con-for two years, with a subsidy of the like value

man holding a knight's fee, and according to

and so according to rate: but this was after-

his oath; and a 10th and a 15th was granted on the laity. A subsidy also on every sack of

also granted for 3 years; and that all aliens,

10th and a 15th, and a half of both, was grant-

king for four years.—In his 27th year a grant of a 10th and half a 15th, to be levied on the laity, passed both houses; with a grant also of

made of half a 10th and a whole 15th. Like-

so born, and no householder; with 6s. 8d. of

yearly, 12d. in the pound: from 200l. and upwards 2s. for every pound, as well laity as clergy; guardians of wards, men having fees,

" In his 20th, or according to some au-

free and voluntary: they were called 'liberalitas populi' by Richard I. 'caritas' by such

confession, 'ex spontanea voluntate, ac de

their own charges, to attend his wars; but that

liament, a very particular account of this mo-

[illegible]

rate estate. His debts, at the same time, [illegible]

[illegible] lish history, of a debt being contracted on that [illegible]

*Reign of Henry VI.; by which a better* [illegible]

In 1423, wheat sold for 8s. a qr. and malt [illegible]

for 2s. 2d. a qr.; and for 3d. & 1-8th a bushel. An ox's hide for 2s. 5d. A cow's hide for 1s. 3½d. and for 1s. 7½d. A calf's skin for 3½d. Twenty-one lambs for 1s. A dozen of sheep-skins for 3s. A tod of pure wool for [illegible]

sold for 5s. A gallon of ale for 1½d. Red wine at 8d. a gallon, or flaggon. Sweet wine at 1s. 4d. A stone cutter for a day's labour 4d. A tyler 3½d. A sawyer 4d. For twenty pul- [illegible]

For 4 qrs of wheat to be malted 10s. For a [illegible]

a qr. of wheat 8½d For 8 woodcocks for a [illegible]

of Worcester's servants 5s. For one man [illegible]

[illegible]

gallon; and bay salt 1s. a bushel. See Fabian, [illegible]

young swans, each 3s. For a flitch of bacon [illegible]

For 26 warp of ling 1l. 10s. 4d. For 100 stockfish 17s 6d. For a barrel of herrings, [illegible]

or 3 bushel of green pease, for seed, 2s. 3d. [illegible]

A cade of red herrings 5s. 8d. A barrel of [illegible]

the qr. 5s. A cade of red herrings 6s. A bar- [illegible]

For a barrel of white herrings 13s. 7d.—In [illegible]

cades of red herrings, at [illegible] 192 white her- [illegible]

1 Hen. VI.—1. Touching the mints at York

2 Hen. VI.—1. Confirmation of liberties

out of the realm. 7. Against cordwainers

money called blanks.—A penalty on deceit-

white money according to the indenture. 13.

nants have lost by default. 17. Persons in-

3 Hen. VI.—1. Against chapiters and congregations of masons. 2. Against the carry-

4 Hen. VI.—1. Concerning the duty of

records. 4. Suits and writs against certain

firmation of the statute 17 R. 2, c. 7. touch-

6 Hen. VI.—1 Touching process upon in-

nishment of labourers taking more. 4. Con-

veying them to Calais.

8 Hen. 6.—1. For the Liberties of the

4. Against retainers, and giving of liberties.

sons dwelling in foreign counties. 11. For

against embezzling them. 13. Touching pro-

county of Hereford. 9. A weigh of cheese

[illegible]

Southwark, and prohibiting them to be im- [illegible]

[illegible]

mation of a statute 8 H. 6, concerning the [illegible]

[illegible]

may give judgment, as well where traitors and [illegible]

victed. 2. Against licenses for shipping of [illegible]

tices of peace in Middlesex may keep their [illegible]

[illegible]

durst. 4. None shall sue forth a subpœna, [illegible]

[illegible]

peals or indictments supposed in a place where [illegible]

outlawed in Lancashire shall forfeit any other [illegible]

[illegible] and-peace by the lords of Nor- [illegible] Concerning wages for servants of husbandry and labourers. 13. Against purveyors. 14. [illegible] and the office of gaugers. 16. Concerning in- [illegible] 17. No new impositions shall be laid [illegible]

25 Hen. VI.—Against Welshmen.

27 Hen. VI.—1. Restraint of importation of the produce of Brabant, &c. 2. Confir- [illegible] for occupying above a year. 4. Touching [illegible] 2. Touching process against breakers of truce. 3. For repealing of letters patents made to citizens of York.

[illegible] Hen. VI.—1. Confirmation of the attainder of Jack Cade. 2. Against rioters [illegible] who having a safe conduct, is robbed upon [illegible] nager, &c. shall have any estate certain in his office. 6. For the making perpetual the statute of 20 Hen. 6, c. 2, touching the for- [illegible] cashire. 7. Exceptions out of the general resumption. 8. An act qualifying a subsidy [illegible] cloth transported. 9. A remedy for a woman [illegible] against her will to be bound by statute or obligation.

33 Hen. VI.—1. A remedy for executors against servants, which embezzled their masters [illegible] 3. Against extortions of the officers of the exchequer. 4. Concerning brewers in Kent. [illegible] abbot of Fountaine in Yorkshire. 7. Touch- [illegible]

39 Hen. VI.—1. Revocation of a parliament [illegible] Coventry [illegible]

[illegible]

## EDWARD IV.

Edward having thus obtained the title of king, *vi et armis*, as it were, had yet much to [illegible] the red-rose party; fighting for a king who had [illegible] it immediately, and march towards York. [illegible] important post of Ferrybridge; but the York- [illegible] queen's army, drawn up in order of battle, in the fields near a village called Touton, about [illegible] victorious, after the loss of above 36,000 Eng- [illegible] Scotland; and Edward marched into York, [illegible] most mortal enemies of his house, who were taken or slain in the battle. Edward stayed some time at York to fix the northern pro- [illegible] every thing quiet in those countries, he re- [illegible] remonies.

*A Parl. called.*] Then to settle all other [illegible] tion, he summoned a parl. by writs, dated at [illegible] same place the 6th of July following. But, because the king of Scots was entered into England with an army in favour of king Henry, [illegible] pone the meeting of the parl.; and, by other [illegible] mons, directed to Tho. abp. of Canterbury, is [illegible] but the names of the latter, in this first parl

[illegible]

[illegible] d fitters, [illegible] Jn. Fortescue,' Wm. Talbois, and others, [illegible] 10th of June last past. And the duke of Exeter aforesaid, Jasper, earl of Pembroke, and others, were attainted for raising war [illegible] feiture of all and singular the hereditaments [illegible] went upon acts of Restitution; and the whole [illegible] pealed. The like judgment in parl. against [illegible] Tho. lord Despencer, was made void; and [illegible] said Thomas, in right of the said Ann, was [illegible]

[illegible] and ye that be commyn [illegible]

[illegible] that ye have born and susteyned towards me, [illegible] which y now posede, y thanke you with all my herte, and yf y had eny better good to re[illegible] tens and good contynuance, as y shall be unto [illegible] lord."

[illegible] summons to a parl. at York, to be held the 5th of Feb. 2 Edw. IV. and another the same [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] However Cotton gives us [illegible] summons in a set speech; after which he dis[illegible]

[illegible]

*A Subsidy granted.*] The only material [illegible] grant the king an aid of 37,000l. to be levied in the counties, cities, and towns, according to [illegible] king's kinsman, by his letters patents, held and continued the parl.; and the same day [illegible] 6000l. parcel of the grant aforesaid; whereupon it was enacted that 31,000l. shall be levied in the manner of a 15th, and be called by [illegible] name, and as his lieut. adjourned the said [illegible] abp. of York, the king's commissioner, by letters [illegible] ment is said, in the Abridgment, to be, because that some conspiracies and rebellions being raised against the king in Gloucestershire [illegible]

On the [illegible] mission under the privy seal, adjourned the same accordingly. The cause of which last [illegible] f the kingdom against a foreign [illegible] as before, the parl. once more met, when the [illegible] diness of the times.

*A Subsidy granted for Life.*] On the 26th [illegible] to the king, which was done too in a very ef[illegible] granted to the king, [illegible]

dies following: first, tonnage and poundage of every English merchant, for every sack of [illegible] 33s. 4d.: for every last of hides, 3l. 6s. 8d.; [illegible] wool-fells, 3l. 6s. 8d. with a proviso only [illegible] part of the said subsidies according to a rate there stated."—It was also ordained, "That the treasurer of Calais be obliged, under a pe[illegible]

[illegible]

That author tells us, "that this was the richest [illegible] officer of the Staple for cloth, that he would [illegible] another place, he tells us, "that it is almost [illegible]

[illegible] Lancaster, and the earldom of Chester; from [illegible] March, be also void; but with many provisos.

[illegible] them a power to take a yearly rate out of the [illegible]

*Sumptuary Laws passed.*] There were several statutes made in this and the preceding sessions of this long parl. for [illegible]

[illegible] of the woollen manufactory, and trade in general; which the reader will find in the statute-books. One or two, however, de- [illegible] which, notwithstanding the destruction and [illegible] was grown to a very great height. One thing in [illegible] the beaks or pikes of their shoes so long, that [illegible] were forced to tie them up to their knees. The gentlemen did it with chains of silver, or silver gilt; and those who could not afford to be at that charge, with silk laces. This ridiculous fashion had been in some measure used [illegible] curtailed to two inches, under a penalty both [illegible]

Likewise, during one of these sessions of parl. a convocation met at London, in which the clergy very willingly gave a 10th to the crown, in acknowledgment for an extensive [illegible] There was also a constitution passed, for the regulation of the clergy's habits.

*A Parl. called.*] In 1467, a parl. was summoned, by writs dated at Westminster, the [illegible] the 3rd of June following. In the presence of the king, sitting on the throne, in the Painted [illegible] chancellor of England, by the king's command, [illegible] cordingly, sir John Say, knight, was presented, and accepted by the king.

*The King's Speech.*] After which, the King, with his own mouth, made the following oration [illegible]

[illegible] realm: the cause why I have cald and summoned this my present parl. is, that I purpose [illegible] subjects but in great and urgent causes, con- [illegible] done, and borne unto my progenitors in time of need; wherein I trust that yee, sirs, and all [illegible] tours. And for the good will, kindness, and true hearts that yee have [illegible] thanke you as heartily as I can: also I trust [illegible] same."

[illegible] in effect as the last parl.; also another, that the king should for ever enjoy all such heredi- [illegible] the 30th Dec. 39 Hen. VI. any grant to the [illegible] against the said Leonard, 1 Edw. IV. As was [illegible] king, lords, and commons, first answered certain petitions from the lower house, and then [illegible] that his maj. desired there might be a due ex- [illegible] from thence the said chancellor again prorogued this parl. by the king's command, from [illegible] sit at that place; for the chancellor, at their [illegible]

[illegible] For, five days after this meeting, the king sent [illegible] comprehended the govt. of this land; the pre- [illegible] wasted in its treasures; the laws wrecked; and the whole, by the usurpation, in a manner [illegible] of the crown of England lost also; and further, [illegible] appeased all tumults within the realm; and [illegible] made peace with Scotland; that the lord Winters was negociating a league with Spain and Denmark, so as to open a free commerce with [illegible] ing the strongest assurance of acting vigorously against France, for the recovering of that [illegible] nity, and such a one as never happened be- [illegible] son in so just a cause. Lastly, he told them, [illegible] 12,000l. to be deducted out of it, for the relief [illegible] seisin of the same; and that the queen might personally plead and be impleaded in her own [illegible] of 10,000l. paid in part of a greater sum, due [illegible]

[illegible] able enough: "that a bill was brought in this [illegible] says Wm. Prynne, [illegible] a traitor, and be burned for the same; and [illegible]

*Edw. forced to leave the kingdom, and Henry VI. restored.*] [illegible] for, soon after the dissolution of this parl. [illegible] Westminster, Aug. 10, for a parl. to meet at [illegible] strument to be, "because the king was certainly informed that rebels, enemies at home, [illegible] Scotland, had entered this kingdom in a hostile [illegible] invaded it, &c."

*A Parl. called.*] Historians inform us that [illegible] Henry from a prison to a throne, from whence he was called, "The setter up and puller down of kings," a parl. was called to meet at West- [illegible] traitor to his country; an usurper of the crown; and had all his goods confiscated; the like judgment passed against his brother [illegible] Henry and his heirs male; and, for want of [illegible] the earl of Warwick, was made Protector of [illegible] has given us the summons to this parl. the [illegible] of it in the Abridgment of the Records.

*Edw. restored, and Henry's death.*] How [illegible] lasted but a small time; for the fugitive Edw. [illegible] seemed to lay aside his claim to the crown; [illegible] owned their gates to him; the earl of Warwick was not there, but Henry fell once more [illegible] was advancing towards London, with a power- [illegible] meeting, a dreadful battle ensued; where, [illegible] that battle. In a few weeks after this, ano- [illegible] tween king Edw. and the martial queen Margaret, where the heroine was also defeated; her son prince Edw. made a prisoner and destroyed; all the nobility and gentry with her [illegible] death of the pious Henry; said to have [illegible] Rd. duke of Gloucester, king Edw.'s brother.

[illegible] we meet with any more parliaments; when [illegible] Westminster the ninth of Aug. for a parl. to [illegible]

The following is a List of the

*Peers summoned to this Parliament.*

| | |
|---|---|
| Rd. d. of Gloucester | John e. of Shrewsbury |
| John duke of Norfolk | John earl of Wiltshire |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] Wes- | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] Nor- | [illegible] |
| [illegible] | [illegible] Grey, |
| [illegible] Rivers | of Wales |

[illegible] tenements. The lords spiritual and temporal [illegible] also tax themselves, by way of grant unto [illegible]

The commons then, by a long Protestation de- [illegible]

[illegible] of Wales and earl of Chester, were confirmed [illegible]

[illegible] one 10th and one 15th, reserving out of it 6000l. to be distributed to certain decayed [illegible] first session of this parl. be paid into the hands of the treasurer of England. Also in consi- [illegible] the king by a long act granted to them a 15th, [illegible]

Edw. IV.—On the 8th of April aforesaid, the [illegible]

[illegible] 'That the [illegible], on any urgent occa-sion [illegible] [illegible] said parl. giving notice, by [illegible].'

On [illegible] of Oct. this parl. met again, and [illegible] to the 13th of Dec. ensuing. During which [illegible] were [illegible] between the [illegible] of [illegible] of these nations, [illegible] of the Scotch [illegible] the other party, [illegible] certain matters [illegible] either [illegible]. The king [illegible] arguments [illegible] of the Scotch [illegible] to make [illegible] every [illegible] by [illegible] that all [illegible] to these [illegible] of the [illegible] Edw. II when [illegible] as they were then [illegible] and the king's [illegible] to [illegible] the [illegible] by this parl.

[illegible] *Act of Resumption.*] A new Act of Resumption was made whereby the king took into his hands [illegible] the crown, [illegible] the duchies of Lancaster and York, from the feast [illegible] in the year 1473, and [illegible] was seized March 4th, same year [illegible] came into the king's hands [illegible] otherwise. And a special [illegible] to the chancellor of the county of Lancaster, for [illegible] the [illegible] of the king's [illegible] granted out [illegible], under the seal of that office. [illegible] provisos, particularly one that the same should not prejudice the corporations, [illegible] annexation of the duchy of Lancaster and county palatine, nor the [illegible] of these districts. Several provisos were also made to particular persons by name in this resumption, amongst [illegible] one [illegible] to Eliza-beth the king's best beloved wife, and queen of England.

On [illegible] of Dec. the bp. of Durham, [illegible], after giving thanks, [illegible] by his command, to the [illegible], prorogued this parl. once more to the [illegible] 1474.—We learn, that the [illegible] on the day [illegible] to sit [illegible] the 1st of [illegible] of Durham, as [illegible] before the king and [illegible] assembled to [illegible] proceed [illegible] Burgundy, [illegible] perpe-[illegible] king's command that this parl. should be prorogued to the 9th of May en-suing."

At the time appointed by the last proroga-tion [illegible] Westminster [illegible] Cla-rence and Isabel his wife, and to his other brother Rd. duke of Gloucester and An[illegible] wife, daughter and heir to Rd. N[illegible] earl of Warwick, and daughters [illegible] Ann countess of Warwick [illegible] should enjoy to them, and the heirs [illegible] as the hereditaments [illegible] the said Ann, in such wise as if the [illegible] was naturally dead; and that the [illegible] to the said Ann [illegible] accordingly, she being for[illegible] barred from claiming the same. [illegible] both the said dukes and [illegible] the [illegible] and the [illegible] of both, may make part[illegible] the premises to stand good in law [illegible] the said dukes or either of them, [illegible] wife, should [illegible]. That all [illegible] and [illegible], suffered by either of [illegible] wives, to debar the [illegible] the said [illegible], shall be [illegible]. Moreover, that if the said duke of Gl[illegible] be at [illegible] divorced from [illegible] Ann his wife, and [illegible] such means as above, that it should be void. And [illegible] that if the said duke Rd. upon [illegible] his uttermost to be re[illegible] [illegible] after the death [illegible] her property.—The [illegible] of the [illegible] made to the mayor and [illegible] of the staple at Calais, 13 Edw. IV [illegible], and it was further [illegible] "That the [illegible], during the [illegible], [illegible] for the [illegible] rewards of the king's judges, [illegible] and attornies."

This session only continued to the 2[illegible] May, when the bp. of Lincoln, as chan[illegible], prorogued the parl. to the 6th of [illegible] ensuing. At which time, besides reversing attainders of a few more gentlemen, and other acts on private affairs, a [illegible] granted by the commons to the [illegible] 10th and one 15th; also 51.117l. 4s. 7[illegible] payment for the wages of 14,000 [illegible] granted before; and for the raising [illegible] every county, city, and town was [illegible] taxed. And on July 18th, the aforesaid chan-cellor, by the king's command, prorogued the parl. to the 23d of Feb. next ensuing at Westminster.

This parl. being again assembled, on the 23rd of Feb. 1475, an ordinance was [illegible] made by [illegible] for the speedy [illegible] 15th, on all revenues granted in the [illegible] of this reign. The whole business of this [illegible] seems, by the Records, to be taken up with Attainders and revoking Attainders, G[illegible] forfeited Estates, &c. the fatal consequences of civil wars. However, we find in the Statute Books several acts, made for the public [illegible], in the different sessions of this long p[illegible] which we must also refer. Before its dissolu-tion, the commons made another grant to the king of one 10th, and one 15th, with [illegible] of them. Which grant being read, [illegible] agreed to by the lords, the [illegible] chancellor [illegible] 14th day of March, by the king's command duration; they having sat, with the several

to a happy conclusion."

ferent purpose than to be spent in a pompous parade. A war with France, on the old quarrel, was what all wished for; and it was with great

nisters from being called to an account, at his return; being greatly suspected that they had

man remarks, "that surely there is some an-

nation against the French; the Saxon government having once received a final overthrow

Or else, it would be a wonder why the English

ing well the fickleness of the nation; how

parl. to lay on any new subsidy, but took

sary. Under the force of a statute, which had

*A Parl. called.*] It was not till near 3 years

tions the proceedings of a parl. held a West-

of Edw. IV.; and our Statute Books, by a re-

minster; when Thos. Rotheram, bp. of Lin-

Upon which he largely treated "of the obedient; particularising that saying of St. Paul,

commons, 'si dominus regit me nihil mihi

or quechbord, on pain of 2 years imprisonment, and forfeiture of 40l.; and whosoever

games in his house or other place, shall suffer 3 years imprisonment, and forfeit 20l. A long

grown to a very great extravagance. An act was made to repeal a parl. holden 9 Edw. IV.

the next parl. "to oblige all Irishmen born, or

or else to pay yearly a certain sum there rated, for the defence of the same." Also, "that an ordinance was made for John Atwill, a burgess in this parl. for the city of Exeter,

on 8 several informations, at the suit of John

asked or granted this parl.; some other necessities of state requiring this meeting; and the

nues.

*A Quarrel between the King and the duke of Clarence.*] About this time a discord arose

tion of the latter. "It was observed, says practised; by which the duke had lost the no-

and heir, by Margaret, king Edward's sister,

the king, says our authority, not willing his ungrateful brother should gain such a fortune.

and they began to regard one another with no

Stacey having passed a severe examination, on

condemned to suffer death for it. Being drawn

words of Susanna, 'Ecce morior, cum nihil

Westminster, and brought with him a famous

into a vehement passion at his brother; and

the king, with his own mouth, "accused the duke of many articles, particularly the last mentioned; aggravating it vehemently against him as a reprobate to the laws of the land,

'mens refugit enarrare;' since it was a mean

and therefore proceeded to condemnation the

other house, when a rehearing of the whole

a few days; but what kind of death he suf-

*Bill of Attainder against the d. of Clarence.*

him; which, as it lays the matter fully open,

tainder, according to the form, are crimes

notorious treasons; but suborned many of his

money, to divulge the like seditious discourses:

that the king dealt by necromancy; and that

his life, published that the king was a bastard their estates; and in particular to revenge

an exemplification under the great seal of Hen.

possession of the crown; which afterwards

*A Parl. called.*] It was not till 5 years af-

York, Tho. Rotheram, lord chanc. opened the session by a speech on this subject, 'Dominus

is, that the commons voted a supply; and

temporal, a 10th and a 15th, to be levied on the laity, was granted; except a deduction of

a yearly subsidy to be levied on all strangers,

proclaimed and duly observed.—A yearly rent,

that a very large grant to Rd. duke of Glouces-

castle; with several of the king's here lan-

in Cumberland; and several countries and

*A sumptuary Law.*] Some acts are, also,

estate, were allowed to wear. Also, "That none, under the degree of a lord, except cer-

having a mind to break the truce, first de-

of France. Other foreign concerns relating to

he found himself necessitated to call a parl

from the powers abovementioned: and begged

ties, in a kind manner; and they, with as [illegible] shall give in his own words. "O servile, per- [illegible]

[illegible] a parl. at Westminster, Jan. 20. in the 23d year of this king. But there are no proceedings of such a parl. on record; it is probable [illegible] pened soon after. For he died at his palace [illegible]

*Taxes in the Reign of Edw. IV.*

[illegible] him an aid of 37,000l. to be levied according to a certain rate: but he afterwards released [illegible] merchant, for every sack of wool 33s. 4d.; for every 240 wool-fells 33s. 4d.; for every last of hides 3l. 6s. 8d.; and of every merchant- [illegible] 3l. 16s. 4d.; for every 240 wool-fells 3l. 6s. 8d [illegible] Henry VI. was restored; but soon after Edward recovered the crown; and, in his 12th year the commons voted a supply of 14,000 [illegible] year, he had a 10th, a 15th, and a 3rd of each; [illegible] invention, called, 'A Benevolence.'—In his 22nd year he had a 10th and a 15th granted [illegible] granted a 10th.

*Price of Provisions in the Reign of Edw. IV.*

In 1463, wheat sold at London for 2s. a quarter: barley at 1s. 10d.; pease 3s. 4d.; oats 1s. 2d. Also in the same year in Norfolk, wheat sold for 1s. 8d.; barley 1s.; malt 1s. 8d.; oats 1s.—In 1464, white wheat sold [illegible] 1s. 10d. a quarter; and a load of hay for 6s. 8d.

[illegible]

[illegible] late kings of England, shall continue good and [illegible]

3 Edw. IV.—1. Concerning the windin[illegible] [illegible] tery of silk-workers. 4. Concerning certain [illegible] pass thereof. 8. Concerning horners in the [illegible] Dover.

[illegible] wardens of worsted weavers within the city of [illegible] act enabling the inhabitants of the hundreds [illegible] holden of a common person, coming to the [illegible]

8 Edw. IV.—1. The length, breadth, and [illegible] veries of company. 3. For jurors of Middle- [illegible] into this realm for every tun of merchandize. 5. For the true payment of a subsidy of ton- [illegible] the taking away of wears and fishgarths. 8. An [illegible]

[illegible]

2. For courts of pie-powders. 3. For unlawful games. 4. For making of tile. 5. For sealing of cloths. 6. A repeal of the parl. holden 9 Ed. 4, and 39 Hen. 6. 7. That the [illegible]

22 Edw. IV.—1. An act concerning apparel. 2. Touching the packing of barrelled fish. 3. For silk-workers. 4. Limiting the price of bows. 5. For fulling of hats and caps. 6. For swans. 7. For inclosing of woods in forests, chases, and purlieus. 8. For [illegible]

## [illegible]

[illegible] son Edward, then prince of Wales; who, from [illegible] of age. This is the preamble that the great sir Thos. More gives to his life and reign of this unfortunate young king; whose state and [illegible] that no parliament could be called, for he was [illegible] Therefore, to the particular writer abovemen[illegible] readers; since all that was done, in this short [illegible] Edward V. began his life and ended it in a [illegible] sanctuary, and died in a prison. He first saw [illegible] the kingdom, in Sept. 1470; and he was murdered in the tower of London, in July 1483, a little while after his uncle Richard's coro[illegible]

## [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] In the short reign of this [illegible] mons, directed to Thos. abp. of Canterbury, [illegible] the temporal lords, is as usual: the first writ [illegible] his father's second coronation in that city. He enjoyed this dignity but for a short time, for [illegible] of the peers, as they stand in Dugdale's cata[illegible]

[illegible]

Ralph earl of West- | Jn. l. Scroop, of Bolton

[illegible]

William earl of Hunt- | of Stanley

Thos. earl of Surrey | Jn. Blount l. Mountjoy

William earl of Not- | John Stourton lord

[illegible]

Reginald lord Grey, of Wilton | Wm. ld. Hastings, of Welles

[illegible]

*Names of the Judges summoned to this Parl.*

[illegible]

Sir Thomas Brian | Sir John Vavasour,

Sir William Jenny | Morgan Kidwelly, esq.

[illegible] the proceedings of this parl. The 'History of [illegible] these enquiries, relating to it: but there it is only cursorily mentioned; though some hints [illegible] almost incredible. It is there said, "That [illegible] puted before an assembly of laymen. And, though it was well known that such a court abrogate that act, but even to erase it from the trate this project, he took a resolution to add

their unnatural uncle, with all seeming tender-

them to take a new-coined oath, by whom

proceed.

kingdom any person in a condition to lift up

and traitors that were concerned in the duke

conspiracies, all the late executions were in
some measure justified; because still such as

ing the bill of Attainder. Many wholesome
laws were enacted in it; a plain evidence of

which is their standing unrepealed, in our Sta-

markable we shall mention. "1. That where-

burdened with a new imposition, called a Be-

shall have power to admit a prisoner, arrested

seize the goods of a prisoner, arrested for felony, till he be attainted. 3. That no person

lons; a pipe 126 gallons; a tertian 84 gallons;
a hogshead 63 gallons; a barrel 31½ gallons;
a rundlet 18½ gallons." The act against col-

sition called a Benevolence; whereby for di-

ter destruction; for divers and many worship-

ferred; and such memorials as they had or-

to procure more. "And," says the History of

we have else to say in this reign is, that a new

[illegible]

[illegible] *R*[illegible] *III*

[illegible] persons, suspected of felony, to bail, and to [illegible] officer shall seize the goods of a prisoner, until [illegible] of jurors in a sheriff's turn. 5. Those lands, [illegible] perpetual the statute of 17 Ed. 4. c. 2. touching [illegible] tain vessels of wine and oil. 14. For the be- [illegible] Edw. IV.

*Private Acts.*] 1 Rich. III.—1. Titulus Re- [illegible] John Gulford, and many more. 4. To enable [illegible] 11l. 12s. per an. out of the manor of Ifelde. [illegible] &c. 11. For James Tirrel, and Anne his wife, [illegible]

[illegible] of letters patent made by king Edw. IV. [illegible]

## [illegible] VII

*A Parl. called.*] Henry having taken pos[illegible] his coronation was performed in the usual [illegible] The next year, in order to gain a further sanction to his title, he called a parl. by writs bearing date at Westminster, Sept. 15, 1486, to [illegible] lowing. A list of the peers, on this other great [illegible]

*P*[illegible]

John duke of Suffolk
[illegible]
[illegible]
John earl of Oxford
[illegible]
[illegible] of N[illegible]tingham
[illegible]
Sir Thomas Brian
Sir Guy Fairfax
[illegible]

Richard lord Grey
[illegible]
[illegible]
John lord Broke of Cobham
[illegible]
John lord Stourton
[illegible]
Sir Humphrey Starky
John Sulyard
[illegible]

The great lord Bacon, in his "History of [illegible] we are persuaded that noble author's [illegible] were chiefly three; 1st, to procure the crown

[illegible]

no small number, reversed, and all acts of hos-

[illegible]

discharged; and, on the other side, to attaint

[illegible]

the rest of that party, by a general pardon; not being ignorant in how great danger a king

[illegible]

stand in his danger. Unto these 3 special motives of a parl. was added, that he, as a pru-

[illegible]

howsoever he came in by the sword; and it

[illegible]

ne not in the nature of special entail), he car-

[illegible]

base it by new law or ordinance; but close

[illegible]

was doubtful, or having it then in fact and

[illegible]

his body, not speaking of his right heirs; but leaving that to the law to decide; so as the entail might seem rather a personal favour to him and his children, than a total disinherison

[illegible]

by way of recital, of his other titles, both of

[illegible]

of three was made a wreathe of five, for to the

[illegible]

quest, were added two more, the authorities

[illegible]

"The king likewise in the reversal of the

[illegible]

being disabled in the highest degree: and that

[illegible]

lawed. The truth was, that divers of those

[illegible]

though it had a grave and specious shew, yet it

[illegible]

not understand it but as a case of law; and

[illegible]

who, for that purpose, were forthwith assem-

[illegible]

deliberation they gave a grave and safe opinence; which was, that the knights and bur-

[illegible]

forbear to come into the house, till a law were

[illegible]

wise was attainted; but it was with unanimous consent resolved, 'That the crown takes away

[illegible]

theless for honour's sake it was ordained by

[illegible]

"But on the part of the king's enemies,

[illegible]

against the king, the king upon a second ad-

[illegible]

the better, being matter of grace, to impro-

[illegible]

opportunity of a parliament-time, the better

[illegible]

subjects at this parl.; both because he had re- [illegible] But chiefly, for that it was in every man's eye, [illegible] the purses of his subjects; especially in a time [illegible] torn-sake; amongst which there was one, to [illegible] beginning he was not forgetful; and had been [illegible] or advancement in nobility of a few others the lord Chandos of Britain, was made earl of [illegible] had their turns in his nature, restore Edw. [illegible] only to his dignities, but to his fortunes and [illegible] first stone against the tyranny of king Rich. and indeed made the king a bridge to the [illegible] broke up."

*A Parl. called.*] In 1488 another parl. was [illegible] that, Tho. Morton, abp. of Canterbury and chancellor of England, declared the cause of the summons in words to this effect

[illegible] *Houses.*] "My lords and masters: the king's [illegible] parl. which I shall do in few words; craving pardon of his grace and you all, if I perform it not as I would. His grace doth first of [illegible] by you, at your last meeting, in establishment of his royalty; freeing and discharging of his [illegible] war first. The cause of this war he knoweth [illegible] aids or neutrality; the Brittons, aids simply; [illegible] church, hath offered himself as a mediator, to treat a peace between them. The French [illegible] treaty; not repenting of it, but despairing of [illegible] prayeth your advice; which is no other but [illegible] ings in this affair, the king hath commanded [illegible] what of the example of it in general; making [illegible] sireth to reign in peace. But his grace saith, [illegible] to change the inward troubles and sedi- [illegible]

---

[illegible] the usual tonnage and poundage, and the sub- [illegible]

[illegible] he hath been [illegible] bounden; the one having held over him his [illegible] ing betrayed; his grace would not in any sort [illegible] defacement of his former benefits; for that he [illegible] es the French king's intention is. For if it be [illegible] French king shall make a province of Brit- [illegible] such a country, that stretcheth his boughs unto [illegible] ant confederates; now the one being already [illegible] partly into that of Austria, the other is like wholly to be cast into the greatness of France; [illegible] France, as the world abroad conceive it will, [illegible]

[illegible] ample will be chiefly laid to the king's charge, [illegible] there is so fair a pretext on the French king's part (and yet pretext is never wanting to [illegible] prise seem rather a work of necessity than of ambition, as doth in reason correct the dan- [illegible] that which is done in a man's own defence cannot be dangerous, because it is in another's power to avoid it. But in all this business, [illegible] ture advice, whereupon he purposeth to rely. [illegible] That he thinketh there was never any king [illegible] wise in blessing him with so many good and [illegible] and try them; though the end hath been always [illegible] struction hath fallen upon their own heads. [illegible] houses, be supprest. The care hereof, which [illegible]

[illegible] and plenty: therefore his grace prays you, to [illegible]

[illegible] for that you know the King is a good husband, [illegible]

*A Supply voted for a War with France.*] [illegible] King a large supply for that purpose. According [illegible] ing lost a battle and soon after his life, the [illegible]

*Acts passed.*] Many excellent laws were [illegible] than give them in his own words as follow:

"First, the Authority of the Star-Chamber, [illegible] laws of the realm, was confirmed in certain [illegible] For in the distribution of courts of ordinary [illegible] pleas of the crown; the common place, pleas [illegible] and the chancery, the [illegible] of extremity, by the conscience of a good man: there was nevertheless always reserved a high [illegible] cil used to sit in the chamber, called the Star- [illegible] it consisteth of 4 kinds of persons; counsellors, [illegible] eth also principally of 4 kinds of causes; forces, [illegible] tudes, and maintenance or headship of great [illegible] what of a strange composition and temper; [illegible] degree of a lord, do conspire the death of any [illegible] procured by the lord chanc. who being a stern [illegible] safety; drowning the envy of it in a general [illegible] lors may be thought indirectly, and by a means [illegible] in court. However it seems this sufficed to [illegible]"

"From the peace of the king's house, the [illegible] was made capital.—There was made also [illegible]

[illegible] the king's suit in case of homicide, did expect [illegible] suit by way of appeal; and that it was found [illegible] the king's suit by indictment (which is ev[illegible] [illegible] as well in wisdom as in justice, to pare a little [illegible] Perkin's proclamation, for an execrable breaker [illegible] of unlawful retainer, or partaking in riots [illegible]

*An Insurrection in the North.*] But, not[illegible] were, by the three estates, enacted; yet the people were so far from being well reconciled [illegible] when the king's commissioners came down to [illegible] ric of Durham, the inhabitants began to mutiny; saying openly, That they had lately endured a thousand injuries, and that they nei[illegible] This was their pretence; but lord Bacon observes that "the refusal did not proceed from [illegible] informed the court of it, and signified in plain [illegible] the affair. Henry sent back a peremptory [illegible] parl.; because it might encourage other coun[illegible] sents were included." Upon this dispatch from court the earl assembled the principal [illegible] Bacon observes, "this harsh business was unfortunately fallen into the hands of a harsh [illegible] persuader of the council. A mob, or rabble [illegible] for a long time had borne the king an ill will; [illegible] a mean fellow, called John à Chambre, who [illegible] troubled at it, but sent down the earl of [illegible] York, where John à Chambre was executed in great state. The rest of the rebels were pardoned; and the king having settled these northern commotions, returned to London; leaving the earl of Surrey his lieut. in those [illegible] Dugdale; for the summons to this, and the [illegible]

*Acts passed.*] "The king, finding by the [illegible]

[illegible]

Edw. 1. For his laws (who so marks them well) are deep, and not vulgar; not made upon the

[illegible]

he made a law suitable to his own acts and

[illegible]

marriage made a final concord, in the great

[illegible]

turned into demesnes. This bred a decay of

[illegible]

upon this a decay and diminution of subsidy and taxes; for the more gentlemen, ever the

[illegible]

mony of the kingdom; nor tillage they would

[illegible]

ture and utility. But they took a course to

[illegible]

tained and kept up for ever; together with a

[illegible]

vered from them; as by another statute, made

[illegible]

a dweller; and the proportion of land for oc-

[illegible]

manry, or middle people, of a condition be-

[illegible]

in a servile or indigent fashion, but in some

[illegible]

be brought but in English bottoms; bowing

[illegible]

a statute in that parl. monitory and minatory,

[illegible]

duly execute their office; inviting complaints

[illegible]

chancellor; and that a proclamation, which

[illegible]

in open sessions 4 times a year, to keep them

[illegible]

ther for the courser sort. Which I note, both because it was a rare thing to set prices by

[illegible]

ries; and because of the wise model of the

[illegible]

not to exceed a rate, that the clothier might

[illegible]

dence to my person; but chiefly, because, in

[illegible]

ginal books of law themselves; yet that in-

[illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] We have now lapse of 3

[illegible]

other parl.; in which interval, the exigencies

[illegible]

sary to enter into a war with France. On the

[illegible]

years of age.

[illegible]

I purposed to make a war in Brittainy by my

[illegible]

chancellor; but now that I mean to make a war upon France in person, I will declare it to

[illegible]

man's right, but this is to recover our own; and that ended by accident, but we hope this

[illegible]

federates; he denieth our tribute. In a word, he seeks war; so did not his father, but sought peace at our hands; and so perhaps will he,

[illegible]

make his ambition our advantage; and let us not stand upon a few crowns of tribute or acknowledgement, but (by the favour of Almighty

[illegible]

French king prisoner in England, and a king

[illegible]

rates are not diminished. Burgundy is in a

[illegible]

Tramontanes in Italy. But howsoever it be,

[illegible]

of France, without a second.—At the battles

[illegible]

forces which are least fit for a defensive war, where the actions are in the assailants choice.

[illegible]

hath hitherto blessed my sword. I have in this time that I have reigned, weeded out my

[illegible]

and I know one another, which breeds confi-

[illegible]

ginnings, to pay itself. Go together in God's

[illegible]

parl. wholly for this cause."

[illegible]

Lord Bacon observes, "That the parl. took

[illegible]

fectionate to a War with France; but, at this

[illegible]

nour they thought the king had sustained by

[illegible]

vate persons; and finding by the ld. chancel-

[illegible]

for which he sustained much envy. It was

[illegible]

tradition of a dilemma, that bp. Morton, the [illegible] ticle in the instructions to the commissioners, who were to levy the Benevolence, that if [illegible] because they laid up; and if they were spend- [illegible] parl. of war; for it was in substance but a de- [illegible] with some statutes conducing thereunto; as [illegible] out licence; strengthening of the common law [illegible] open and wide, for men to sell or mortgage their lands without fines for alienation, to furnish themselves with money for the war; and lastly, the avoiding of all Scottish men out of England. There was also a statute, for the dispersing of the standard of the exchequer, [illegible] and measures; and two or three more of less [illegible]

*A Peace concluded.*] Great preparations [illegible] logue, in form; but there he received such overtures of a peace from the French king, as were very acceptable to him; and money, the [illegible] coffers, but it was by the emptying of a great many of the purses of the nobility and principal persons in the army; who had many of [illegible] "That the king had made good what he had said in parliament; that after the war was [illegible] king, in ready money, 745,000 ducats, which amounts to 186,250l. English; and a pension [illegible]

[illegible] like to have proved of worse consequence than [illegible] of Burgundy, sister to Edw. IV. was a princess [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] In the midst of these com- [illegible] minster, Sept. 15th, 1497, for a parl. to meet [illegible] ing; which is scarcely a month's notice.

*Acts passed.*] "The principal law," says lord Bacon, "that was made this parl. was a law of a strange nature; rather just than legal, [illegible] in arms, or otherwise, the king for the time [illegible] void, and of none effect; for that it was agreeable to reason of estate, that the subject should not enquire of the justness of the king's title, [illegible] quarrel; and it was agreeable to good con- [illegible] war were, the subject should not suffer for [illegible] wonderfully pious and noble; being like in [illegible] ter of plague, who said, 'If I have sinned, [illegible] deep foresight: for it did the better take away [illegible] pry into the king's title: for that howsoever it [illegible] There was also made a shoaring or underprop- [illegible] nevertheless were not brought in, to be leviable by a course of law. Which act did not [illegible] upon a false verdict between party and party, which before was a kind of evangile, irreme- [illegible] a branch of ingratitude in women, who having [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] Though in the acts of this [illegible] lay the affair before a parl. which was [illegible] the 16th [illegible]

[illegible] the [illegible] war and peace: concluding, that he could nei- [illegible] people, to whom he did owe protection, let [illegible] derstood him well, and gave him a subsidy, [illegible] mine of treasure, of a strange kind of ore, iron [illegible] remembered. Only there passed a law, at the [illegible] which it seemeth they did, a little to save [illegible] tained by want of trade. But those innova- [illegible]

*A Subsidy granted.*] The Subsidy granted [illegible] to raise the sum of 120,000l. for the Scotch [illegible] London 4000l.; but Hall and Hollingshead [illegible] it; under the leading of one Flammock, a lawyer, and one Michael Joseph, a blacksmith. [illegible] Kent; and at Welles were joined by James [illegible] over them. From Welles they marched to [illegible] defeated them without much trouble; the lord [illegible] Warbec's affairs came to a crisis; and after [illegible] was taken at last, and committed prisoner to the tower; from whence, not long after, he [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] It was not till 7 years after [illegible] not on record; but our Statute Books inform [illegible] king's pretence in assembling this parl. was the [illegible] to demand a Subsidy for his eldest daughter's dowry, just then married to the king of Scots. "The custom of demanding money on such [illegible] to this king to suffer it to be abolished. The new queen's portion was but 30,000 nobles; [illegible] more considerable, besides a handsome pre- [illegible]

[illegible] Bacon [illegible] observing, "That a man may easily guess how absolute the king took himself to be with his parliament, when his creature Dudley, [illegible] us, "that there were not any memorable statutes made in it, relating to public govt.; and those that were passed, had still a stamp of the [illegible] so full a view of this king's unjust exactions, drawn up in a very few words, at the end of his [illegible] cannot be unacceptable to our readers.

"There was a statute made for the disannulling of all Patents of Lease or Grant, to [illegible] from their house, till their return home again. [illegible] realm had of them no manufacture in use at [illegible] well skill to make. This law pointed at a true principle; that where foreign materials are but superfluities, foreign manufactures should be [illegible] sheriffwicks; priviledged officers being no less [illegible] the chancellor, treasurer, and the two chief [illegible]

[illegible] realm to the Mint, in making all clipped, di-[illegible] current in payments; without giving any re-[illegible] a reasonable wearing, which was as nothing in respect of the uncertainty; and so, upon the [illegible] then minted.—There was likewise a long sta-[illegible] out a law against them, the king ever having [illegible]

*A Subsidy and a Benevolence.*] "There was [illegible] firmation of their liberties; a thing fitter for [illegible] ents. Neither was it a small matter, that the [illegible] pences and sixpences. As for Empson and [illegible] many things else; save that certainly avarice [illegible]

This was the last parl. called in the reign of [illegible]

*[illegible] H[illegible]*

[illegible] 7 [illegible] year a Benevolence, [illegible] for raising a general Benevolence.

[illegible] wheat sold for 1l. 4s. per qr.; and in 1504, for [illegible] oats 2s. and beans 3s. 8d. per qr. Next year [illegible]

*[illegible] Henry VII.*

*Public Acts.*] 1 Hen. VII.—1. An act declaring in what cases a *formedon in descender* [illegible] ordinaries. 5. Against tanners, cordwainers, and curriers. 6. A pardon for them who [illegible] duke of Gloucester. 7. For punishment of offenders in hunting by night or disguised. 8. No Gascoigne or Guian wines shall be [illegible]

*Private Acts.*] 1 Hen. VII.—1. An act [illegible] caster, and Cornwall, & al'. 2. For the re-[illegible] Zouche, and divers others. 4. For the duke [illegible]

[illegible]

**21. For Wm. Brandon, knt. 23. For James [illegible], felony.**

[illegible] 22. Touching broiderers, and Venice gold. 23. Against the carrying of gold and silver over [illegible] thereby.

*Private Acts.*] 4 Hen. VII.—1. An act of restitution for Thomas earl of Surrey. 2. For [illegible] for Tho. Lucy and his wife. 9. For Oliver [illegible] Holt. 11. For Wm. Stanley, knt. 12. For [illegible] the king's voyage. 13. For a subsidy to be [illegible] 17. For the earl of Surrey. 18. For George [illegible] Souls in Oxford. 21. For the inhabitants of [illegible] For the expences of the king's household. [illegible] others. 30. For a 10th and 15th to be granted [illegible]

*Public Acts.*] 7 Hen. VII.—1. Against the [illegible] 4. Concerning weights and measures. 5. Concerning trials in London. 6. Letters patents [illegible]

*Private Acts.*] 7 Hen. VII.—1. An act against Tho. Croft. 2. For the preservation [illegible] confirmation of a feoffment made by the king [illegible] the queen. 7. To make the sum of 5 marks, [illegible] 13. For sir Tho. Lovell, knt. 14. For Hugh [illegible]

[illegible] make any forfeiture. 2. For punishment of vagabonds and beggars, and touching ale-[illegible] assise and of the peace. 4. The names of the [illegible] the punishment of usurers. 9. All the lands [illegible] the realm without licence. 14. Strangers made denizens shall pay custom as strangers. 15. Against the misdemeanour of sheriffs and their officers, in their county-courts. 16. For keep-[illegible] the wages of servants in husbandry, and of [illegible] herrings. 24. For the punishment of perjury, [illegible]

[illegible]

to the prince of Wales, &c. 8. For the as- [illegible]

of Bedford. 11. Of confirmation of a feoff- [illegible]

For the earl of Oxford. 13. For the earl of [illegible]

Another act made for confirmation of a feoff- [illegible]

For the earl of Devon. 17. For the earl of Kildare. 18. For the prior of Kilmaynan in [illegible]

Tho. Middleton. 28. For Geo. Catesby. 29. For Simon Digby. 30. For sir Rd. Ratcliffe. [illegible]

and stamins. 2. For the continuance of certain acts made in the last parl. 3. Repeal of a statute made the last parl. for labourers [illegible]

1 R. 3, c. 8, shall be taken before the next [illegible]

the queen's jointure. 3. For the earl of Surrey. 4. For Guy Sapcott. 5. A proviso for Wm. [illegible]

ton. 7. For 15ths and 10ths. 8. For a sub- [illegible]

11 H. 7, c. 24. 4. For using of long bows, and against shooting in cross bows. 5. What [illegible]

a bond-man) they may be seised by his lord. [illegible]

cordwainers. 20. For confirmation of a statute made 3 H. 7, c. 10, touching damages to [illegible]

sueth a writ of error before execution. 21. [illegible]

made 4 H. 7, touching factors and attornies [illegible]

of the staple at Calais. 4. To give the king [illegible]

of a partition of lands made between Wm. [illegible]

8. That no actions, plaints, bills, or writs, [illegible]

[illegible] by [illegible] [illegible] lady Cecil, wife of the late visc. Wells, Wm [illegible] tainder of James Touchett, knt. lord Audley, [illegible] Of restitution for Wm. Barley. 17, Of restitu[illegible]

## Henry VIII.

[illegible] for calling a parl. dated at the same place, Oct. 17, to meet on the 21st of Jan. following. [illegible]

[illegible]

Thomas e. of Arundel Mountjoy

[illegible]

Edward Sutton lord of Bolton

[illegible]

Herbert George, ld. Fitz-Hugh.

[illegible] following judges, &c.

[illegible]

[illegible] tory; and the king sitting on his throne, Wm. Warham, abp. of Canterbury, lord high chanc. of [illegible]

[illegible] ment; concluding, that the abovesaid honour [illegible] for the benefit of posterity; but for a diligent [illegible] Lastly, says our authority, 'cum magno audi[illegible]

[illegible]

ring the sitting of this parl. at 9 of the clock, [illegible]

Jan. 24, the lords again met, when 4 bills [illegible] the crown. One for forfeited patents granted for life; and another for reforming excess in [illegible]

[illegible] Lord Herbert tells us, "That at this time it [illegible] cially for contenting the commonalty, which [illegible] proceedings of Henry VII. to call a parl. [illegible] all men, but had been publicly tried at Guild- [illegible]

[illegible] to this business alone; especially the lower [illegible] is in a bill brought from the commons, and [illegible] the parl. roll, as a perpetual memorial of their infamy and disgrace.—The next is, that a bill [illegible]

[illegible] to the king; and to any other person within [illegible] assurances of lands passed to them, were annu- [illegible] were, by a double sentence of both jury and [illegible] so great against these criminals, that, for their [illegible]

[illegible] lords, granted a supply of two 10ths and two [illegible] palace; the king on his throne, and the peers in their parl. robes; the Speaker of the com- [illegible]

"He first bestowed great praises on his maj. for [illegible] payed him; and as a testimony of which, the [illegible] containing a very large sum of money, was a [illegible]

[illegible] king sitting on the throne, Wm. abp. of Can- [illegible] by a speech from this text, 'Justitia et pax [illegible]

[illegible] commodities, necessary in society, might sooner [illegible] men who seek to [illegible] their wealth, [illegible] 'per fas aut nefas;' by neglect of the poor, [illegible] [illegible]d, it was full time to reform these abuses, [illegible] part, he said, "Of holy peace, which Christ [illegible] claiming war with an enemy, we should first examine the justness of the quarrel and the [illegible] that they should walk in the ways of the lord, [illegible] content with his pay, and avoid all plunder." Lastly, he told them, "that this parl. was [illegible] statutes and ordinances, which were found to [illegible] and the laws. At the conclusion, he directed the commons to choose their Speaker, and af[illegible]

*War with France.*] The next day the com[illegible] this session a direct declaration of War with [illegible] dered. And, lastly, an account, translated [illegible] Rolls, concerning the dissentions, which were [illegible] XII. of France; containing a recital of all the [illegible] a bill, containing certain privileges granted to [illegible] Commons voted a large supply, of two 10ths [illegible]

[illegible]

sea, shall have a protection of 'Profecturus' or 'Moraturus, cum clausula, volumus.' [illegible] without licence. And, if he die in that ser[illegible] wardship and marriage, towards the perform[illegible] soldiers, or detained their wages; also, for sol[illegible] firmed.—Because several unlawful games kept men from shooting in the long bow, they were [illegible] following, on which day it met accordingly.

*A Subsidy and a Poll-Tax.*] Lord Herbert writes, "That the king being now resolved to [illegible] meet at Westminster; where, besides enacting several good laws, he had a grant of two [illegible] this, he had a Poll-Tax granted him; which was, of every duke 10 marks: of every earl 5l.; a lord 4l.; a knight 4 marks; of every man worth 800l. in goods the same; of each man who had 40s. in wages, 12d.; and of [illegible] sion was, in order to secure the sea-coasts; by [illegible] wall, and elsewhere; and fortifying the cas[illegible] French landed a number of men in Sussex. [illegible] the above-mentioned act, and others of less [illegible] Jan. the 23rd, 1513.

[illegible] to England, the [illegible] first act passed, in the Statute Books, is to [illegible] by Englishmen; and how Englishmen of them. It was also enacted, "That every man that [illegible]

[illegible] therefore, to restore the commonwealth to its [illegible] ple, and a multitude of wise counsellors, which [illegible]

[illegible] told them that the ruling rod of a kingdom was what all kings ought chiefly to understand, since it went by a triple direction. The first [illegible] God, both in loving, fearing, and serving him. [illegible] jects; viz. in administering impartial justice, [illegible] love for justice: he exhorted them, therefore, [illegible] mended the commons to choose a Speaker, [illegible]

[illegible] ham, the earl of Surrey, lord treasurer, the earl of Worcester, with other peers, went [illegible] who were able to pay it." "That the Scotch [illegible]

Feb. 15, a contest arose in the house of [illegible] with much humility and discretion, had agreed [illegible] lord Herbert in this manner:—"I shall set [illegible] changed fashion. Howsoever, that of Archery, [illegible] men that had less than 500" (the stat. says 300) [illegible]

---

[illegible] also was imposed on those who [illegible] [illegible] taken concerning deceit in Cloth, as being the [illegible] began 6 Hen. VI. and continued 4 Hen. VII. [illegible] continued also for 10 years more. It was [illegible] cond letters patents also might be taken, with- [illegible] long in parl. did depart home without licence, [illegible]

[illegible] nuaded by the lord cardinal, and other lords, [illegible] tion, a certain provision, then brought and [illegible] earl of Shrewsbury; and that he should enter [illegible] act of resumption passed into a law this parl. [illegible]

[illegible] rious. This bill was read by the lords 3 times in one day and assented to; but of what fur- [illegible]

next day, it is said that a bill was brought into the lords, concerning a Subsidy; that it was [illegible] 22, a bill for a general Pardon from the king was passed, with 9 exceptions contained in it. [illegible] commons into the house of lords; and, after [illegible]

[illegible] passed in this session were these; "An Act to [illegible] the increase of our own shipping. A time was [illegible] year preceding, was also repealed; because it [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] It was full 7 years after [illegible] was called. The book of printed Statutes, and [illegible] 15th of April, 1523. At the time appointed, J. Stowe writes, That the king being seated on [illegible] the abp. of Canterbury; and at the rail behind stood dr. Tunstal, bp. of London, who [illegible] office of a king, to this effect. He first said, "That a king must be a man of judgment, [illegible] a man of great learning, according to this text, [illegible] God had sent them a prince of great judgment, learning, and experience; who, accord- [illegible] 'es rex, et non habes tempus esse rex? Which is as much as to say, Art thou a king, [illegible] Art thou a king, and wilt not provide a remedy [illegible]

[illegible]

house, to elect a Speaker; and certify it to [illegible]

[illegible] pose, pleaded his disabilities as usual; and in his speech brought in a story of Phormio, the [illegible]

[illegible] ordering of the govt. or such like matters, the king, who is so deeply learned, such a master [illegible]

[illegible] discretion; and that therefore he thought the [illegible]

[illegible] demand was much debated in the house: and [illegible] he with a few followers only, or with his whole [illegible]

---

[illegible]

[illegible] other, in this public cause, thus join with Charles the emperor in a war against him. [illegible] lands, to be paid in 4 years."

[illegible] conclusion, told him, That except all the mem- [illegible]

"That it was not a great deal, on this occa- [illegible] ping of the nation must decay; and the nation [illegible] barbarous and ignoble. They were desired to [illegible] a 3rd of every man's goods; and cannot be [illegible] parishes in England, and each parish hould [illegible]

[illegible] are not 13,000 parishes; then reckon that the [illegible] after this valuation, having received 400,000l. [illegible] sum demanded; for if all the coin should come [illegible] courtiers, "That the money demanded ought [illegible] in markets; where, though the money change [illegible] country, so much as will maintain him, since [illegible] when they staid idle at home, and yet that they [illegible] poorer sort; but, to avoid this objection, let [illegible] grudge yet the giving so poor a stipend, as some of their servants at home would scarcely take [illegible] they to value themselves more than others, be- [illegible] in France; for doth it not carry the men too, [illegible] believe that making war in a country brings money to it, do but conceive a while, that the [illegible] brought over, think you, enrich our country; should any of us be the better for it? Let us [illegible] our nation. When you did conceive the worst [illegible] mutton here, and wear your country cloth; while others, upon a short allowance, fought [illegible] berty. But I say confidently you need not fear this penury or scarceness of money; the inter- [illegible] the world, that there is a perpetual derivation of all that can be necessary to mankind. Thus while, not to go far, I shall produce our own [illegible]

[illegible] At [illegible] 40s. 1s. in the pound; and under 40s. every [illegible] intended, seemed much troubled; and there- [illegible] who opposed his demands; but being answer- [illegible] being 3s. in the pound, for 3 years to come; [illegible] Husee, a Lincolnshire knight, who, to please [illegible] wards, to be paid in 8 years. That, on the [illegible] ing themselves; so that by 10 or 12 persons [illegible] much evil will."—This grant was passed on the 21st of May; at which time, because Whit- [illegible]

Hall proceeds and tells us, "That when the [illegible] charged 12d. in the pound on 50l. a year and [illegible] were worth 50l. a year, or upwards, in goods, [illegible] tion occasioned a great debate in the house; [illegible]

---

[illegible]

15th, when, at 9 o'clock at night, it was dis- [illegible] Lord Herbert [illegible] in this session, which is as follows:—"That our merchants might have 8 days preference before strangers, for buying of broad white [illegible] London, unless in fairs, ports, creeks, &c. That [illegible] That [illegible] said wardens. That they should cause a mark to be put on the wares and workmanship to [illegible] living in other towns than London. That if [illegible] England, or the justices of assize in the coun- [illegible] as before, and so to endure to the last day of [illegible] such custom to our king, subsidy and toll, as [illegible] the king's ambassadors in foreign countries, [illegible] Yet if any such Englishman did return to in- [illegible] all the liberties of a subject." The statute of 6 Hen. VIII. 13, forbidding shooting in cross- [illegible] money in any mint in England, should coin of every 100l. of gold, 20l. into half angels or pieces of 40d.; and of every 100l. worth of bullion, plate or silver, a portion into groats, two-pences, [illegible] ve a mark different from half-pence. That they who bring less than 100l. in bullion or [illegible] any fine for alienation. And if any of them [illegible] and lands."

Though we find that a sufficient time was [illegible] able in 4 years, should be anticipated, and [illegible] mons great disgust; and they did not fail, says lord Herbert, to impute it all to the cardinal [illegible] lord Cobham; Essex would not so much as [illegible] ingdonshire did the same; London would be taxed by none but their aldermen; and Suf- [illegible] despised their menaces. However, a little [illegible] in his last demand of a Supply, that he was in [illegible] none called for 7 years before this last, so it was 6 or 7 years more before another was sum- [illegible]

But, as lord Herbert observes, "this seemed all to be done without the king's know- [illegible] Cardinal, by these means, got many a curse, [illegible] Katherine. We shall leave a thorough disqui- [illegible] place, it proved the ruin of the Cardinal; for, [illegible]

[illegible] first into disgrace, and afterwards under the [illegible]

[illegible] nourable man; but compare him to the mul- [illegible] flock, then is he a ruler, a governor of might [illegible] the name of a shepherd. And, as you see, that amongst a great flock of sheep some be [illegible] According to his desert, he hath had a gentle correction; which small punishment the king [illegible]

[illegible] were a great number, and could not speak [illegible] tice, mixed with mercy and pity; so that [illegible] in these enquiries.

[illegible]

"Constrained by necessity of our fidelity [illegible] and dignity royal; to the inestimable [illegible]

[illegible] ing; which be but a few in comparison of all [illegible] to say—I. Where your grace, and your noble [illegible] crown of England; and the same pre-emi[illegible] the space of 200 years, and more; whereby [illegible] of York, being your subject, and natural liege [illegible] tion and prerogative, and the large continuance [illegible] goods; and also hath usurped upon all your [illegible] thereof, nor named in the same; and binding [illegible] being your ambassador in France, sent a com[illegible] joined himself with your grace, as in saying, 'the king and I.' And, 'I would ye should do thus.' 'The king and I give unto you our [illegible] he used himself more like a fellow to your highness than like a subject.—V. Also, where[illegible]

[illegible] England; the same ld. cardinal caused his ser[illegible] him in divers places of his body, came daily to [illegible] otherwise than a true counsellor ought to do, [illegible] to him alone, and so hearing their charges and [illegible] that they came to your presence; contrary to [illegible] abuse them used these words, 'I will lay my [illegible]

[illegible] of matters, because [illegible] XVII. [illegible] XVIII. [illegible] England, [illegible] hath not [illegible] XX. [illegible] And [illegible] XXII. [illegible]

[illegible]

your gracious prerogative, or regalty, or to the [illegible]

be hurt or offended; and upon that condition, [illegible]

promise, he was busy in his suit at Rome, to [illegible]

realm, which was, that the regular persons of the said clergy had given themselves in re- [illegible]

which slander to your church of England shall for ever remain in the register at Rome against [illegible]

the goods of dr. Smith, late bp. of Lincoln, bp. Savage of York, Mr. Dalby, arch-deacon [illegible]

[illegible] your gracious favour or pardon, which was a presumptuous intent for any subject.— [illegible]

[illegible] St. Alban's; as of ancient custom it hath been used; and the lord cardinal hearing the same, presumptuously, and not like a subject, caused the foresaid prices, which were sealed with [illegible] hath reputed himself to be equal with your [illegible] time.—XLI. Also, where one sir Edw. Jones, [illegible] college in Oxford pretended title to a certain [illegible] pressed; where, of truth, the parsons of Crow-[illegible] portion time out of mind: whereupon a sub-[illegible] Court; where, without any bill, the said lord [illegible] tion; and, at the last, upon a recognizance made, that he should appear before the said [illegible] that he dare not deal with it.—XLII. Also, where one Martin Docowra had a lease of the [illegible] for a term of certain years, an injunction came [illegible]

he hath received the like [illegible] present, and confirmed by a good number of [illegible] goodness towards the weale of this your realm, [illegible]

[illegible] Shrewsbury, R. Fitzwalter, Jo. Oxynford, H. Northumberland, T. D'Arcy, T. Rochford, [illegible]

[illegible] Cromwell, then a member, that he absolutely [illegible]

[illegible] another trial. But a superior summons, to a [illegible] markable words in his mouth: "If I had served my God with half the zeal that I have [illegible]

[illegible] dom, with much approbation; and gave such [illegible]

[illegible] was it a great and bold sally towards that Re- [illegible]

[illegible] and mortuaries; for pluralities, non-residence, [illegible]

[illegible] when the bills for regulating these exorbitances were brought before the house of lords, John Fisher, bp. of Rochester, made a remarkable [illegible] a copy, as it is printed in a small treatise on [illegible] Bailey.

"My lords, here are certain bills exhibited [illegible]

[illegible] Or shall men find fault with other mens' man- [illegible] suffer for his delinquency; or, if we have not, [illegible] shall give you thanks. But, my lords, I hear [illegible]

[illegible] beware of yourselves and your country; be- [illegible]

[illegible] will tell you plainly what I think; that, except [illegible] from the clergy, and secondly from yourselves; [illegible]

[illegible] lords, as they were diversely inclined to for- [illegible] made a reply to it, but only the duke of Nor- [illegible]

[illegible]

men." To which the bp. replied, "my lord, I do not remember any lords in my time that [illegible]

[illegible]

Speaker, Audley, attended with a number of [illegible]

[illegible]

in such a manner? The prelate answered, [illegible]

[illegible]

for laying it all on 'want of faith,' stood up in [illegible]

[illegible]

sign our faith to a simple obedience; I shall crave leave to propose, what I think fit in this [illegible]

[illegible]

offered, but that I would be glad we considered [illegible]

[illegible]

will be much more difficult in religious worship; [illegible]

[illegible]

tory and opposite in their doctrines, present [illegible]

[illegible]

much leisure must he obtain? How much [illegible]

[illegible]

perpetual peregrination; while each man post- [illegible]

[illegible]

God; so that there will be a necessity to dis- [illegible]

[illegible]

false, but even from the likely and possible; each of them requiring a peculiar scrutiny and [illegible]

[illegible] heresy; but after a due separation of the more [illegible]

[illegible] taught, as it is first written in the heart, and to- [illegible]

[illegible] he can hear of in the whole world: this certainly can never deceive him; since therein he shall find out how far the impressions of God's [illegible]

[illegible] kind, and to what degrees his universal Provi- [illegible]

[illegible] Neither ought it to trouble him if he find these [illegible]

[illegible] or errors; since, without insisting on more [illegible]

[illegible] side, it will be his part to reduce them into [illegible]

[illegible] they being but few, and apt for connection: [illegible]

[illegible] It will be worth the labour, assuredly, to en- [illegible]

[illegible] in our belief, when they are delivered upon [illegible]

[illegible] innumerable deities, worshipped in the 4 quarters [illegible]

[illegible] as there is no sacrament which is not finally [illegible]

[illegible] my opinion, be first received; they will at least [illegible]

[illegible] of a better life. Besides, it will reduce men's [illegible]

[illegible] to a solid practice of virtue; or when we find [illegible]

[illegible] dispose us to a general concord and peace; [illegible]

[illegible] notions; they will not hinder us to believe whatsoever else is faithfully taught upon [illegible]

[illegible] infallible grounds of religion, as whatsoever [illegible]

[illegible] of being judged an heretic, and lose all that [illegible]

[illegible] by the nobility, to whom a com- [illegible]

[illegible]

"Most blessed father; although the [illegible]

[illegible] desires have wished; and with so very great, [illegible]

[illegible] laint to each member of it, forcing them [illegible] es, the m [illegible] as many others in [illegible]

[illegible] yet cannot a confirmation of this so universally [illegible]

[illegible] yet we see that from hence a flood of miseries [illegible] sort of deluge of calamities overwhelming us, [illegible] will soon overtake us, never to be settled [illegible]

[illegible]

father, shall, by refusing to comply herein, [illegible]

[illegible] just and reasonable desires; we most earnestly intreat a confirmation of the judgment of these [illegible]

[illegible] members must bear a part; the grief arising [illegible]

[illegible] power, so is it a duty necessarily arising from [illegible] to grant, our condition will indeed herein be [illegible]

[illegible] plied; but he that is sick will by any means [illegible]

[illegible] and more tolerable. That your holiness would be pleased to take these things into your most serious consideration, we do again and again [illegible]

[illegible] the glory and praise of God, and thereby giv- [illegible]

[illegible] rity a confirmation of what is just, righteous [illegible]

Wm. of Canterbury.
T. of Dorset
[illegible]
lund
Edward of Derby
[illegible]
J. Audley
Henry Scroope
[illegible]
Jo. Fitzwarren
Jo. Lumley

T. Darcy
[illegible]
*7. Abbots.*
[illegible]
Edward of York
[illegible]
Jo. of Croyland
[illegible]
*8. Knights and Doctors in Parliament.*
[illegible]
Edward Lee
[illegible]
Jo. Bettat.

[illegible]

parl. in England: Clement VII. pope; [illegible]

[illegible] letter mentions; nay, even much more, that [illegible] tions towards the apostolical see, will not only live fresh in our memories, but be transmitted down to latest posterity. We cannot but [illegible] his highness's affection, as we shall scarce ever [illegible] that we have even laid under the censure of the [illegible] Sanctæ Mariæ trans Tiberim our legate de la- [illegible] cause deny the queen a commission of appeal, [illegible] several delays in granting our commission of appeal in the said cause, under pretence that this being a cause of the highest nature, must [illegible] the cardinals, whereby this affair was still farther put off; till at length by the unanimous [illegible] a commission of appeal in this cause could not be refused. It was therefore appointed to be examined, heard, and in the said consistory [illegible]

[illegible] not according to favour and affection.

[illegible] sentence of determination, of which you com- [illegible] because his maj. ambassadors in several places, [illegible] unless you will venture to say, that the ser- [illegible] be determined in his favour, without regard [illegible] that we should in a cause of the greatest mo- [illegible] nay, though some opposed it; when on the [illegible] sentence of Divorce from a Marriage which [illegible] dinand; from whence the queen has had [illegible] to concern the whole christian world, but also [illegible] our notice, shewn us not in proper form but [illegible] ing exhibited; and those were but bare opi- [illegible]

[illegible] herein in his maj.'s favour, is a thing neither [illegible] kings reign, and princes decree justice; and farther, it is the duty of a good father, to take [illegible] sentence, which, if thus unduly given, would [illegible] favour and affection to your king. You cen- [illegible] ness, but all christian princes had sons like so [illegible] realms, but of such princely virtues; but we [illegible] unwilling to confirm, by our authority, a truth concerning the former marriage, which by so [illegible] upon; we are truly willing to gratify his high- [illegible] authority, but then our ability cannot extend [illegible] rity, as it would if we should judicially give [illegible] of yourselves is remitted into your own hands, [illegible] herein elsewhere; this, is a resolution neither [illegible] christianity: and we do therefore of our fa- [illegible] fault of the physician, if the patient weary of [illegible] with advantage received; for 'who is weak, and I am not weak; who is offended, and I burn not? I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sons I warn you.' We [illegible] account you write, can approve your writing [illegible] him; and although your intercession is in all [illegible] yet [illegible] us, and received a denial, where it could be [illegible] brought to a speedy determination and final [illegible] your king and queen, and our ownselves from this most troublesome affair. But this we [illegible] form; and then you may assure yourselves of [illegible] and strip the church of its overgrown possessions. We read of no other business done at [illegible] neral good of the nation.

[illegible] first thing we find was, that a pardon for all [illegible] time after, passed the bill, and sent it to the [illegible] consent to vote for the bill, unless that [illegible] that they would not compel the king to give them his pardon; and besides, it was unchari- [illegible] don. But this was not agreed to; and it was [illegible] commons, with a number of members along [illegible] him, "that his faithful commons sore lament- [illegible]

[illegible]

you desire a redress of and reformation; which

petition; for there you require to have the

countries; and yet you would have a reformation of your grievances with all diligence.

been great in tarrying here, I assure you mine

pains I take for your welfare is to me a pleasure. Therefore, if you expect any benefit in

depart without remedy. I much commend

them; but much more you ought not, I think,

lord and king, considering, that I seek peace

which things I am greatly wronged; in this I

set their hands to it. Therefore I do assure you, if you will not take a reasonable thing when it is offered, I will search out the extremity of the law; and then will I not offer you

this: it was then become a custom for men to

great loss. "Wherefore," says Hall, "he like an indifferent prince, not willing to take

king's council about it: but the wiser sort,

would gladly have had the bill to pass; or at

soon after much repented of; for the king

borders: for which reason they invade England

much hurt and displeasure. That, in order to

and houses on this side; and also to renew

tion, and unanimously voted the king a 15th,

cluded this session: for, says Hall, a plague

conscience, by a mild expostulating letter,

'that they should all petition the king to take

"That he wondered any amongst them should

[illegible]

riages; and that, except in Spain and Portu- [illegible] for a brother to marry a brother's wife, was a [illegible] that his conscience was much troubled about [illegible]

Some time after, the king sent for the [illegible] so much; every bp. or abbot, at the entering into his dignity, taking an oath to the pope, derogatory to that of their fidelity to the king; [illegible] the business then, that it occasioned a final [illegible]

[illegible] prorogued again; but no particular time was mentioned. At the end of this session, sir T. More, lord chanc. resigned the seals, and was [illegible] we meet with no other session till the begin- [illegible] the titles of which we refer to the List of Acts. —[illegible] clinations, that the statute to prevent appeals to [illegible] that court. And the princess had now no other way left but to rest by the judgment of those, [illegible] queen being cited to appear before Cranmer, [illegible] at Dunstable; and she not obeying the sum- [illegible] and proceeded to give sentence against her; which was an absolute separation, 'a mensa et [illegible] faster for a very good reason, as lord Herbert [illegible] Boleyn, whom Henry had privately married, [illegible] make an open declaration of it; and Ann was [illegible] following. And now the Journals begin also [illegible] is chiefly taken from the author[illegible]).

[illegible] ought to be; it was thought proper to ordain [illegible] draw up two bills for that purpose.

An affront, of a very singular kind, was of- [illegible] them to the lords, that the bp. had a long [illegible] of heresy, the lords dismissed the complaint, as a business too frivolous for that court. But [illegible] all agreed, "That it was not a thing fit for a peer to answer to in such a place."

[illegible] were the acts passed in this session, as will ap- [illegible] this reign. "Among others," says lord Her- [illegible] dowager to prince Arthur; and the matrimony [illegible] counted lawful; the inheritance of the crown to belong to the same in manner following. [illegible] son lawfully begotten; and for default of such [illegible] the said son lawfully begotten; and for a de- [illegible] then the crown shall belong to the issue female of the king by queen Anne; and first to the [illegible] for default of such issue, then to the [illegible] daughter in like sort, &c. and for default of [illegible] grees of prohibited marriage; amongst which, [illegible] was one, which being against God's laws could [illegible] no such marriages shall hereafter be made; [illegible]

*By* [illegible] their humble submission, prevented the bill [illegible] History, is so singular as to merit a place in [illegible]

"My lords—after my most humble com- [illegible] sit in this most high court of parl.; I beseech [illegible] suit, which by necessity I am now driven to [illegible] as heretofore I have written to mr. Cromwell; which gave me no comfort to obtain of the king's grace, respite for my absence till I be recovered. If I might have been present myself, I doubt not but the great weakness of my [illegible] my cause and matter; whereby I am put un- [illegible] lords, that I am informed of a certain bill that is put into this high court against me and [illegible] Canterbury, which thing is to me no little hea- [illegible] dition that I am in.—Nevertheless, I trust in [illegible] fore in my most humble wise, I beseech all [illegible] the love of Christ; and for the mean season, [illegible]

thought in her any manner of deceit. She was [illegible] religious, and very good and virtuous. I ve- [illegible] to think, when I had so many probable testimonies of her virtue; 1st, the bruit of the [illegible] Maid; 2nd, her entrance into religion upon [illegible] she had; 3rd, for the good religion and learn- [illegible] was commonly reported; finally, my lord of [illegible] and of the realm. Surely I am right sorry to [illegible] the king's highness were these: she said that she had her revelation from God, that if the [illegible] feigned, I had been worthy of great blame and [illegible] forging or feigning thereof, I trust in your great [illegible] highness: neither her words did so sound that [illegible] be said, that I should have shewed the words [illegible] when they shall be heard, I doubt not but

and not with the strictest rigour. I need not

imputed unto me.—And therefore eftsoons I beseech all your benign charities to tender this my

nour of this most high court: and, finally, for

shall succeed you. For I verily trust in Al-

and your charitable supportations, I shall so

his present queen, as the principal and most

of Norfolk, lord treasurer, and Charles duke

in every thing, that it now plainly appears, by

been already done towards it, but much more [illegible] At which time the follow- [illegible]

[illegible] and style thereof, as all honours, dignities, [illegible]

[illegible]

If we may credit the preamble to the print- [illegible]

[illegible] next year; which is hardly time enough for [illegible]

*A Subsidy.*] Bp. Burnet, from the Parl [illegible] olls, mentions an act for a Subsidy of a 10th and a 15th, to be paid in 3 years, that was passed also this session; no grant of that kind [illegible]

[illegible] otland, in fortifying Calais, and in the war [illegible]

[illegible] Calais, and to make a new one at Dover. By [illegible]

[illegible] ness, only for his own time, being a mortal [illegible] tions; particularly mentioning bp. Fisher and Sir Tho. More.

[illegible] statute runs thus: "That small religious [illegible]

[illegible] matter. Whereupon the king having received [illegible]

[illegible] and ought to receive, had made a full declara- [illegible]

[illegible] lives.

[illegible] were, that as there were but a small number [illegible]

[illegible] were, also, often absent, and kept no manner [illegible] the reasons urged, in part, for passing this bill, and we are farther told that Stokesley, bp. of London, said, in the house of lords, "That these lesser houses were as thorns, soon plucked up, but the great abbots were like putrified old oaks; yet, they must needs follow, as others would do in Christendom, before many years were passed."

By another act, all these lesser houses, their churches, lands, and all their goods were given to the king, his heirs and successors, together with all other houses, which, within a year before the making of the act, had been dissolved and suppressed. For the levying the revenues that belonged to them, a new court was erected, called the Court of the Augmentations of the King's Revenue, which was to consist of a chancellor, a treasurer, an attorney, and solicitor, with 10 auditors, 17 receivers, a clerk, an usher, and a messenger. This court was to bring in the revenues of such houses as were now dissolved, excepting only such as the king, by his letters patent, continued in their former state: appointing a seal for this court, with full power and authority to dispose of these lands, as should be most for the king's service. Thus fell the Lesser Abbies to the number of 376, the yearly income of which amounted to, as it is said, about 30 or 32,000l., besides their goods and chattels, which at low rates, were valued at 100,000l., and the number of monks and nuns, turned out of them, amounted to about 10,000.—On the 4th of April, this parl. which had now subsisted above 6 years, and, as bp. Burnet observes, had done the king such eminent service, was finally dissolved.

*Ann Boleyn executed.*] Henry had now almost, an unlimited sway, both in church and state, and seemed, in his domestic affairs, to be very peaceable and content. His new queen was [illegible] to produce fair issue [illegible]. [illegible] of a sudden, she was accused of incest, adultery, and what not, with her own brother and others; who were all tried, condemned and executed, in the Tower, on May 19, 1536.

*A new Parl. called.*] This affair quite unhinged all the acts of settlement made in the last parl.; and Henry, soon after the dissolution of the last, found himself [illegible] another parl. to meet at Westminster, on the 8th of June, 1537. We shall not mention the names of all the peers summoned to this parl. but the manner and rank of the barons [illegible] in the house, is preserved by Dugdale, and deserves a place in our history.

*Names of the barons, as they entered and sat in the Parl. in order, in the 28th of King Henry VIII.*

Ld. Wm. Weston grand prior of st. John's
Geo. lord Bergavenny
John lord Audley
William ld. Mountjoy
Henry ld. D'Aubeney
Christopher lord Conyers of Hornby
John lord Zouch
Tho. ld. De la Ware
Tho. ld. Berkley
Lord Montague
[illegible]
Henry lord Morley
Ld Dacres of the South
Ld. Dacres of Greystock
Lord Cobham
Lord Maltravers
[illegible]
[illegible] Ferrers
[illegible]
Lord Gray of Wilton
Lord Scrope
Lord Dudley
Lord Latimer
William ld. Sturton
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Lord Mounteagle
[illegible]
[illegible]
Andrew ld. Windsor of Stanwell
[illegible]
[illegible]
Ld. Brough of Gainsborough
[illegible]
John lord Mordaunt
Lord [illegible]
[illegible]

The Journal Book now begins again [illegible] said, the king on the throne, and all the lords [illegible] then ld. chanc. of England, opened the cause [illegible]

"First, he told them, that at the dissolution of the last parl. it did not enter into the king's mind that he should so soon have [illegible] call another; but, that for two especial causes [illegible] even death itself, a thing very rare for kings to [illegible] upon his single life; but willing, above all things, to leave it free from all dangers to [illegible] ed was, for repealing a certain act made in the [illegible] realm is bound to be obedient to the lady Ann [illegible] any ill against her or her issue should be condemned for high treason.—But now, he said, [illegible] cording to these three proverbs of Solomon, (to whom our most excellent prince here may be most justly and worthily compared,) 'ope- [illegible] provideri.' And, as to the 1st, they very well [illegible] strangers; which was not only judged so in the [illegible]

[illegible] prince was under, when he contracted his 2nd [illegible] proverbs, by considering in what a situation this realm was in by reason of the oath then [illegible] first was a vast expence and great trouble of mind to him; and the second ran him into [illegible] most excellent prince, on the humble petition [illegible] matrimony; and hath at this time taken unto himself another wife, whose age and fine form denotes her most fit and likely to bring forth [illegible] proverb of Solomon, 'Obventura provideamus,' [illegible] imminent dangers. Because it is his whole study and endeavour to rule us all, in perfect [illegible] withdraw and chuse a Speaker; and present [illegible] mons begged a longer time for electing a [illegible] ed to the king Rd. Rich, esq. for their Speak- [illegible] throne, in words to this effect:

"First, in the name of the commons, he [illegible] first day of the meeting for calling this present [illegible] and nature; and compared him for justice and prudence to Solomon; for strength and fortitude to Sampson; and for beauty and comeliness [illegible] to chuse a Speaker; and had actually chosen [illegible] honour. He therefore besought his maj. that [illegible] mand, replied, "that his maj. had well heard his speech; and was glad to understand by the first part of it, that the members of the house [illegible] them; since, if he really had such virtues, they [illegible] learning, experience, nor boldness, fit for such an office; to this his maj. hath commanded [illegible] as just." After which the said Rd. Rich, esq. [illegible]

*New Act of Succession.*] "The principal [illegible] touching the Succession of the crown; in which, after a rehearsal of the statute, 25 Hen. VIII. [illegible] succession to the crown; and another of 26 [illegible] lawful impediments of marriage, unknown at [illegible] mant to the laws: and therefore his highness [illegible] ness, notwithstanding the great perils suffered [illegible]

[illegible]

included, sat together in an English parl.

[illegible]

Chichester [illegible] bury

[illegible]

office.

[illegible]

with unanimous consent a committee was [illegible] silk, which was found by the lord admiral, in [illegible] viz. three lions, surrounded with a border of two different flowers, called paunces and mari-[illegible] insurrection.

*[illegible] &c.]* May 13th, the fatal bill for the fall of M[illegible] king's hands, by reason of the suppression, reduction, and final dissolution of them, on the 4th of Feb. an. reg. 27." This bill was ordered to be read a 1st time in the house; and then, [illegible] attend the convocation, and the day following [illegible] the parl. to Friday, at 8 o'clock in the morning, the usual time fixed for their meetings in [illegible] nal Book gives; but the act itself is more explicit, and expresses, "that leases of manors, belonging to monasteries, dissolved or to be dissolved, and assured to the king, shall take [illegible] enjoy to him, his heirs and successors for ever, all monasteries, and abbacies, priories, nunneries, colleges, hospitals, houses of friars, [illegible] places, which since the 4th of February, 27 Hen. VIII [illegible] renounced, forfeited, or given up, or by any [illegible] shall be dissolved, &c. As also all manors, [illegible] fell the monastical priesthood in England. The number of monasteries dissolved, accord-[illegible] in the house of lords, as mitred abbots. Of [illegible] Of chantries and free chapels, some time after, 2374. And of hospitals, 110. The yearly income of all amounting to 163,000l. being above a third part of all the spiritual revenues in the kingdom. This, added to the almost im-[illegible] their present stock of cattle and corn, timber, lead, bells, &c. but chiefly of their plate, jewels, and church-ornaments, of which are still extant divers rich inventories, must be incredible. "This rapine upon the church, with the miserable ruin of themselves and houses, [illegible] the excessive number of [illegible] was given by the violent pa-[illegible]

*A Report from the Committee of Religion.]* [illegible] then started up in that kingdom;" that they had made no progress therein, because they [illegible] that the 6 following Articles should be put to [illegible] man to give his opinion freely about them. [illegible] these [illegible] determined. [illegible] statute ought to be enacted against those that any ways infringe or violate them in any particular. The 6 Articles to be examined into are these: I. Whether the sacrament be the real body of our Lord, without transubstantia-[illegible] III. Whether vows of chastity, made by men or wo-[illegible] IV. [illegible] by the same law? V. Whether priests ought [illegible] VI. Whe-[illegible] on. it took some time before they could come to a determination of them. For,

May 30, after a short prorogation, we are [illegible] clared before the lords, "that not only the [illegible] But the form of a statute for punishing such [illegible] It was therefore agreed on by the whole house, [illegible] be appointed for [illegible] an act for punishing such offenders; and the abp. of York, the bps. of Durham and Win-[illegible] ing; which was only two days notice.

*Six Articles established, &c.]* June 7th "this [illegible] was brought into the [illegible] in. "A bill concerning the Punishment of those

The 6 articles, contained in this statute, and

these.—I. If any person by word, writing,

man; or that in the flesh under form of bread,

is not the very blood of Christ; or that with

sacrament to be of other substance than is

sermon, or collation openly made, or teach in

should be ministred in both kinds: or that it

—V. Or that private masses be not lawful, or

land and goods as a felon.—If any priest, or

or any man which is, or hath been a priest, do

ard, under-steward, and deputy-steward in

and lawyers argued well against it; it appear

Herbert informs us, "that Cranmer, abp. of

ing into a law, for 3 days together;" we sup

could not give his consent to it; but that he

find a Memorandum of an order made that

the statute, was to take place on the feast of

markable.—"I. That religious persons, who

inheritance as descending to them. And that

if they made a vow of chastity after 21, they

may seem necessary; which shall be observed

[illegible]

For settling the places of the peers in parl; a [illegible]

[illegible] vicar-general, though a lock or blacksmith's [illegible]

[illegible] by the prorogation; by a commission under [illegible]

[illegible] duke of Norfolk, lord treasurer; Charles duke [illegible]

[illegible] tales: Thomas Dominus Cromwell, eques [illegible]

[illegible] to; and, by their free suffrages, give a sanction [illegible]

[illegible] up in his field amongst the corn; which, by [illegible]

[illegible] superstition, I call it, adds he, a confusion of [illegible]

[illegible] prescribing himself a direct line, guides and [illegible]

[illegible] from the wicked; their real uses taught and [illegible]

[illegible] wicked perversion and audacious interpretation [illegible] Christ, the word of Christ and truth, may con[illegible] inform us what belongs to the institution of a [illegible] doctrine of Christ. [illegible] had chosen to expound the difference and rea[illegible] Bath, Ely, Salisbury, Chichester, Worcester, [illegible] maj.'s authority might not be despised or made a jest on, all the king's judges and commissa[illegible]

The Journals inform us, that great praises [illegible] holy and pious study and design, it was unani[illegible] should be for the same use; praying to God [illegible] as this seemed to be.

*A Subsidy granted.*] May 3th, a bill for a subsidy of one 15th and a 10th, was brought [illegible] to it. The clergy also gave 4s. in the pound; [illegible] "was solely laid upon Cromwell, as the occasion, which gained him an universal hatred [illegible]."

*Order of St. John of Jerusalem suppressed.*] The same day a bill was returned from the commons, with [illegible] of St. John of Jerusalem, which [illegible] the kingdom; that they maintained the usurped power of the church of Rome; that they [illegible] jects; that the isle of Rhodes, whence the [illegible] might be better employed for the defence of [illegible] vernment. The grand prior, who had a pen[illegible] life.

May 11th, after the reading of 6 private [illegible] this effect: "that since the feast of Pentecost [illegible] Christian religion; and since that great work [illegible] concerns this kingdom of England, but also other nations, and the whole Christian church, [illegible] proceedings: therefore his maj. judges it high[illegible] time aforesaid." Next follows a copy of the [illegible] been mentioned before; the king, during the [illegible] ry her; but in a very short time we shall find, [illegible] ture, was equally concerned in a divorce.

[illegible] attainder was brought

into the house, and read against him; which

[illegible]

Thus this man, who had, from a low begin-

[illegible]

a sudden cast down; and is another terrible

[illegible]

slippery the footing is of those who depend on

[illegible]

of July, four days after the dissolution of this

[illegible]

*Validity of the King's Marriage.*] July 6th,

[illegible]

the succession of this crown. And since, by the grace of God, all these controversies were

[illegible]

necessary for the general safety, that some

[illegible]

be born to them in true and lawful wedlock.

[illegible]

tracted marriage of his maj. and the most no-

[illegible]

whole commonwealth in succeeding times, that nothing of this kind should spring up to disturb

[illegible]

to take it into the consideration of the whole house: and that a matter of such high con-

[illegible]

sulted about it. That afterwards, a committee

[illegible]

upon his maj. humbly opening to him, as far

[illegible]

scruples in this matter, and humbly intreating

[illegible]

abps. bps. deans, archdeacons, and the whole clergy of England, now assembled in convoca-

[illegible]

ration had thereon, they would send back 6 of

[illegible]

such a nature, that he could neither deny nor

[illegible]

were as many grave, learned, honest, and pious men, as could any where be found, who would not say a thing which was not just and right; and to these he would commit the af-

[illegible]

This business was very soon concluded; for we are told by the Journals, that on the 10th

[illegible]

them; and that, both by divine and human law, they had found it invalid. Which sentence they produced under the hands and seals of them all; and which, being publicly read and approved on, two of that rev. body were

[illegible]

quence thereof, a bill was brought in the very

[illegible]

a few days more was expedited through the

[illegible]

dressed himself to the king on his throne, to

[illegible]

of which, man is said to be a microcosm, that is, a little world, and hath also 3 parts, viz. a [illegible] English Govt. was constituted; in which the [illegible] which, as there ought to be a strict concord betwixt the head and the other parts of a hu- [illegible] be the head of all; and such a head as most [illegible] constitution; by graciously giving up much of [illegible] of grace and pardon; the statute for freely [illegible] such a ruler; and for which they ought all [illegible] king returned the compliment by a gracious [illegible] his merit; but, lest they should seem unmindful of such benefits, joined in granting a Sub- [illegible]

*A Rebellion in Yorkshire.*] Soon after the dissolution of this parl. a rebellion broke out [illegible] lisbury, who had then been a prisoner two years, in the manner before recited. A jea- [illegible] resolved to make a progress, in person, into [illegible] many on that score; insomuch that, (as both [illegible]

[illegible] highly resented; but he met with a much [illegible] But, notwithstanding this, Henry was some- [illegible] referring his difficulties to a parliament.

*A Parl. called.*] Accordingly, a new one [illegible] and immoderate a length, that the clerks [illegible] 'Give me understanding, that I may search [illegible] learn the things equally necessary for both [illegible] military, which is the 2d virtue in a prince, [illegible] place; as bringing the greatest good to the [illegible] Roman Goliah, with a sling and a stone [illegible]

[illegible] kingdoms.—To the 3d, he, again, commended [illegible] a coasts had been new-built, what others [illegible] Lastly, he desired them to consider, that [illegible] nation, a people barbarous and savage, had [illegible] number of benefits, conferred upon them by their [illegible] that he, like David, from the beginning, had [illegible] care of such a prince. Then the chancellor [illegible] time. He told them, "That his maj. had [illegible] That these 3 orders or states should meet as [illegible] 3 principal causes for calling this assembly [illegible] in religion; sifting of different opinions, if by chance any new one had sprung up, or there [illegible] or proclamations; as, for the true preaching of the gospel; for hospitality amongst the [illegible] into, whether the king's laws were every where [illegible]

[illegible] whilst they violated others; yet so, as [illegible] dearness of victuals in a time of such abund- [illegible] For example, an injury received from a friend or a familiar, is heavier than one from an open enemy, or an unknown person; and for [illegible] the clerks, is uncertain; perhaps, the latter; [illegible] king, in parl. Thos. Moyle, esq. as their [illegible]

[illegible] rine, &c.] Jan. 21, a bill was brought into the house, and read a first time for the attainder, [illegible] Wm. Howard, &c. On the 28th, the 2d. chanc. [illegible] that they were to remember that a queen was [illegible] be judged with that sincerity, that there should [illegible] to her charge. For this purpose he thought it [illegible]

[illegible]

a princess should be judged by equal laws with [illegible]

But that some answer ought to be had from her, and to report the truth of it to his maj. [illegible]

abp. of Canterbury; Charles duke of Suffolk, [illegible]

Southampton, lord privy seal; with the bp. of W[illegible]

[illegible]

the mean time, the sentence concerning the [illegible]

[illegible]

openly, that the privy council, on mature de-[illegible]

sent to the queen; nevertheless, in the mean [illegible]

altogether demanded of him: "1st. that his [illegible]

wisdom in council, to weigh by an equal balance, the mutability of all human affairs; that [illegible]

from accidents; and that no man can be hap-[illegible]

[illegible]

Also the attainder on misprision against lord W[illegible]

[illegible]

when all these things are completed in a just [illegible]

time, that then his maj. would condescend to give his royal assent to them; not by being [illegible]

[illegible]

statutes then in being, out of his great clemen-[illegible]

it. And to propound all these matters to his maj. the abp. of Canterbury, Charles duke of [illegible]

[illegible]

not do it out of malice or ill will, but out of zeal [illegible]

clared to the lords, "that as soon as the lords [illegible]

the Commons were admitted to his presence. [illegible]

cellor did not well know; only he supposed, [illegible]

sage or petition with their lordships. Adding, [illegible]

[illegible]

parl. or that he was called thither for the sake [illegible]

owed to the absent multitude. For which rea-[illegible]

talk together of the present business, of the [illegible]

which are before them. For his maj. had [illegible]

quite the reverse; bills being rejected as dis-[illegible]

[illegible]

ble, by explaining their proper sense: so that [illegible]

[illegible]

commons; one concerning the attainder of [illegible]

[illegible]

assent to them, under the broad seal, and [illegible]

[illegible] have the full force and authority of a law. [illegible] master of the king's household, delivered himself, in a very serious discourse, to this effect: [illegible] had been with her; and that she had openly [illegible] high God and a kind prince, and lastly against [illegible] But that his maj. howsoever unworthy she [illegible] Southampton, lord privy seal, next stood up in [illegible] firmed what the duke had said: adding - - - Here the Journal Book again breaks off ab- [illegible] ing. This last 'hiatus in manuscripto,' along [illegible] but by design; and that it was a trick of state, [illegible] 14th of Feb. and on the 13th the queen and [illegible]

[illegible] the arrest of a Member.] We shall only [illegible] Parliaments. It seems, that a member of the Commons was arrested, in an action of debt, [illegible] and the rest to Newgate. "By which means," adds he, "the king, whose masterpiece it was [illegible] says of this matter; but Holingshead is much [illegible]

and is commonly alledged as a Precedent for [illegible] Ferrers, esq. a servant of the king's, and elected a burgess for the town of Plymouth. One [illegible] arrested by a process out of the king's bench, [illegible] marks, for which he stood engaged, as a surety, [illegible] the delivery of the imprisoned member; but, they, not only denied to deliver him, but treated the serjeant very contemptuously; and [illegible] serjeant declared to the Speaker all the circumstances of his ill usage; upon hearing of [illegible] several of the king's privy council and chamber, [illegible] ber, but rose up and went in a body to the lords, where their Speaker informed the chanc. what a great indignity was put upon them. The [illegible] debate on the case, soon came to a resolution [illegible] had offered his writ to them, they refused it, [illegible] the matter was taken; and therefore they now [illegible] ther; he charged the sheriffs to appear personally before the house at 8 o'clock the next [illegible]

[illegible]

debt; and so the party was left without remedy [illegible]

[illegible] it was resolved to make a particular act, to [illegible]

[illegible] before him the lord chanc. and his judges, with [illegible]

[illegible] privilege as well as any other. For I under-[illegible]

[illegible] us, that we at no time stand so high in our estate royal as in the time of parl.; when we [illegible]

[illegible] of which court is so great, that, as our learned in the laws inform us, all acts and processes, coming out of any other inferior courts, must [illegible]

[illegible] est.—And, as touching the plaintiff in this [illegible]

[illegible] being warned of it before, still to prosecute this matter, out of time; and therefore was [illegible]

[illegible]

This is my opinion, and if I err, I must refer [illegible]

[illegible] 1542 war was proclaimed against Scotland; [illegible]

[illegible] short interval, a war with France was also resolved on; and, in order to raise money to [illegible]

*Acts passed.*] The principal act that passed [illegible] to be paid to the king, in 3 years, after this [illegible] pound; from 5l. to 10l. 8d.; from 10l. to 20l. 1/1; from 20l. and upwards, 2s. All strangers, [illegible] ble the sum; strangers not inhabitants, that [illegible] every head or pole. As for lands, fees and [illegible] from 20s. to 5l.; from 5l. to 10l. 1/4; from 10l. to 20l. 2s.; from 20l. and upwards, 3s.; stran-[illegible] in perpetuity, in 3 years following; and every [illegible]

Besides which, by occasion of a dearth of victuals, a sumptuary law was made, whereby the [illegible]

---

[illegible]

*Act for reformation of Religion.*] Cranmer, [illegible] to push on the great affair of reformation; and, though it was much opposed in parl. yet Bur- [illegible] through, though not in so clear a method as [illegible] bill is, "an act for the advancement of true [illegible] The preamble sets forth "that many seditions [illegible] and great diversity of opinions, animosities, [illegible] it is enacted, that a certain form of or- [illegible] apostolic church, shall be set forth as a stand- [illegible] 1540, or any time after during his maj.'s [illegible] trine of the religion established, in plays and [illegible] as a proviso of some liberty. "that it shall be lawful for all persons whatsoever, to read [illegible] 1540. And also the Psalter, Primer, Pater- [illegible] abjure for his 2nd, and bear a faggot; and for a farther relapse shall be adjudged an heretic, [illegible] goods and chattels.

[illegible] esteemed a lady of great worth. Soon after, [illegible] part; but all this seemed nothing to him, un- [illegible] royal spouse; and not without reason, for he never desired any thing of them which they did [illegible] himself the title of "King of Ireland;" and [illegible] lower house, to desire a conference with the [illegible] were to meet on the morrow, at 8 o'clock in the morning, with a committee of the same [illegible] notice, that it must be a new bill, probably [illegible] king's stile of "King of England, France, and [illegible]

*Act for settling the Succession.*] Feb. 7th, [illegible] ner, as far as by our laws a king is warranted, [illegible]

[illegible]

in all points according to this act: which,

[illegible]

a traitor; and whosoever should, either in

[illegible]

this act, or to the peril and slander of the

[illegible]

judged a traitor."

[illegible]

commons, with their Speaker, all waiting the

[illegible]

Norfolk, lord treasurer, in the absence of the

[illegible]

quainted the house, "that the king was pre-

[illegible]

maj. considering how long this session had last-

[illegible]

the expence that must attend such a stay;

[illegible]

taken in framing a set of new laws, which his

[illegible]

After which follows a copy, in English, of the

[illegible]

lastly, told them, "that his maj. thought this a fit, if not a necessary opportunity, that every

[illegible]

his maj. intending this summer, by God's

[illegible]

in France, their longer stay might be a hinderance to his preparation; he had there-

[illegible]

Statute-Books only 18: for the titles of the public acts see our list at the end of this reign.

*Money raised by a Benevolence.*] Levies and

[illegible]

hood. Nor was he less solicitous about France,

[illegible]

English historians, may be consulted for a par-

[illegible]

and loans from his subjects; yet fortifications,

[illegible]

borrowed also divers sums of money of differ-

[illegible]

was seized, and sent to serve in the

[illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] All these ways and means [illegible]

[illegible] the Journal; and we meet with nothing more [illegible]

[illegible] surer of the household, and others, for grant- [illegible] another bill was read a 1st time, for the disso- [illegible]

[illegible] noise in the world; and, as lord Herbert well [illegible] man must think violent, when, adds he, they [illegible] colleges, free chapels, chantries, hospitals, fra- [illegible] priests, which had continuance in perpetuity. [illegible] the king's disposal; and that they should be in [illegible] nals; the Statute Books give us only 25.

[illegible] Journals; but historians are not so silent; for [illegible] mons had made an elegant oration, on pre- [illegible]

"Although my chancellor for the time being, [illegible] of my heart in so plain and simple a manner, [illegible] put me in remembrance of my duty; which [illegible] as a prince or governor should, and ought to [illegible] bare and barren; but of such small qualities as God hath endowed me withal, I render to [illegible] membered, I eftsoons thank you again, be- [illegible] not for our pleasure, but for our defence; not for our gain, but to our great cost, which we have lately sustained; as well in defence of [illegible] cannot a little rejoice, when I consider the perfect trust and confidence which you have [illegible] just proceedings for you; who without my de- [illegible] and disposition, all chantries, colleges, hospitals, and other places specified in a certain [illegible] church to decay; or learning, which is so great a jewel, to be minished; or poor and miserable to be unrelieved; you might say, that I being put in so special a trust, as I am in this

---

[illegible]

[illegible] speech; yet it is not to be doubted but Henry [illegible]

[illegible] case, were no trusty friend to you [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible]

these enormities corrected, [illegible] [illegible]

[illegible] the spiritual men [illegible]

[illegible] On the 27th [illegible] duke of Norfolk, and Henry earl of Surrey, as [illegible] ready passed; and therefore, because the king [illegible] maj. had directed a commission to him and [illegible] the usual words, 'Soit fait come il est desiré.' And thus the bill passed into a statute. The [illegible] by divine appointment; and the greatest part [illegible] minority of the said prince Edward; with the [illegible] king's death the parl. was dissolved; and that every man was at liberty to depart home. Ne- [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] tunage and poundage, for carrying on a war against France.—In his 4th, a grant of two more 10ths and 15ths, besides a Poll-Tax, on [illegible] a subsidy; but the value of the latter is un- [illegible] from the [illegible] to the 14th year [illegible]

[illegible] means were made use of [illegible] year, he had a 15th for the defence of the northern borders; and, in his 26th, a Subsidy of a 10th and 15th, besides a grant of the First [illegible] nefices, &c.—In his 32nd year, he had a Subsidy of one 15th and a 10th, and 4s. in the [illegible] very large Subsidy, for a war with Scotland and France; and, in the next, he issued a com- [illegible] his 37th year, he had a Subsidy of 2/8 in the [illegible] clergy: besides the immense sums that came [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] beans 3/4 per qr.; hay 5s. per load.—In 1515, [illegible] day, &c. in husbandry: a chief hind, carter, [illegible] with diet, 5s; common servant of husbandry [illegible] of a workman, from Easter to Michaelmas a free mason, at diet, 4d. without 6d.; a master carpenter, a rough mason, a tiler, a plumber, a bricklayer, a glazier, a carver, and a joiner, [illegible] diet, 3d. without, 5d.—A shipwright's wages, from Candlemas to Michaelmas: a master carpenter, with diet, 5d; without, 7d.; a hewer, with, 4d. without, 6d.; an able clincher, with, 3d. without, 5d.; an holder, with, 2d. without, 4d.; a master calker, with, 4d without, 6d.; a mean calker, with, 3d. without, 5d.; a calker, [illegible] to Easter, ditto, with diet, 1½d. without, 3d. In harvest, a mower, with diet, 4d. without, 6d.; a reaper and a carter, with, 3d. without, 5d.; a woman labourer, and other labourers, [illegible] Cortes, a Spaniard, and the foundation of the kingdom of New Spain was laid. A great [illegible]

[illegible] first nation that aggrandized itself by it; and [illegible] —In 1521 was a dearth; wheat sold for 1l. per [illegible] oats 3/10; beans 5/4.—In 1533, it was enacted by parl. that beef and pork should be sold for 1d. a pound, and veal or mutton for [illegible] price of Gascoygne, Guyenne, or French wines [illegible] at 12d. by retail.—In 1543, oats 3/4; beans 6/8.

*[illegible]*

Bedfordshire
Bedford
Berkshire
New Windsor
Reading
Wallingford
Buckinghamshire
Chipping Wycomb
[illegible]
Cambridge town
Cornwall
[illegible]
Leskard
Lostwithiel
Truro
Bodmin
Helston
Cumberland
Carlisle city
Derbyshire
Derby
Devonshire
Exeter city
Totness
Plymouth
Barnstaple
Plympton
Tavistock
Clifton-Dartmouth-Hardness
Dorsetshire
Dorchester
Lyme-Regis
Weymouth
Melcomb-Regis
Bridport
Shaftesbury
Wareham
Essex
Colchester
Maldon
[illegible]
Gloucester city
[illegible]
Hereford city
Leominster
[illegible]
[illegible]
Huntingdon
Kent
Canterbury city
Rochester city
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Middlesex
London city
Norfolk
Norwich city
Lynn-Regis
Great Yarmouth
[illegible]
Northampton
Northumberland
Newcastle upon Tyne
Nottinghamshire
Nottingham
Oxfordshire
Oxford city
[illegible]
Salop
Shrewsbury
[illegible] Bridge-north
Ludlow
Great Wenlocke
Somersetshire
[illegible] city
[illegible]
Wells city
Taunton
Bridgewater
Southampton
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Stafford
Newcastle under Lyme
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Gatton
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Hindon
Heytesbury
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Wootton-Basset
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

Counties and Boroughs - - 148
Members - - - - - - - - 298

*[illegible]*

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Glamorgan county
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Orford
[illegible]

Counties and Boroughs - 32
Members - - - - - - 38

*[illegible]*

1 Hen. VIII.—1. A revocation of an act made [illegible] 3d year of the reign of king Hen. the [illegible]

customers books. 6. Revocation of a statute [illegible] That no coin, plate, vessel, bullion, or jewels, [illegible]

3 Hen. VIII.—1. That no money, coin, [illegible] and commissions for finding of offices. 3. Con- [illegible] ing in long bows. 4. Of protections and li- [illegible] wages to soldiers in the king's war. 6. Con- [illegible] the king. 13. Adnulling licences for shooting [illegible]

[illegible] 4. For proclamations to be made before exigents be awarded in foreign counties. 5. Re- [illegible] and silver, and other silks. 7. Concerning [illegible]

5 Hen. VIII.—1. Concerning ministration of [illegible] cloths, of 5 marks, and under, may be carried [illegible] ceits in worsteds. 5. Concerning jurors in [illegible] market. 8. Concerning the manner and form [illegible]

6 Hen. VIII.—1. An act concerning apparel. 2. Concerning the maintenance of archery. [illegible] destructions, and pulling down of towns. [illegible] Canterbury. 18. For continuance of the under [illegible]

7 Hen. VIII.—1. An act to prevent the decay of towns. 2. A repeal of licences for im- [illegible] for rents and services. 5. Concerning artificers [illegible] married. 9. Concerning the liberty of cord- [illegible]

[illegible] cerning abridgments of plaints in assise. 4. [illegible] made in the star-chamber for artificers stran-

[illegible] made to the city of York, concerning the shipping of wools. 18. Concerning Newcastle upon [illegible] the chanc. and treas. for punishing of riots. 21. [illegible]mouth and Lynne.

[illegible] Hen. VIII.—1. [illegible] 4. Concerning exactions levied on apprentices. 5. [illegible] 7. Against conveying of horses out of this realm. 8. [illegible] strangers customs. 9. Against poisoning. 10. Concerning outlandish people calling themselves [illegible] 11. Concerning [illegible] 12. Directing how aged, poor and impotent persons [illegible] alms, shall be ordered, and how vagabonds and beggars shall be punished. 13. That no persons strangers, being a common baker, brewer, chirurgeon, or scrivener, shall be ac[illegible] 14. How persons committing petit treason, murder, or felony, [illegible] 15. [illegible] for his spiritual subjects of the province of [illegible] 16. [illegible] king's general pardon for his temporal subjects.

[illegible] Hen. VIII.—1. An act that no person convicted of petit treason, murder, or felony, shall be admitted to his clergy, under [illegible] deacon. 2. [illegible] this realm. 3. Against perjury, and untrue verdicts. 4. [illegible] barrels, kilderkins, [illegible] same barrels, kilderkins, and firkins shall contain. 5. Concerning commissions of sewers. 6. Concerning recognizances to be taken by the [illegible] stand in full strength: and how Gascoigne and French wines shall be brought in, [illegible] same and other wines sold. 8. Concerning the [illegible] maintenance of the [illegible] and ports of [illegible], Dartmouth, [illegible] Falmouth, and Fowey, in the counties of Devonshire and Cornwall. 9. That no persons shall be cited out of the diocese where he or she dwelleth, except in certain cases. 10. Against [illegible] trial of murders in cities and town. 14. Pro[illegible] of 5 R. 2, and in covenant and annuity. 15. [illegible]

[illegible] verdict [illegible] Concerning the true winding of wools. 18. Concerning pulling down [illegible] Hen. VIII.—1. [illegible] hemp. 5. Where a man killing a thief, shall [illegible] 6. Concerning [illegible] of wines. 7. To continue a former act made [illegible] crows and rooks. 11. For paving the highway between [illegible] apparel.

[illegible] Hen. VIII.—1. [illegible] cerning victuals. 3. That such persons as will [illegible] 6. For the avoiding [illegible] 7. [illegible] the king 5 marks. 11. Against taking of wild [illegible] For punishing of heresy. 15. Concerning [illegible] 16. [illegible] beneficed with cure. 17. Concerning shooting in cross-bows and hand-guns. 18. [illegible] within the county of Worcester. 19. Shewing [illegible] this realm.

[illegible] VIII.—1. An act [illegible] king's highness to be supreme head [illegible]

[illegible] of England, and to have authority to [illegible] act made for the surety of the succession of the king's highness in the crown of the realm. 3. Concerning the payments of first-fruits of all dignities, benefices and promotions spiri- [illegible] be up. 5. That murders and felonies done or [illegible] highways in Sussex. 8. For the re-edifying of void grounds in the city of Norwich. 9. For [illegible] of Hereford, Gloucester and Salop. 12. For [illegible] mouth. 17. That no farmers or spiritual per- [illegible]

[illegible] they paid their first-fruits. 9. Whereby all butchers be licensed to sell flesh by retail, [illegible] the 24th day of April, which shall be in the [illegible] white woollen cloths of 4 pounds and under, and coloured cloths of 3 pounds and under, [illegible] cerning an order for tithes through the realm.

[illegible] 26. For laws and justice to be ministered in [illegible] not lands above 200l. by the year.

[illegible] of Wales at any time within 3 years next ensuing. 4. Repealing the statute lately made [illegible] 5. For avoiding of exactions taken upon apprentices in the cities, boroughs and towns [illegible] tutes for beggars and vagabonds; and against [illegible] Salop; and against the vice of buggery. 7. [illegible] of this realm. 8. For the continuance of the [illegible] copper out of this realm; and for making of [illegible] of 2 years. 9. For continuance of the statutes of perjury, for making of gaols, for pew- [illegible] Rome. 11. For the restitution of the first- [illegible]

[illegible] 13. Concerning [illegible] certain cases.

[illegible] tenants and tenants in common [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] 33. Concerning [illegible] And enrolment of [illegible] 34. For the [illegible] of [illegible] Concerning [illegible] of [illegible] That [illegible] is no descent [illegible] the law [illegible] grantees of reversions to take [illegible] the condition to be performed [illegible] 36. That [illegible] of the [illegible] 37. For the [illegible] of rents by executors of tenant in [illegible] 38. Concerning precontracts [illegible] degrees of [illegible] 40. Concerning the [illegible] 41. Concerning [illegible] 42. Concerning barbers and [illegible] 43. [illegible] the county palatine of Chester. 44. [illegible] the town of [illegible] 45. [illegible] first fruits and [illegible] 46. [illegible] of the court [illegible] king's wards. [illegible] Norwich [illegible] 48. Concerning the castle of [illegible] Concerning the king's most [illegible] by the [illegible]

33 Hen. VIII. 1. An act [illegible] letters of [illegible] [illegible]

the folding of cloths in North Wales. 4. Con-

[illegible] guns. 7. Concerning the conveyance of

of artillery, debarring unlawful games. 10.

king's court. 13. Concerning certain lord-

acts. 18. For the true making of kersies. 19. Expounding a certain statute concerning

of the late queen Katherine and her com-

and liveries. 23. To proceed by a commission of oyer and terminer against such persons as shall confess treasons, &c. without remanding

frustrate certain conveyances devised by

part. 28. For the chanc. of the duchy of Lancaster, the chanc. of the augmentation,

to sue and to be sued. 30. Confirming the

parish of Over. 33. Concerning the privilege of Kingston upon Hull. 34. For the

furs. 35. Concerning the conduits of Glou-

37. Touching the honour of Ampthill. 38. Concerning the honour of Grafton. 39. Con-

to be one sole chapter of itself. 16. For the

and to have allowances of their reasonable expences, in the court of exchequer. 17. For

contained in the same. 22. That fines in

a windmill and a conduit within the king's

repairing and amending of certain decayed

For the repealing of a certain statute

burgesses for the parl. in Wales. 40. For the for abolish

the officers of sir John Hayward terms them, in the church

he peace. 2. [*A Parl. called.*] Some bps. opposing

reign. The following is a

siastical jurisdiction. 12. For the erection of

of the council

of Lancaster.

seal

Geo. Brokeld, Cobham

value of 6l.

Francis earl of Hunt-

Monteagle

* * *

moreland

John earl of Bath

John lord Bray

with Scotland; some overtures of a marriage

the Journals of the Ho

a period from which

Commons are ex-

more than a diurnal

&c. but yet will be of some use in

as far as the river Eske;

those of the commons, the cessant part

n the banks

Nov. 15, a bill for the admission of bishops

[illegible]

congé d'elire was tedious and expensive, that there was only a shadow of election in it, and

[illegible]

were to be consecrated: and whereas the bps.

[illegible]

cesses, in their own names, as they were wont to do in the time of popery; and since all ju-

[illegible]

and all processes should be from henceforth

[illegible]

*A Subsidy.*] Nov. 21, a bill for a Subsidy

[illegible]

called customs, was brought in; which after-

[illegible]

wines 6s.; 12d. for every aulme of rhenish. The

[illegible]

Nov. 29th, a bill against Vagabonds was brought in; by which it was enacted, "that

[illegible]

[illegible] her; or that should run away from work,

[illegible]

be his slaves for two years; and they were to be marked with the letter V, imprinted with a

[illegible]

the 15th it was read a 3rd time, and passed

[illegible]

Durham, Ely, Hereford, and Chichester, then

[illegible]

lands being sold at a low value, enriched many

[illegible]

concern to every subject, a committee was appointed to meet a committee of the commons at 2 o'clock, after dinner, in order to treat

[illegible]

land; and dr. Heylin observes, "all men

[illegible]

is a mistake, for still the law for burning of heretics subsisted; of which kind of execu-

[illegible]

were passed; after which the ld. chanc. pro-

[illegible]

merary acts are only on private affairs.

[illegible]

the ld. chanc. declared to them, that for cer-

[illegible]

the 15th of Oct.; and the king's letters patents, appointing such a prorogation were

[illegible]

sinces; but nothing of any consequence was transacted till the 21st of Dec. on which day [illegible]

[illegible] the house was granted to John Keysar; ser- [illegible]

*Act for Uniformity in Religion.*] Jan. 15, the bill for an Uniformity of Service and Ad- [illegible] out the realm, was passed in the Lords. The preamble of the act sets forth, "That there [illegible]

[illegible] effectual endeavours could not stop the incli- [illegible] customs; which the king had not punished, believing they flowed from a good zeal. But [illegible]

[illegible] and to the practise of the primitive church, [illegible]

[illegible] in the tower of London, or the prison of the Fleet, should be pardoned: and did enact, [illegible] to it; and that such of the clergy as should [illegible] other manner, should upon the 1st conviction be imprisoned 6 months, and forfeit a year's [illegible] forfeit all their church preferments, and suffer a year's imprisonment: and for the 3d offence should be imprisoned during life. And all that [illegible] it, or threaten any clergymen for using it, [illegible] for the 2d; and to forfeit all their goods, and be imprisoned for life, upon a 3d offence. [illegible]

[illegible] these in the book were not omitted." This [illegible] was said the book was drawn 'by the aid of [illegible] to be so [illegible]

[illegible] motions and consultations are directed or [illegible] spirit; which do oft help good men, even in [illegible]

[illegible] tested against it, viz. the bps. of Norwich, [illegible]

One thing must not be omitted; that whilst [illegible] Storey, a member, spoke so sharply against it, [illegible] words he spoke from were these, 'Woe unto thee, Oh England! when thy king is a child.' [illegible] against him for it; but, upon his humble sub- [illegible]

[illegible] clares, "That it were better for priests and [illegible] less distracted with secular cares; so that it [illegible] ed: therefore all laws and canons that had [illegible] ing to the order of the church. But a proviso [illegible]

[illegible] *Clergy.*] Two other acts passed this session, [illegible] mony, then near dissipated. "The first (says [illegible] dual tithes to trust to, are thereby in a far

council, in that house.

[illegible] statute for that purpose.—On the 18th, a bill [illegible] but rejected; because by it the bps. seemed [illegible]

[illegible]

*Sons of Peers.*] We must not omit one [illegible] se; and that sir Francis Russel, being, by [illegible] the lord Russel, it was, [illegible] 21st [illegible] Jan. carried upon a debate, "That he should [illegible] session; the Statute-Books only 24.

[illegible] clared, That all books used in churches, such [illegible] any church or chapel, were required to deface [illegible] were appointed to visit the churches in Lon[illegible] down and broke in pieces; which example [illegible] churches in England. By which a great many [illegible] there was a proviso, in this act, That Images [illegible] saint, might still remain.

[illegible] prorogued, to the 10th of Oct. next ensuing. [illegible] 2d of March, but did not meet to transact [illegible]

*A new Book of Common Prayer authorized by Parl.*] Jan. 23, a bill was brought into the Lords for the appointing of an Order to come to Divine Service; which was agreed to [illegible] mons, called, "An act for the uniformity [illegible] rise a new Common Prayer-book, according [illegible] churches; therefore all are required, after the [illegible] and holiday to common-prayers under pain of [illegible] temporal, and the commons, did, in God's [illegible] naries, to endeavour the due execution of that act, as they would answer before God for such [illegible] other cause; and that for the better explana[illegible] to the true honouring of Almighty God; there[illegible] form of making bps. priests and deacons; and [illegible] been enacted 3 years before, when the former [illegible]

*B[illegible] Clergy.*] Feb. 6, a bill for the Marriage of the Clergy was [illegible] By it was set forth, "That many took occa[illegible] riages, and accounted the children, begotten of them, to be bastards; to the high dishonour [illegible] by the law of God; to which they had not [illegible] not heard with due reverence; whereupon it [illegible]

[illegible]

rant, infidel, or usurper of the crown; for the [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] be a fast.

[illegible]

passed the Lords, and [illegible] there the [illegible] tainder [illegible], in the manner above recited.

The bill of Attainder not passing in the [illegible], the proviso in the Treason-Act, mentioned be- [illegible] against the bp. of Durham, unless he was con- [illegible] of Northumberland a perfect knowledge how [illegible] In short, the minister made no motion for a sup- [illegible] then very great; and to gain one he found it necessary to call a new parl. Accordingly, on the 15th of April, the old one was dissolved, after sitting almost 5 years; and the minister made it his business, all that summer, to gain friends all over England, in order to [illegible]

*A new Parl. called.*] Towards the close of the year 1552, the king called a new parl. [illegible] the realm. The letter itself, which the aforesaid author has given us, is a sufficient testi- [illegible]

"Trusty and well-beloved, we greet you well. Forasmuch as we have, for diverse good considerations, caused a summonition for a [illegible] weal of our realm, that in the election of such [illegible] ties, to be of such a great council. And there- [illegible] of our writs by your direction, for the election of citizens and burgesses, [illegible] and wisdom; in such case their directions be [illegible] for advice and good council."

After [illegible] king himself, recommending particular persons [illegible] writs for calling this parl. and these letters were sent out in Jan. 1553, and it was ordered [illegible] in this manner. "The 1st of March began a parl. at Westminster; and all the lords spiri- [illegible] Whitehall, in their robes, where a sermon was preached in the king's chapel, by dr. Ridley [illegible] done, the king, with the lords in order, went into the king's great chamber, on the king's [illegible] a proposition for the king, which being ended [illegible] was so far gone in a consumption that he was [illegible] was to bring in a bill, for the better answering [illegible] rejected it; but sent back a new bill to the [illegible] of the Coinage, were introduced; the 1st was, [illegible] other, against the exportation of Gold and [illegible] but the last passed into a law; which was no more than reviving a statute made the 17th Edw. 4, for the same purpose; and was to [illegible]

*A Subsidy.*] March 13. A bill for a subsidy [illegible] years. This bill occasioned great debates in [illegible] long accusation of the duke of Somerset, "For involving the king in wars, wasting his [illegible] a most terrible rebellion. In fine, considering [illegible] father, the loss he put himself to in reforming the coin, and they finding his temper to be set [illegible] traordinary demand of a supply, or on the preamble is uncertain. But, it is probable, that [illegible] the latter; which the duke of Northumberland [illegible] been to the people. The clergy also, to shew [illegible] the king 6s. in the pound on all their benefices; which grant, according to custom, ever since the Reformation, was confirmed by parl.

[illegible] might hold any Spiritual or Ecclesiastical Promo- [illegible] this pretence, that they intended to fit themselves, by study, for holy orders; but these [illegible] ther. The bps. had prevailed upon the lords to pass the bill; but, at the 3rd reading, it was cast out by the Commons; which shews [illegible] house when so reasonable a bill was rejected.

*The Bishoprick of Durham suppressed.*] The most extraordinary act, on Church Affairs, [illegible] pression of the Bishoprick of Durham. The [illegible] The preamble sets forth, "That this bishoprick being then void of a prelate, the gift thereof was in the king's pleasure; and the [illegible] self into several shires far distant, it could not be sufficiently served by one bp.; and since [illegible] of good preaching and good searching: there- [illegible] found a cathedral church at the latter place, [illegible] rick of Durham is utterly extinguished and dis- [illegible] ther with a deanry and chapter at Newcastle; with a proviso that the rights of the deanry, [illegible]

[illegible] ended the last parl. in this reign; for Edw. VI. [illegible] dying of a deep consumption, July the 6th, 1553, in the 16th year of his age, and the 7th [illegible]

### *Taxes during the Reign of Edward VI.*

[illegible] and cloths were released: but the relief for [illegible] pound.

### *Price of Provisions in the Reign of Edward VI.*

In 1550, a large house in Channon-row, West- [illegible] at 30s. per ann.—In 1551, wheat, 8s. per qr.; malt, 5/1; malmsey, 4d. per qt.; oats, 8s.; straw, 5s. per load; coals, 12s. per ditto.—In [illegible] wheat, 8s. per qr.; malt, 5s.; Muscadel wine, 6d. per quart; Malmsey do. 5d.; red wine, 3d.

### *List of Counties and Bo[illegible] was granted or restored by Edward VI.*

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Westlow
G[illegible]pound
[illegible]
[illegible]
Newport

[illegible]

[illegible] ment of the Altar, and of receiving thereof [illegible] and for the relief of the poor and impotent [illegible] 4. For [illegible] worsted yarn in Norfolk. 7. For the continu- [illegible] For the uniting of certain churches within the [illegible] 11. For the repeal of a certain statute made [illegible] of most famous memory, Henry VIII. for revoking of acts of parliament. 12. For the re- [illegible] and poundage of merchandizes, with a proviso [illegible]

2—3 Edw. VI.—1. An act for the uniformity [illegible] throughout the realm. 2. For the reformation [illegible] For the sheriffs of [illegible] accounts. 5. Touching the remitting of fee-farms for three years. 6. Against the exaction of money and other things, by any officer for licence to traffic into Ireland. 7. Against [illegible] cheators. 9. For the true currying of leather. 10. For the true making of malt. 11. For [illegible] surance to the tenants, of grants and leases [illegible] Against the shooting of hail-shot. 15. Touch- [illegible]

[illegible] 21. To take away all positive laws [illegible] repeal of a statute touching marriage con- [illegible]

[illegible] cloths. 3. Concerning the improvements of commons and waste grounds. 4. Concerning [illegible] jects. 6. Concerning the repeal of a branch [illegible] the statute of sewers. 9. For buying of [illegible] England. 15. Against fond and [illegible]

---

[illegible] Mary, by adhering to Wyat's rebellion; but [illegible]

[illegible] farms, mentioned in the last session. 19. For [illegible] tle. 20. Touching the repeal of a certain [illegible] and also a grant of a subsidy to be paid in one [illegible] the king's majesty's most free and general pardon.

[illegible] 1. An act for the uniformity of [illegible] sacraments. 2. For the provision and relief [illegible] corn. 6. For the true making of woollen cloth. 7. Limiting the times for buying and selling of wools. 8. Limiting what persons shall weave or make broad woollen cloth. 9. That no [illegible] For declaration of a statute made for the mar[illegible] their children. 13. For the declaration of a statute made in the 31st year of king Henry 8, [illegible] grators, forestallers, and ingrossers. 15. A-[illegible] the making of hats, dornecks, and coverlets, [illegible]

7 Edw. VI.—1. An act for the true answer[illegible] bound for their collections. 5. To avoid the excessive prices of wines. 6. Reviving a sta[illegible] the realm. 7. For the assise of fuel. 8. For the true fulling and thicking of caps. 9. For [illegible] 10. [illegible] Gateside to the town of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. 11 [illegible] 12. For the grant of a subsidy and two 15ths granted to the king's majesty by the temporalty. 13. For the confirmation of a subsidy granted by [illegible] 14 For the king's [illegible] general and free pardon.

## MARY.

On the 5th of Aug. 1553, writs were issued for a parl. to meet at Westminster, on the 5th of Oct. following. In the mean time, it was thought necessary that Mary should be crowned, which was done on the 1st of that month. And, in order to soften the minds of her subjects, and dispose them to a good opinion of [illegible] bp. of Winchester, not only put out a general Pardon, but published a proclamation to this [illegible] princes, when the good of the public and honour of the realm required it; and the queen, [illegible] Northumberland bore rule; though she found [illegible] brother's debts, which for her own honour, and [illegible] having a special regard to the welfare of her subjects, and accounting their loving hearts [illegible] therefore, since in her brother's last parl. two 10ths, two 15ths, and a subsidy, both out of [illegible] his debts, which were now due to her; she, of [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] Henry earl of [illegible]

John [illegible] of Bath
W[illegible]
[illegible]
W[illegible] H[illegible]
Th. W[illegible] [illegible]
W[illegible]
G[illegible]
J[illegible]
Ge[illegible]
[illegible]
Henry Parker lord Morley
R[illegible] lord Rich
W[illegible] W[illegible]by
G[illegible]
C[illegible]
Th[illegible]
H[illegible] B[illegible]
T[illegible]
J[illegible] M[illegible]
R[illegible]
W[illegible]
J[illegible]

Th[illegible] Vaux of H[illegible]
W[illegible]
W[illegible]
C[illegible]
W[illegible] D[illegible]
C[illegible]
Th. S[illegible] Mont-eagle
J[illegible]
E[illegible] Lord High Admiral of England
The said Dacres of Gillesland
W[illegible] P[illegible] of B[illegible]
[illegible] W[illegible]
[illegible]
Ja[illegible] L[illegible] of [illegible]
G[illegible] lord Talbot

[illegible] in Westminster hall, [illegible] the Queen [illegible] [illegible] Duke of [illegible] Westmorland [illegible] the [illegible]

The [illegible] bills [illegible] lost, were at last [illegible] to the [illegible] Journal [illegible] Commons [illegible] [illegible] Parliament [illegible] of this session [illegible] November [illegible] Westminster [illegible] "How far," says bp. Burnet, "this was contrary to the rights of [illegible] not determine."

*Act for Limiting of Treason and Felony.*] The only public Act which passed in this session was one for repealing certain Treasons, Felonies, and Præmunires. By which it was enacted, that nothing should be judged treason but what was within the statute of the 25th of Edw. III. [illegible] Henry VIII. excepting [illegible] the benefit of the said [illegible] 1st day of September, were also [illegible] of the [illegible] pardon. To [illegible] better [illegible] this pass, there were many [illegible] who [illegible] themselves [illegible] against king Henry's laws, especially such [illegible] that [illegible] Some of [illegible] and [illegible] who [illegible] learned counsel [illegible] against them [illegible] Draco's laws, which were written in blood. [illegible] laws that Dionysius, [illegible] tyrant, ever made. [illegible] bitter [illegible] bastinado on the [illegible] that [illegible] would have thought [illegible] would have been [illegible] tender of [illegible] But the [illegible] much [illegible] The preamble of this act declares, "that the [illegible] commonwealth [illegible] and others of good [illegible] Therefore, [illegible] that [illegible] shall be [illegible] or [illegible] that [illegible] treason [illegible] or deemed to be such [illegible] provided that [illegible] any way extend to [illegible] September arrested or [illegible] or to any person [illegible] petty treason, &c. [illegible] day of September. And [illegible] goods, as the law, [illegible]." By which [illegible] those of king Edward's [illegible] or Protestant [illegible] which had been taken up and [illegible] receive no benefit by this [illegible] clemency. Bp. Burnet also observes, that this act of repeal was no more [illegible] the beginning of the [illegible] without the clog of such a severe proviso.

Two private bills were also passed in this [illegible] first session, [illegible] for the lady Gertrude Courtney, widow to Henry [illegible] When [illegible] cerning king Henry's marriage with the queen's mother, declaring the queen's highness, as the [illegible] This bill was sent down by the lords, on the [illegible] the 28th; so strangely, says Burnet, was the stream turned, that a divorce, which had been for 7 years much desired by the nation, was [illegible] The preamble to this act has these remarkable expressions; "That truth, how much soever ob[illegible] and the advice of the wisest men in the realm, [illegible] maj. and other issue, and a course of great happiness; but then a very few malicious [illegible] did endeavour to break that happy agreement between them, and studied to possess the king with a scruple in his conscience about it; and to support that did get the seals of some universities against it, a few persons being corrupted with money for that end. [illegible] law of God, could not be so broken, since what God had joined together no man could [illegible] did esteem plagues sent from God for it; there[illegible] riage to be unlawful, and of no force from the [illegible] house. In the end it was carried and passed into a law; it declared the great disorders [illegible]

[illegible] authority of the catholic church. Thereupon, [illegible] Edward's time, concerning religion, were now re[illegible] one blow," says Heylin, "was felled down all that had been done in the Reformation for [illegible]

*Act relating to Riots.*] Burnet observes, [illegible] the old service should be again set up; punish[illegible] tual courts. But this fell in the house of lords; not so much, adds this author, out of any op[illegible] reformers in church-affairs, there was another introduced for the security of the public peace. [illegible] By which it was enacted, "That if any, to the [illegible] gion; and being required by any, having the [illegible]

[illegible] a bill for the Attainder of the duke of Nor[illegible] prisoner in the Tower all the last reign; and, being a zealous catholic, Mary thought a person of his great rank and fortune would add a [illegible]

[illegible]

London, for their Speaker; who made an elo- [illegible]

[illegible]

therefore, in her maj.'s name, he adjourned [illegible]

[illegible]

*Philip.*] April 7th a bill was brought into [illegible]

[illegible]

that he should admit a set number of English [illegible]

[illegible]

should have their education in this realm, and [illegible]

[illegible]

crown. That he should preserve our shipping, [illegible]

[illegible]

France; but that the peace between the En- [illegible]

[illegible]

commons brought in a bill, declaring, 'that [illegible]

[illegible]

the prerogative to be in the king's person; [illegible]

queen had no right to them; it was therefore [illegible]

the hands of male or female; and whatsoever [illegible]

[illegible]

thing was without dispute: and that which was [illegible]

slight, he was afraid there was a trick in [illegible]

[illegible]

queror exercised, in seizing the lands of the [illegible]

[illegible]

He did not know what relation this might have to the intended marriage; wherefore he warned [illegible]

[illegible]

the late duke of Northumberland; and desired [illegible]

[illegible]

"That certain ambitious persons, taking ad- [illegible]

[illegible]

solution of the bishoprick; that it was done [illegible]

and their friends, by seizing the lands of that [illegible]

[illegible]

foul and illegal. That upon a full examina- [illegible]

[illegible]

instrument [illegible] restore the bishoprick to its former interest, [illegible]

*Privilege of Parl.*] April 17, Mr. Read and Mr. [illegible] from the Lords, a subpoena, that Mr. Beau[illegible] the earl of Huntingdon, in this parl. time, and [illegible] fence:—It is ordered, "that 8 of this house [illegible] him, and put him in fear of his life; where[illegible] that he had stricken him; for that he took away a net out of Mr. Bray's house in Bedfordshire, and Johnson said it was lord Mor[illegible] day it is ordered, That the serjeant shall [illegible] upon Mounyngton discharged.

[illegible] of the late duke of Suffolk, sir Tho. Wyat, and others: it was read thrice that day, and com[illegible] mons inform us, that it was not till the last [illegible] was debated in that house; when, upon the question, the clause for forfeiting entailed [illegible] into a law at that time; for it is not men[illegible] Journal; and this, or another act of like na[illegible] came to the house and passed them; and then [illegible]

## PHILIP AND MARY.

[illegible]

[illegible] espoused to the queen, at Winchester, on the [illegible] dukes of Austria; dukes of Milan, Burgundy, and Brabant; counts of Hauspurg, Flanders, and Tyrol."

*A Parl. called.*] The marriage being so[illegible] their majesties thought proper to call a new [illegible] 11th of Nov. following. It is to be observed, [illegible] law united to the other royal titles. And this, bp. Burnet observes, was urged as a good reason for annulling the statutes of this parl. [illegible] was not called by a lawful writ.

*The Queen's Letter to the Sheriffs for elect*[illegible] the commons might be the better drawn to it, [illegible]

[illegible] Amen."

[illegible]

[illegible] from all heresie and schism [illegible] and every one of them, [illegible] at this [illegible] And [illegible] restore [illegible] to the unity [illegible] church, [illegible] praise, in the name [illegible] the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. Amen."

After this general Absolution was so given and received of the king, queen, and [illegible] lords, with [illegible] went into the king's chapel and there sung Te Deum. [illegible] great [illegible] for the new [illegible]

The [illegible] went up [illegible] to [illegible] their [illegible] sense of the [illegible] Absolution. [illegible] According [illegible] on [illegible] were [illegible] for the drawing up a bill [illegible] statutes.

*Acts against the Pope repealed.*] This [illegible] was carried on all the [illegible], and [illegible] that [illegible] was read the first time in the [illegible] this title, "A bill for the repeal of [illegible] Acts made against the See of Rome." It was read [illegible] on [illegible] day, a day we have never [illegible] sitting [illegible] be supposed that [illegible] they could offer no [illegible] than to repeal those acts which [illegible] kingdom. [illegible] was done [illegible] On the [illegible] of Dec. the bill was read [illegible] and passed with the [illegible] of the whole house, the bp. of London [illegible] The title [illegible] "a bill for repealing [illegible] statutes, articles, and provisions made against the See [illegible] of Rome, since the [illegible] Henry VIII. [illegible] for the establishment [illegible] possessions [illegible] to the laity."

*[illegible] against Heresy, revived.*] To [illegible] eager the commons were to [illegible] the pope and the queen, [illegible] revived the statutes made by Ric. II. Hen. IV. and Hen. the Vth, against [illegible] It was brought into the lords, on the [illegible] of Dec. and passed there on the 18th. [illegible] commons [illegible] passed and sent up another [illegible] to the lords, for [illegible] married priests. Burnet tells us, that [illegible] was [illegible] argued in the lower house, [illegible] the first draught was rejected, but a new [illegible] and sent up to the lords on the [illegible] of Dec. But they, finding it would take [illegible] great part of the right of [illegible] that were made by married priests and bps [illegible]

In the printed book of Statutes, only 17 [illegible] for this session, [illegible] The reason [illegible] that the private acts [illegible] The [illegible] the public acts [illegible] at the end of this

[illegible]

[illegible] *House.*] A circumstance of a very extraordinary nature happened in this parl.; and the like of [illegible] course of this history. This was a voluntary [illegible] honour to their memories, has in his Institutes [illegible] down their names, [illegible]

[illegible] Com. Oxon
[illegible]
[illegible] Ward
[illegible] Com. Berks
[illegible]
— Courtney
[illegible]
William Bainbrigge
[illegible]

[illegible]
John Moyne
[illegible]
Nicholas Debden
[illegible]

[illegible] members; and ordered Edw. Griffith, esq. the [illegible] king's bench. On an information being pre- [illegible] inhibition, in the beginning of the parl.; 6 of [illegible] as over Europe, for a blessing which was likely [illegible] diately passed a bill for the maintenance, sup- [illegible]

*A Parl. called.*] Another parl. was called [illegible]

[illegible] The journals of the commons tell us, that the bp. of Winchester opened this parl. by a speech, importing, that it was called for a necessary aid to be made to her maj.; and that this [illegible]

[illegible] posed that the ld. treasurer, the marq. of Winchester, 'virtute officii,' adjourned the parl. from day to day; since there is no mention of [illegible] gence of the clerks, the adjournments are not [illegible] we find that the ld. treasurer, by the queen's [illegible] nals of the commons inform us, that Oct. 23, [illegible] read a bull from the Pope, confirming what [illegible] knights and burgesses in the time of parl.

Oct. 24, a motion was made for a Supply to be granted to her maj.; and Mr. Comptroller, [illegible] ordered to draw up a bill for that purpose. [illegible] a Subsidy and two 15ths, but on the 3d reading [illegible] and the next day, Mr. sec. Petre declared to [illegible] refuse them; on which the bill for a Subsidy, [illegible] a bill for suppressing of First Fruits and tenths, and the resigning up all Impropri- [illegible] the church; to be disposed of, as the legate [illegible] a schedule annexed to it, requiring certain [illegible] the queen had a much greater design which [illegible] devolved upon the crown; and from the crown [illegible]

[illegible] undertaking. "Certain it is," says Dr. Heylin, [illegible]

[illegible] the noise of this Restitution; insomuch that [illegible] hands upon their swords, affirming, not with- [illegible]

[illegible] sent for that house, and told them, "She could not, with a good conscience, take the [illegible]

[illegible] her maj. one Story, a member of that house, falling on his knees, told the queen, that the [illegible]

[illegible] "knowing that he spoke of a good zeal," for- [illegible]

[illegible] He was now on the other side of the question, [illegible]

[illegible] should be left out of this bill; since, as was [illegible] would raise great jealousies; for it would be [illegible]

house; some saying that the clergy would rob [illegible]

[illegible] clear a light as possible; and, especially, since [illegible] extinguished, and all rectories, benefices im- [illegible] of Henry VIII. are given up to the Church [illegible]

But then there was a proviso for saving the [illegible] is likewise a clause for exonerating the king [illegible]

[illegible] exchequer to 6 different persons, 3 of the spirituality, and 3 of the temporality, to call 12 [illegible] poral estates, and to rate and apportion how [illegible]

*Privilege of Parl.*] Nov. 20, "it is ordered [illegible]

[illegible] to confer with the lords, for that cause; and [illegible] pass the bills; after which, the marq. of Winchester, lord high treasurer, the chancellor

*A Parl. called.*] We have now a space of

ing an aid to her maj. And accordingly the

a bill was sent up by the commons, for grant-

a liberal example by taxing themselves in a subsidy of 8s. in the pound, to be paid in 4

l for the lay subsidy, &c. passed the house

quaint us, "that on the 21th of Jan the lord-

a committee of the lords; which consisted of 8 earls, 8 bps. and 8 barons. The commons

was first read for a grant of a subsidy and two

commons in a committee. The bill was read

ing the grant of the subsidy; which the queen

was designed chiefly for confirming the religi-

Copley, a member, happened to say, in the debate, "that he did not approve of such a ge-

tus; and Copley was made to withdraw; he

offence. She returned for answer "that, at their request, she readily forgave him; but, de-

in the Journals relative to this affair.

not have their clergy, to which was added, at

hinder so useful a bill from passing, the church-

a law in this reign.—An act, inflicting 5 years

the Statutes at Large

be revoked.—Feb. 5, a committee was assigned to examine a matter against Walter [illegible] admiral court, hath a warrant to obtain a writ [illegible] inform us, was only reading some bills, seemingly of no great importance; except one, the [illegible] licence, under the great seal of England.' [illegible] the Press, which we have yet met with, it is [illegible] that the art of printing, which had not then been much more than half a century in use, [illegible] of parl. to restrain it. What fate this bill [illegible] uncertain; for, at the third reading, on the [illegible] This is all we can meet with, worthy of notice, in the authority above-cited; but, the Journals [illegible] to put the kingdom in a posture of defence, in [illegible] showed the necessity of granting a Subsidy, to defend the nation, both from the French and [illegible] withdrew; but, though the commons entered, [illegible] ing a Subsidy, was doubtless occasioned by the queen's death; since, in all probability, [illegible] time to frame a bill for that purpose; for, on the [illegible]

[illegible] them; when they should hear certain matters [illegible]

*Taxes during this Reign.*

[illegible] age for life.—In her 3rd year she had a sub- [illegible]

*[illegible]*

[illegible] 10s.; for threshing a qr. of wheat, 1/1; for [illegible] 2l.; pease, 2l. 6/8; but after harvest, wheat at London was sold for 5s.; malt, 6/8.; rye, 3/4; and in the country, wheat was 4s.; malt, 3/8; rye, 2/8 per qr.; so that a penny wheat-loaf, which before harvest was 11 ounces, [illegible] rye, 8s.; barley, 5s.; a good sheep sold for 2/10.

*[illegible]*

[illegible]
St. Ives [illegible]
Castle-Rising [illegible]
[illegible]

Boroughs 14 - - Members 25.

*Public Acts passed in this Reign.*

1 Mary, [illegible]

1 Mary, sess. 2.—1. An act declaring the [illegible]

[illegible] day of July last past, and before the 1st [illegible] the [illegible] being current within this realm, or of the queen's [illegible] Touching the corporation of the physicians in London. 10. For the uniting, dissolving, or [illegible] 13. For the continuance of certain statutes 14. For the continuance of a statute made for [illegible] ing of the parish church of st. Elens in Staine- [illegible] porality. 18. Of a subsidy of tunnage and poundage of divers merchandizes.

1 Mary, sess. 3.—1. An act declaring that the regal power of this realm is in the queen's majesty, as fully and absolutely as ever it was [illegible] queen's highness most noble marriage. 3. For [illegible] the continuance of a statute made for the re- [illegible] pairing of a causey betwixt Bristol and Gloucester. 7. Touching cloth-making in corporate-towns and market-towns. 8. Touching [illegible] ing ordinances and rules in cathedral churches and schools. 10. For the repealing of a statute made for the uniting of the parish churches [illegible] certain statutes.

1 and 2 Philip and Mary.—1. An act touching [illegible] ditious words and rumours. 4. For the punishment of certain persons calling themselves [illegible] over the sea. [illegible] Rome, [illegible] Henry VIII [illegible]

[illegible]

2 and 3 Philip and Mary.—1. An act for the re-edifying of castles and forts, and for the [illegible] Scotland. 2. For the re-edifying of decayed [illegible] spiritual and ecclesiastical promotions, and of [illegible] 9. To make void divers licences of houses [illegible] manslaughter or felony. 11. Touching wearers [illegible] five miles of Cambridge and Oxford. 16 Touching watermen and bargemen upon the [illegible] confirmation of a subsidy granted by the clergy [illegible] 3. For the taking of musters. 4. That accessaries [illegible] have the benefit of clergy. 5. Touching the [illegible] 7. To make up the jury with 'circumstantibus,' [illegible] majesty, is a party. 8. For the punishment [illegible]

[illegible]

to the house on that day; but had sent a [illegible]

[illegible]

Wm. marq. of Win- [illegible]

Henry earl of West- [illegible]

[illegible]

And here, my lords, I wish (not without great [illegible]

[illegible]

from a man abashed, and well nigh astonied, [illegible]

[illegible] whether the laws, before this time made, be [illegible] but for a time, be meet to be continued for ever, or for a season. Besides, whether any [illegible] and too gentle: to be short, you are to con- [illegible] cannot see how a good true Englishman can [illegible] breed in his breast two contrary effects; comfort, I mean, and discomfort, joy and sadness: for, on the one part, how can a man [illegible] that be amiss; to continue and make firm [illegible] wedded to her [illegible] grudge, whereby any tumult or stirs might [illegible]

[illegible] purpose I pretermit, partly because I ever [illegible] sence; but, chiefly, for that it requireth a per- [illegible] and nature concurs, and not to me, a man to [illegible] fort, they be neither few nor little. But here [illegible] be done; very loth I am to utter that which is [illegible] comfortable for you to hear: but, because [illegible] constrained of necessity I see I must trouble [illegible] imperial crown a greater loss in honour, [illegible] been so great a help for the [illegible] but, so much as this, hath kept a great part [illegible] yet, as I suppose, is able to be under- [illegible]

[illegible]

occasion, upon every side, and in every time, to annoy you; and how the time most meet

[illegible]

all evil happs; the strongest wall and defence

[illegible]

experience and time to learn less: but, in my

[illegible]

ings. When, I say, a man remembereth and

[illegible]

from hope of recovery of that that is lost, without some aid or contribution of the sub-

[illegible]

asked, thus I mean to answer; That I think no man so blind but seeth it, no man so deaf

[illegible]

understandeth it. Marry, withal, I think there

[illegible]

remedies, wherein only this I have to say,

[illegible]

ence and reason meet, that every one parti-

[illegible]

versally. Neither can I see, things standing

[illegible]

of fire, would not gladly pluck down part, to

[illegible]

the wise merchant, in every adventure of

[illegible]

to her subjects, I partly do understand, and

[illegible]

strain the noble nature of such a princess,

[illegible]

ness unto? What a grief and torment this is to a noble mind! what a grief? surely such a

[illegible]

will, no matter of displeasure, no private

[illegible]

pity!) but a matter for the universal weal of this realm, the defence of our country, the

[illegible]

freely to offer; so great is the trust that she

[illegible]

you notice."

[illegible] 3rd time a bill for the recognition of the queen's [illegible]

[illegible] day was read a bill wherein certain offences are declared treason; and another bill against [illegible]

[illegible] a committee of 24 members of the commons were appointed to meet and treat of a conve- [illegible]

[illegible] 'supremum caput ecclesiæ' were omitted. Feb. 3rd, Mr. Carrel reported from the said committee, that it was agreed by them, "that [illegible]

[illegible] find in their Journals that house, according to [illegible]

[illegible] several knights of shires and burgesses for ci- [illegible]

[illegible] the imperial crown of this realm; and repeal- [illegible]

[illegible] ously opposed the bill; but he has left us none [illegible]

[illegible] occasion were Nicholas Heath, abp. of York, [illegible]

[illegible] a place in this history.

[illegible]

[illegible] give unto the queen's highness a supremacy, it would be considered of your wisdoms what [illegible] spiritual govt. or in temporal. If in temporal, [illegible] the appointment of God? She being our sove- [illegible] ing free from them all. If you will say that [illegible] govt. is, and in what points it doth chiefly re- [illegible]

[illegible] point, wherein I promised to examine this for- [illegible] none other matter therein, than a withdrawing [illegible] himself to be a very austere stern father unto [illegible] importance as it is in very deed; when, by the relinquishing and forsaking of the see of Rome, [illegible] of Christ. 3rd, from the judgment of all other [illegible]

[illegible] Gregory writeth in this wise, 'sicut enim [illegible]

[illegible]

ied fathers of Christ's church. At the Ephesin council, Nestorius the heretic was [illegible]

[illegible] all the bps. assembled there, did write their [illegible]

[illegible] dience at the font, saying, 'credo sanctam [illegible]

[illegible] is a holy catholic church, but that we must re- [illegible]

[illegible] and prince be given thereto; semblably eccle- [illegible]

[illegible] that he is a king, then it would follow, that [illegible]

[illegible] kings, and not to have committed the same [illegible]

[illegible] cious blood, without a head: and therefore [illegible]

[illegible] aliorum Aaron; ad hujusmodi enim officium consecrati sunt.' Now, I shall most humbly [illegible]

[illegible] church of the Jews: if you shall say, no; why did God then plague the king with a leprosy, [illegible]

[illegible] part of a subject, or no? If you answer, no; [illegible]

[illegible] manifest, Ozias, in that he was a king, could not be supreme head of the church. And, as [illegible]

[illegible] 'ad civitatem' David, what supremacy and [illegible]

[illegible] kings' examples [illegible]

have declared unto you? Whereunto our an-

beguiled.—4th and last, we must forsake and

Cyprian, that holy martyr, saith, " that the

on the unity of Peter's authority; therefore,

amongst many, must consequently follow

all his sacraments rightly ministered; how

God, but a malignant church; then it will

Rome. First, in king Lucius his days, at whose

last, Paulus Tertius, being bp. of Rome, did

deceived all this while; when the gospel, the

forsaking of that church, as a malignant church,

christian realm: and therefore of your wis-

chief point. Now to the second; wherein I

highness, and wherein it doth consist; as,

wherein the spiritual govt. doth consist, I have,

amongst many; whereof the first is to loose and bind, when our Saviour, in ordaining Peter to be the chief governor of his church, said unto him, 'Tibi dabo claves regni cœlorum;

solutum & in cœlis.' Now it would be consi-

'Tibi dabimus claves regni cœlorum.' If you

warrant and commission by the virtue of God's word: and if you say no, then you may be

spoken unto Peter in the xxi. ch. of st. John's gospel, 'pasce, pasce, pasce.' Now whether

'pasce, pasce, pasce,' you must shew your warrant and commission. And further, that her highness, being a woman by birth and nature, is not qualified by God's word to feed

by st. Paul on this wise, saying, 'Taceant mulieres in Ecclesia; non enim permittetur eis

[illegible]

ter, Luke ch. xxii. 'Ego rogavi pro te, ut non deficiat fides tua: et tu aliquando conversus confirma fratres tuos.' Whereby it appeareth, [illegible]

blessed sacraments. But to preach or minister the holy sacraments, a woman may not; [illegible]

and note unto you, doth consist in excommu- [illegible]

dient children of Christ's church. Of the which authority our Saviour Christ speaketh, in st. Matthew ch. xviii. there saying, 'Dic ecclesiæ: si autem ecclesiam non audierit, [illegible]

apostles, Christ, ascending into heaven, did [illegible]

nisterii, in ædificationem corporis christi.' But a woman, in the degrees of Christ's church, is not called to be an apostle, nor evangelist, nor to be a shepherd, neither a [illegible]

supreme head of Christ's militant church, nor [illegible]

against this act of Supremacy; for the dis- [illegible]

and unto your lordship's all; when otherwise, [illegible]

your faces before your enemies in this matter; being so rash an example and spectacle in [illegible]

found, and in none other. Thus humbly be- [illegible]

speech was delivered; but it was on the 2nd [illegible]

[illegible]

divers of this hon. company; and that I for my part as yet have said nothing therein; I [illegible]

ceive the queen's highness, whom I pray God long to preserve, is as it were a party therein; unto whom I do acknowledge that I owe obe- [illegible]

I have to those noblemen, unto whom this bill [illegible]

whose doings I assure your good lps. is a great comfort not only unto me, but also, as I do [illegible]

am of, with many other besides: 1st, for that [illegible]

been heretofore: and 2nd, for that their cha- [illegible]

to speak in this matter what I think. The 1st is Almighty God, which I know doth look, [illegible]

(although I be unworthy) I am called, I should speak my mind in such matters as this is, when [illegible]

ter, this I say, That our faith and religion is [illegible]

riance fall amongst them, there is, again, in [illegible]

all the other inferiors be as knit in one. And where there be in one shire divers hundreds, [illegible] within the diocese be knit in one; in every

one, as his father and he be one; which thing

Ezekiel, "I will stir up over them one pastor"
And our Saviour likewise saith, "There shall

be applied only to our Saviour, which, in very
deed, I must needs grant to be so; yet, this I

as other like places of scripture be; for it is

whole flock in unity and concord, and in avoid-

viour before there was one Christian prince in

divers and sundry princes and rulers; so that

one body, the which were a monstrous thing.

word itself spoken by our Saviour 'pasce,

spoke them unto Peter, saying, 'Pasce oves

and govern; I answer, that I do not know

ruler in the New Testament; and if it so were,
yet it doth not prove their intent; for other

the same; declaring withal, that they bear the
sword not in vain, nor without cause. But
now mark this word 'sword,' which princes

rity we read not, but left them as he found

so doth it not make for the primacy of St.

saying, 'Accipite spiritum sanctum'. Take ye

where he saith, speaking of that matter, 'The

if that any man yet will contend, that this
place doth give no more authority to Peter

the rest of the apostles from equality of

ing of his name: for, at Peter's first meeting

there mentioned in these words, 'Simon, the is to say, a stone or a rock.' And for what [illegible] Peter; i. e. a stone or a rock, and upon this stone or rock I will build my church.' Here I shall desire you to note, that Peter hath a pro- [illegible] he had received a new name, so he should have a new privilege or preferment, to be the [illegible] being builded upon him; for he was called a 'rock' or 'stone' for the stability and constancy that should always appear in the church, being builded upon him a sure foundation and [illegible] in the succession of Peter: for as concerning the other apostles, in their own persons, I do not doubt but during their lives natural, they [illegible] as Peter was; but for their succession we have [illegible] world's end. This place of scripture, in my judgment, if there were no more, is sufficient [illegible] tual and temporal; and yet I do know that [illegible] that Christ himself is the stone whereupon his [illegible] said, 'Thou art the son of the living God.' [illegible] that which I have said before: for all these 3 [illegible] our Saviour, when he spake these words, 'Thou art Peter,' &c. be well weighed, the place itself [illegible] standed of the person of Peter and his succes- [illegible] again, if it were any where lost, unto all men [illegible] if we should understand the place of our Saviour Christ, which is the first and true [illegible]

[illegible] think I may conclude that our Saviour Christ in this place, saying, 'That he would build [illegible] might safely cleave and lean; as unto a sure and an unmoveable rock in matters of faith; [illegible] not fail, I mean in faith; as we do most manifestly see it hath come to pass, and continued for the space of 1500 years and odd.—I have heard objected here of late against the su- [illegible] small substance; as I trust it shall appear [illegible] and evil lives, as it is alledged, of certain popes of Rome; which as I do think were nothing so [illegible] but let that be, they were so, What then? A man is a man, and, as the scripture sayeth, [illegible] tinuance and stability of their faith, and had said unto Peter, 'I have prayed for thee that thou shalt not sin;' as he said, 'I have prayed [illegible] given unto them of God. But seeing that the warrant was made only for the continuance [illegible] my judgment no proof nor argument against [illegible] Rome: as we see that the adultery and mur- [illegible] by him; neither the dissolute living and ido- [illegible] books of scripture written by him; nor yet the [illegible] him likewise pronounced; even so the lives of [illegible]

[illegible]

was a reason made here, that a temporal [illegible] agree [illegible]

[illegible]

ing; which, after they understood, an order [illegible]

[illegible] dered to be entered in their Journal.

[illegible] lating to the Privileges of the peers. "Where- [illegible]

[illegible] tried at and in the assizes and sessions, now [illegible]

[illegible] council, some of whom likewise be burgesses [illegible]

[illegible] Feb. 4th, a motion was made in the Commons [illegible]

[illegible] the substance of the arguments made use of on [illegible]

[illegible] second it; but they, says Camden, refused, for fear they should be suspected of a design to [illegible]

[illegible] queen, when he delivered himself to her in [illegible]

"May it please the queen's highness; there [illegible]

[illegible] profess ourselves at a loss, unless either your [illegible]

[illegible] safe to accept some match capable of supply- [illegible]

[illegible] be the main concern of persons of all ranks [illegible]

[illegible] by accepting a husband, who may prove a [illegible]

[illegible] for such a change of state. For it cannot be [illegible]

[illegible] such a relation will dispatch more business, [illegible] vours of a great many who are less concerned. Nor indeed can any thing have a worse influence upon the public, than that a princess, [illegible] blessings of peace and safety to a kingdom, should, like a nun profest, condemn herself to a single state. Since your maj. has received [illegible]

[illegible] of issue: hence was it, that your royal grand- [illegible]

[illegible] son prince Edward, who was then but 8 years [illegible]

[illegible] ed on as the most grievous misfortune, what a [illegible]

[illegible] are here present, but all England in general, [illegible]

"Gentlemen; as I have good cause, so do [illegible]

[illegible] country. Your petition, I perceive, consisteth [illegible]

[illegible] derstanding, since I first had consideration of myself to be born a servant of Almighty God, I happily chose this kind of life, in the which I yet live; which I assure you, for mine own [illegible]

I trust hath been most acceptable unto God; [illegible]

[illegible] I have some record in this presence, as you [illegible] whose means, although I know, or justly may [illegible] not now burden her therewith, because I will not charge the dead; if any of these, I say, [illegible] estate wherein you see me; but so constant have I always continued in this determination, [illegible] true, that at this day I stand free from any other meaning, that either I have had in times [illegible] that I trust God, who hath hitherto herein [illegible] goodness suffer me to go alone.—For the [illegible] well like, and take it in good part, because it [illegible] must needs have misliked it very much, and [illegible] to require them that may command you; or [illegible] For I assure you, (what credit my assurance may have with you I cannot tell, but what [illegible] declare) I will never in that matter conclude [illegible] of I will never shun to spend my life; and [illegible] ful for the realm as you; I will not say as myself, because I cannot so certainly determine [illegible] of any heir that may be a fit governor, and [illegible] sue grow out of kind, and become perhaps ungracious. [illegible] me sufficient, that a marble stone shall declare, that a queen having reigned such a time lived and died a virgin. And here I end, and [illegible]

*Act respecting the Liturgy.*] In this parl. [illegible] used and administered in all churches, with very little variation, under a certain penalty [illegible] made by two zealous Catholic divines, viz. [illegible] copies of the said speeches.

Abbot *Feckenham* rose and said: "Hon. [illegible] here set in a book to be received and estab[illegible] as I know, right well desirous to have some [illegible] ferred before the other; I will, for my part, [illegible] highness; 3rd, unto your honours and to the [illegible] and express unto you, 3 brief rules and les[illegible] and the counterfeit, and therein never be deceived. The 1st of these 3 rules or lessons is, [illegible] and seasons, and in all places: The 2nd, [illegible] subjects, first unto God, and next unto our [illegible] here now to be set forth in this book, hath [illegible] tian men, at all times, and in all places; [illegible] in this realm, and that for a short time, not much passing the space of two years, and that in king Edward VI. his days; whereas [illegible] you are at this present in possession, did be- [illegible] Lucius's days, the first Christian king of this [illegible] and beginning of his book of the Britain his- [illegible] this realm; and only of the inhabitants thereof, but also generally of all Christian men, and [illegible] the 2nd rule and lesson of trial-making and [illegible] here in this realm, is this, that your honours must observe which of both these is the most stayed religion, and always forth one, and [illegible] stayed religion, nor always forth one, nor [illegible] and to itself? Every other year having a new [illegible] agreeing in all points with the other: the first book affirming the 7 sacraments, and the real presence of Christ's body in the holy eucha- [illegible] book admitting the real presence of Christ's [illegible] one kind, with kneeling down, and great reverence done unto it, and that in unleavened [illegible] communion received in both the kinds, and in [illegible] unto the body of Christ in heaven. But the thing most worthy to be observed of your honours is, how that every book made a shew to [illegible] ther. And what marvel, I pray you, when [illegible] agree with himself? And for the proof thereof, I shall first begin with the German writers, [illegible] countrymen in all these novelties.—And I do [illegible] touching the sacrament of the altar, and the denying of Christ's real presence in the same. [illegible] words of our saviour Christ; 'accepit panem, [illegible] ples bread to eat, and with the other hand [illegible] Carolostadius, of the words of Christ, 'hoc [illegible] Christi,' was this, 'per hunc panem, vel cum [illegible] Zuinglius finding much fault with the interpretation of Martin Luther, writeth, that Luther [illegible] these words of Christ, 'hoc est corpus meum,' the verb substantive 'est' must be taken for 'significat,' and this word 'corpus (quod pro vobis tradetur)' must be taken 'pro figura [illegible] words of Christ, 'hoc est corpus meum,' by Zuinglius's supposal, is 'hoc significat corpus [illegible] Martyr being of late here in this realm, in his book by him set forth, of the disputation which he had in Oxford, with the learned stu- [illegible] all the rest, and there saith thus, 'quod [illegible] deditque discipulis suis, dicens, hoc est cor- [illegible] But here to cease any further to speak of these German writers, I shall draw nearer home, as [illegible] this realm; how contrary was he unto himself [illegible] forth a catechism in the English tongue, and did dedicate the same unto Edw. VI. whereas [illegible]

[illegible]

heard, being there present: 'How that the [illegible] make of stones bread; and we English people, [illegible]

[illegible] said unto his disciples, 'Take ye, eat, this is [illegible]

[illegible] trouble their wits, that they did leave out in [illegible] there Englished, 'Take, eat this my body,' and left out there, this 'is' my body; which [illegible]

[illegible] this verb substantive 'est.' The dealing herewith being so uncertain, both of the German [illegible]

[illegible] our Saviour and Redeemer; 2nd, unto our so- [illegible]

[illegible] queen Mary; only caused in them by the [illegible]

[illegible] order; and would not run before laws, nor openly disobey the queen's proceedings and [illegible]

churches, pulling down of altars, and most [illegible] in the place thereof. There was no scotching and image of Christ; there was no open flesh- [illegible]

[illegible] unto God; I shall rehearse unto your honours 4 things, whereby the holy doctor st. Augus- [illegible] same. The 1st of these 4 things was, 'Ipsa [illegible]

[illegible] catholici nomen.' If these 4 things did cause [illegible]

[illegible] fessed religion? 1st, because it hath the au- [illegible]

[illegible] hath, 'Ipsum catholicæ nomen,' and in all [illegible] none other."

not only call in question those things which we ought to reverence without any doubt moving;

appear, I shall desire your ldps. to consider, that our religion, as it was here of late discreetly, godly, and learnedly declared, doth consist partly in inward things, as in Faith,

'nunquam relinquunt unitatem, qui non [illegible]

'That charity is vinculum perfectionis,' th[illegible]

into doubt, but partly openly and partly obscurely, and yet in very deed, as the other,

left alone, or else presumption set in her

religion consisteth, we ought, I say, to reve-

Likewise, saith holy Athanasius, 'It is a superfluous thing, to call into judgment again

be lawful every day to call our faith in ques-

thing of all others most necessary; and if it

ledge to be of great strength in matters whereunto it extendeth. But for matters in religion, I do not think that it ought to be meddled withal, partly for the certainty which

all times, and in no condition wavering: for as st. James saith, 'He that doubteth, or stag-

of one fact, which I remember was done this

found 3 points; 1st, there was a debt, and [illegible] reason; neither with the chancery, which is grounded upon consiuderance; then much less [illegible] sidered; the weightiness of the matter, the [illegible] ing out the truth, and the danger and peril [illegible] matter contained in this bill, it is very great; for it is no money-matter, but a matter of inheritance; yea, a matter touching life and [illegible] which is life and which is death, which is fire [illegible] refresh and comfort us, is a great matter, and [illegible] brought up and lived in; and have professed [illegible] blish and place for it, is lately brought in, allowed no where, nor put in practice, but in this realm only; and that but a small time, [illegible] the one, and the newness of the other, we have [illegible] it; and to suspect the other as never heard of here before, unto such time as we see just [illegible] do call to remembrance, that I did hear yesterday a nobleman in this house say, making [illegible] norance; whereunto me thinketh it may be [illegible] 'Nolite flere super nos, sed super vos;' i. e. 'Weep not over us for our blindness,' but [illegible] presumption, in taking upon you so arrogantly to jus[illegible] rashly condemning us and our doings. Moreover, David doth teach us a lesson clear con[illegible] deth us in doubtful matters go to our fathers, [illegible] Ask of thy father, and he shall declare the truth [illegible] generation to another.' David here willeth us to learn of our fathers, and not to contemn their doings. Whereof I conclude, as concerning this part, that this bill, containing in it matters of great weight and importance, it is to be deliberated on with great diligence and circumspection; and examined, tried and de[illegible] therefore not to be passed over hastily, but di[illegible] here be, as I have said, two books of religion [illegible] and they be both concerning one matter, that is, the true administration of the sacraments according to the institution of our Saviour [illegible] 3 things to be considered: the first is the insti[illegible] the administration of the said sacraments. Which 3 be all duly, as we see observed; and that of necessity, in this book of the mass, and old service, as all men do know which understand it. The other book which is so much [illegible] these 3 things, and in very deed maketh the [illegible] thers pass, let us come to the institution of our [illegible] comes nearest unto it. And to make things [illegible] our Saviour did institute 3 things, which he commanded to be done in remembrance of his death and passion unto his coming again, saying, 'Hoc facite,' &c. Do ye this: whereof [illegible] saith thus, "I will declare unto you in very deed a marvellous thing, but marvel not at it, [illegible] a priest of any desert, do offer, it is the very [illegible] words of st. Chrysostom; wherein he testi- [illegible] body and blood of our Saviour Christ, offered [illegible] authors thereof do willingly acknowledge; cry- [illegible] offered daily after an unbloody manner. But [illegible] I think they would leave their rashness, and [illegible] whose office is, saith st. Paul, 'To offer up gifts and sacrifices for sin.' And if there be no [illegible] New Testament. And if we have no religion, then be we without God in this world; for [illegible] grant all; and if we take away one, we take [illegible] God. And the like opinion they hold touching the consecration; having nothing in their [illegible] which should make it holy, I mean the body [illegible] ingly as it ought to be; for then we receive Christ's holy body and blood into our bodies, [illegible] follow the manner of the church. The evangelists declare, that our Saviour took bread into his hands, and did bless it, brake it, and gave it to his disciples, saying, 'Take, eat, this is my body which is given for you: do this in remembrance of me.' By these words, 'do [illegible] hands, to bless it, break it, and having a re- [illegible]

spoken by our Saviour, that is, 'Hoc est cor- [illegible] Christ, but doth pass them over as they were telling a tale, or rehearsing a story. Moreo- [illegible] is required, yea, and that of necessity, a full [illegible] other things following: wherefore the church [illegible] blood of our Saviour Jesus Christ. Here is [illegible] God, but rather to the contrary; as doth ap- [illegible] that the body of Christ is not there; which as [illegible] municated.—There did yesterday a nobleman [illegible] out in this book; and being asked if he did [illegible] would, so long as he lived. Which is a strange [illegible] which is much like as if a man would say, that [illegible] ed: but if he come abroad in a frize coat, he is not to be honoured; and yet he is all one emperor in cloth of gold under his cloth of estate, and in a frize coat abroad in the street. [illegible] man, and in the sacrament under the forms of [illegible] yea, and that in the sacrament in these words, 'Worship his footstool for it is holy.' Upon [illegible] 'Christ took flesh of the blessed Virgin his mo- [illegible] same flesh he gave us to eat unto health; but [illegible] it before. So is it found out, how we shall [illegible] the provision of God marvellous in it. For he [illegible]

all? And thus desiring your good ldps. to con-

that I have spoken, I make an end."

*Privilege of Parl.*] Feb. 24. "John Smith

ration by Mr. Marsh, that he had come to

Privilege of this house; the examination where-

and that a writ of Cap. Utlag. against him,

this house or not? And by the more number of voices, it seemed that he should not have privilege: but, upon the division of the house,

privilege was 107, and the number that

therefore ordered, That he shall still continue a member of this house."

mons, made a learned oration, on exhibiting

*A Parl. called.*] It was not till the beginning of the year 1562 that a new parl. was summoned. A war with France being now

Northumberland bearing the sword before her;

trumpets blowing, &c. The bishops, 22 in

Nowell, dean of st. Paul's; and then a psalm

summons in these words. "My lords, and

occasion of this assembly; which I am not able (but unmeet) to do, as it ought to be

with me in the like, afore this time; it encou-

judgment, may well be divided into 2 parts,

God's honour and glory; and the other con-

the foreign enemy abroad; which said mat-

after; and those which be, and will not be unreplenished, notwithstanding that at the

ing of heresy; therefore better to be winked

performed: therefore, in mine opinion, the de-

such like errors, twice or thrice a year, till the

the Commonwealth; for as there be faults

all fearfulness for prosecuting the same;

a peace, although not the best, howbeit for our surety she spared no cost to bring it to pass;

old cankered enemies of this realm, attempted

governance of France, and so being a firm

land to ours, to have been our utter enemies;

else afore this time I doubt the Scottish terri-

their own confession, to have raised a rebellion in this realm: and for that by none of her

be bold to say, (for that I am thereof as-

within this realm: and all at her own proper

jects, or having aid of them, towards the same. Howbeit she yet thinketh it well spent; for

than spared; as the common saying is, 'that

a pound.' And so in this, if that money had

charge of this realm. And where afore this

great praise, that the relieving of the realm's necessities is our prince's whole delight: and

have been holpen; and so her maj. herself

commons little think or consider what a trouble want is to her, whereby she is forced to

necessity must have one to be a mouth, alder

matters, which is called the Speaker; therefore

ferments; for covetousness hath gotten the livings, as by impropriations, which is a decay

being no small sum, is impropriate; and so

country I heard tell, but since I came hither,

more oaths than words; a pitiful hearing! for

it were a lie: if it were so punished amongst

punishment amongst us being christians? Is

he not eat any of them; and having a river

that are furthest from the same; and so

to come. For Cato saith, 'a thing well begun

The same to be named, the fear of God; the

and truth; all being spiritual ministers.—

God; for all governors reign and govern by

if you, being the lieutenant, see justice with

rightly use the office of a lieutenant; and for

and truth; and then you shall be well at home

upon this fort, the fear of God, is nothing lack-

appointed. Who put down Saul? Who made

governed.—Further I am to be a suitor to your

your highness's opinion, that then I may have

at, or the Lords, to declare their meanings, and I mistaking or uttering the same contrary to their meaning, that then my fault that they and theirs might be at liberty, frank,

the time of the said parliament; whereby they

after; and I will pray as I am bounden, for

so set at liberty."

*A Supply granted.*] Feb. 20th, a bill for

mons. It consisted of a Subsidy, two 15ths

that this large supply was granted as a comple-

having reformed the faith; restored peace to

rebuilt the navy; provided ammunition for sea and land; and in a word, for the extraordinary care she used in France, for the security of its

by the Journal, that the two provinces of Can-

*Act of Supremacy.*] March 3d, a bill passed

monies of the church of England; or should

or deed; or should celebrate or hear mass,

some small opposition; the catholic bps. being

Mr. Atkinson, a student of the Inner-Temple,

law, ought to consider 3 things. 1st. That the same law be necessary; 2nd, that it be just and reasonable; 3rd, that it be possible and

tion. Unto these 3 qualities may be reduced

tial; but to entreat only, if it be good, that a law be made, whereby it shall be commanded,

doth receive any hurt or damage by them.

evident, as it is indeed, there is no necessity

[illegible] "that they would stick with the king in the [illegible]

[illegible] hearts; I trust, that the offence being not so [illegible]

[illegible] make it worse than it is; but let us consider it in such sort as it is indeed; that is, an of- [illegible]

[illegible] consultation.—As for the scripture, I must con- [illegible]

[illegible] exercised: yet thus much have I heard the [illegible]

[illegible] was made the 31st of Henry VIII. "the [illegible]

[illegible] than the traitors that put Christ to death.' [illegible]

[illegible] as I assure you I marvel, how it can possibly [illegible] establish that as a law, which they thought [illegible]

[illegible] -ous offenders in religion were punished by [illegible] and cruelty: and lastly, how offenders in this [illegible]

[illegible] them; and the keepers many times were cor- [illegible]

[illegible] their naughtiness; so far forth that if better [illegible]

[illegible] stories of the church make mention, That when the Macedonians and the Catholics [illegible] for hearing of their controversy; and that the throng was great, the Macedonians fell in [illegible] come to fight with them than to dispute; and [illegible] violence of theirs, it was ordained, by consent through Christendom, that violence should be offered them again. And their offence for common quietness sake, and for the peace of [illegible] say, that if it were by open witness proved, [illegible] jure for the first offence, if he would; and [illegible]

[illegible] in his breast: and to the intent he shall not [illegible]

Southampton [illegible] Digitisation Unit

[illegible] fence was not punished; but he had leisure to [illegible] first offence is punished; and by what punish- [illegible] prison at the queen's will and pleasure; and [illegible] tection of the king, and of the laws. Yea, and besides all this, not a man dare give him [illegible] better, and surely much more profitable for [illegible] fee, every man that shall sue livery, all scho- [illegible] pted and quenched? Is it not, think you, an [illegible] ings, than if he refuse them, to take that he hath from him? Is it not a sufficient punish- [illegible] every man liveth under a law without disturb- [illegible] punishment being sufficient, it is in vain to de- [illegible] ed. But suppose it were passed for a law, what [illegible] tion; and sedition must needs be the cause of desolation. Surely, if the whole number, that [illegible] executed; the realm could not chuse but be much weakened, and a great deal the less able [illegible]

[illegible] to a barbarous ignorance.—But suppose you [illegible] the taking of it change their consciences? Nay, many a false shrew there is that will lay [illegible] And namely upon a matter, whereof for the [illegible] the queen's maj. be ever a whit the "surer." [illegible] thought to divide it; the tender love of the [illegible]

[illegible]

Journal, as follows:

[illegible]

subversion of towns; intermission of all things

[illegible]

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible]

ty, and left the crown in a certain course of

[illegible]

crown to a stranger; we have noted their

[illegible]

life and reign; we have heard of some subjects

[illegible]

fear a faction of heretics in your realm, con-

[illegible]

but your only life; their unkindness and cruel-

[illegible]

reason of their desire and hope; we know not

[illegible]

estate of that realm was left open to the am-

[illegible]

division; which afterwards gave occasion to
King James V. to limit the crown of Scotland
to certain noble families of that realm; where-

[illegible]

was never left, as it is now, without a certain

[illegible]

only stay of our safeties: we again, most gra-
cious sovereign lady, acknowledge ourselves,

[illegible]

humble manner come to your maj.'s presence:

[illegible]

most comfortably see, and our posterity most

[illegible]

for that your subjects cannot judge, nor do

[illegible]

further limitations, left uncertain for want of

[illegible]

tainty already provided, if any such be, or else

[illegible]

vide a most gracious remedy in this great

[illegible]

motherly carefulness for them, hath occa-
sioned this assembly; that in this convenient

[illegible]

taken of it, 'till the 10th of April; when, the

queen came to the Lords, in the afternoon;

"This it is, most excellent and virtuous

sonable creature to speak, so it is a grace to

counsel is most to be preferred: for ancient

a king in this realm, established laws, and set

and thereon a hand, with a ring of gold, point-

happiness for the present I let slip, and de-

whereby partly to your contentation, for re-

ing. 3 petitions, two for the commons, and

grant your royal assent unto them. 2nd, that

ing of my duty, I cannot, in your presence, so

gold, which first the soldier refused; but after that Alexander had commanded it to be filled with wine, and delivered him, he received it; whereby appeareth the noble and liberal heart

velled at his liberality, said, "it were better to keep it by him, than so liberally to depart from it;" unto whom Cyrus answered, "that [illegible] wondered thereat: Cyrus said, "thou causest [illegible] frankly wilt bring it unto me; and so as occa- [illegible] were poor, then were I poor also." Which [illegible] towards their prince and governor. And in [illegible] ture. 3rd, that it may also like your maj. to accept my humble thanks in allowing, and ad- [illegible] manded me that I should utter 3 or 4 things. The 1st, for her royal assent to the acts made [illegible] my lords and masters, although I cannot de- [illegible] commanded me; and therefore willingly would [illegible] thy proceedings herein. 2nd, your liberality [illegible]

[illegible] though this subsidy is made, and to be borne [illegible] afore hath been accustomed, and that it is of [illegible] spent that saveth a groat; which also hath [illegible] maj.'s command, she, remembering by whom, [illegible] ready toward the gathering, thinketh it much [illegible] you have, to your charges, taken pains in [illegible] fallible, that a thing done unconstrained is [illegible] no; whereby she shall know those justices and [illegible] her admonition shall not need; for that you see laws without execution be as a torch unlighted, or body without a soul: therefore, [illegible]

[illegible] sion: because it is of such importance, whereby I doubted my own opening thereof, I there- [illegible]

[illegible] princes' words, which I would observe, there- [illegible]

[illegible] petitions which you made unto me do contain 2 things, my Marriage, and Succession after [illegible]

[illegible] if any think I never meant to try that life, they be deceived; but if I may hereafter bend my [illegible] request, I shall be therewith very well content. [illegible] to say and pray, that I may linger here in this [illegible] surety: and I cannot, with 'nunc dimittis,' end my life, without I see some foundation of [illegible]

After which, her maj. gave the royal assent [illegible] passed in this session were, 1. An act [illegible] ments and Witchcrafts. 3. An act for the [illegible] for the relief of the Poor; the punishment of [illegible] support and improvement of Tillage. Several [illegible] was passed for a translation of the bible, and [illegible] through both those parliaments, stiled 'Custos magni sigilli,' is declared to be the same as [illegible] houses, "That for sundry causes and conside- [illegible] long; for the next year a peace was con- [illegible]

[illegible] ing; without any reasons given for it in the [illegible] next ensuing. Nor was it then suffered to sit, [illegible] Feb.; from which time this parl. was still pro- [illegible] two houses met accordingly; but an accident [illegible] could not act without one, they were at a loss what to do in a case that was hitherto unprecedented. A long entry is made in the Jour- [illegible] whereby it appears that the Commons, after [illegible] house, to know their opinion of the matter. [illegible] vice-chamberlain; sir Wm. Cecil, chief-secretary; sir Amb. Cave, chancellor of the duchy of Lancaster; 4 of the chief members of their [illegible] 4 principals of the other house, being all of [illegible] ing, a commission was shewed by the lord [illegible] to their usual place, and there to chuse a new [illegible] Which done, 3 or 4 of that house, in the name of the rest, were to inform the queen [illegible] queen's writ, went upon the election of a new Speaker. That sir Edw. Rogers, knt. comptroller of the household, made a motion, that [illegible] general, was a member of that house, and [illegible] the election of a speaker. On which, notice being sent to the lords, the said Rd. Onslow, esq; was sent down to them; who endeavoured [illegible] be a member of that house. Mr. Comptroller [illegible] Speaker; who, again, endeavouring to evade [illegible] the oath he had taken to her maj.; and required them to proceed to a new election [illegible] accordingly he was placed in the chair. The [illegible] the bar, spoke as follows:

"If it please your royal maj. most virtuous [illegible] to chuse a fit and learned man, to be their [illegible] manded and forced me, to my great grief, to [illegible] to speak in this place, for this parl.; and for that I would not be obstinate, I am forced to [illegible] yet being green and new, your maj. being the [illegible] which they have allowed; for that, without [illegible] avoid it, yet could I find no remedy; and therefore am driven to seek remedy at your hands; for, though I have the experience of their up[illegible] calling, whereof I know myself unable, I can[illegible] sickness. I therefore do not attempt this releasing of me for any ease of myself, but would [illegible] unto I am appointed, and not in this, being unfit for the same; and that for divers causes. For, 1st, I consider, I have to deal with many [illegible] tain to reach unto. No, if they for great care[illegible] head, to signify the same unto your highness, [illegible] house; and so should want learning and utterance to declare their meanings, as it requireth; especially when I consider your royal maj. a [illegible] unworthy of this place. I trust therefore only [illegible] ple, we find in the law, that if it would please your maj. to grant licence to a dean and [illegible] grant the fines and amerciaments of all your [illegible] of a shire, yet being a sheriff he cannot have [illegible] as it shall please your maj. to consider, I hum[illegible]tion, commanding them to repair again toge[illegible]

"Mr. Onslow—The queen's maj. hath heard [illegible] this office; and doth well perceive your earnest [illegible]

[illegible]

"Seeing that it hath pleased your maj. to [illegible] monwealth; but first my humble suit is, That [illegible] great matters sent from them, I may have ac- [illegible] the matters committed to me, by the knights, [illegible] that I may confer again with them, the better [illegible] words to utter the same unto you: and, I shall pray, as I am bound, to God, for your long and [illegible]

[illegible] and commanded him to answer him, which he [illegible]

"Mr. Speaker; the queen's maj. hath heard [illegible] r, the effect whereof she gathereth to stand [illegible] her noble progenitors have done) is well con- [illegible] venient causes, in convenient place, and with- [illegible] also you shall have her intreatable; but she [illegible] great expence, [illegible]

[illegible] tually done, and seen unto; but only I mean [illegible]

Oct. 22, a committee of Lords were appointed to wait upon the queen, in the afternoon, [illegible] matter of Succession and Marriage, which had [illegible] there would be a member of their house [illegible] of Lords was appointed for a conference with a select number of the commons, touching a [illegible] consisted of these lords following; the abp. of [illegible] the lords Morley, Cobham, Gray, Wentworth, [illegible]

Sir Ambrose Cave, knt. Sir Peter Carew
[illegible]
privy council. Sir Harry Ashley
[illegible]

[illegible]
Sir John Southwark
[illegible]
Sir John Turpine
Sir Henry Gates
[illegible]
Sir A. Chapman, knts.
Mr. Sechford
Mr. Bed
[illegible]
Mr. Pratt
[illegible]
[illegible] don
[illegible]

[illegible]
Mr. Tho. Fleetwood
[illegible]
Mr. Young
[illegible]
Mr. Harry Knolles, sen.
[illegible]
Mr. John Hastings
[illegible]
Mr. William Moore
[illegible]
Mr. Dunch
[illegible]
Mr. Wilson.

[illegible] were much divided about a successor, some [illegible] have a title to the crown, and had their several [illegible]

[illegible] obliged to take a husband; or that a successor [illegible] However, the whole house came to a resolution, [illegible] the Queen's [illegible]

[illegible] delivered by the Lord Keeper in Parl. [illegible]

"Most humbly beseecheth your excellent maj. your faithful, loving and obedient sub- [illegible] us according to your accustomed benignity, to grant a gracious and favourable hearing [illegible] your most royal person, the imperial crown of [illegible] same; which suits, for that they tend to the [illegible] your highness's hands; which, shortly to speak, [illegible] quiet and justice can give; and this with great [illegible] lords, directly, as your maj. hath heard, [illegible]

[illegible]

it would please your maj. to dispose yourself to marry, where it shall please you, with whom

[illegible]

fer together this parliament-time, for the well doing of this. The former of these two,

[illegible]

bring great surety to your person; and espe-

[illegible]

joined with this limitation, for a certain and

[illegible]

selves to marriage; as Constantia a nun, hew

[illegible]

wise Peter of Arragon, being a monk, mar-

[illegible]

commended, for that not two days before his

[illegible]

sharpest sword. What but want of a suc-

[illegible]

breed great surety to your majesty. The 7th

[illegible]

that will grow, for want of understanding to

[illegible]

to any kingdom: for every prince is 'anima

[illegible]

justice, do hang in suspense; all commissions

[illegible]

during such a vacation and inter-reign; wherein

[illegible]

long, as it is to be feared (if God's mercy be

[illegible]

a prey to strangers (which our Lord defend) or

[illegible]

make their humble petitions to your maj.; so

[illegible]

principal benedictions in this life; and on the

reproach. And as this is a blessing in private houses, so is it much more in kingdoms, as it

gave lineal succession by descent of kings; and therefore they continued a long time. The

of Kings. And again, in the time of the judges,

Scriptures, that godly governors and princes

successor, and David his son Solomon; whereby a sedition was appeased, begotten by Ado-

out a certainty of succession; and your maj.

redress: if therefore now no sufficient remedy

it should be a dangerous burden, before God, to your maj. and you were to yield a strict account to God for the same; considering you are placed, as the prophet Ezekiel saith, 'in

that 'whosoever seeth but one brother in ne-

and manifest, how fearful a thing it were, if this

not, in a perilous case, upon their suit provided for; or if the bowels of mercy should be shut

petitions unto you; and then what their peti-

worldly respects, and what by the Scriptures,

sideration of in time; and to give them such

to be 'lateritia,' as Augustus did his, and by

'marmorea,' shall not for want of performing

your reign; which they pray God long to con-

no duer debt than a prince's word, to keep that

so their honour quail; therefore I will an an-

to the two several parts of one and the same

other a silent thought may serve. For, I thought

though I can think it best for a private woman, yet I do strive with myself not to think it m your need, I will not resist such a mind.—But, [illegible]

desire, if I had seen a time so fit, and it so ripe [illegible]

me say that which I think the wise may easily guess, that as a short time, for so long conti- [illegible]

their tales; even so, as cause by conference [illegible]

than I thought, will I add for your comfort: I [illegible]

my surety, no less; which, if presently and con- [illegible]

I shall die in quiet with 'nunc dimittis;' which cannot be, without I see some glimpse of your [illegible]

The Lords having received this answer to their address, were, seemingly, satisfied; but [illegible]

points, "That kings are bound to appoint a successor; that the affection of the subject is [illegible]

the prince; but that princes can gain this affection no otherwise, than by providing for the [illegible]

no means be done, but where 'tis certainly [illegible]

the queen, by not appointing a successor, did [illegible]

favour of God, and live for ever in the remem- [illegible]

nate a successor. If not, she would be rather a step-mother of her country, or something [illegible]

ever stand in fear of their successors; nor can [illegible]

gers from a successor, who is fortified and se- [illegible]

overlook it. However, the points above-men- [illegible]

put a stop to these proceedings. [illegible]

[illegible] mons, as is mentioned in the Journals, along [illegible]

lify their minds by many obliging expressions; but afterwards gave them a smart reproof, in [illegible]

the tenderness of a parent; by which means she diverted them from their resolution. And, [illegible]

than usual, on condition she would declare a [illegible]

nary supply, and accepted of a much smaller [illegible]

after commending their regard for her, "That [illegible]

writes of this matter; as, indeed, it is also of [illegible]

about it: except that two inhibitions were sent [illegible]

ding them to proceed in that affair any farther. [illegible]

commands and inhibition were not against the liberties and privileges of the house? On which nice question the debates aforementioned were [illegible]

and the debate lasted from 9 in the morning, Nov. 11th, till 2 in the afternoon. Next day the Speaker was again sent for to court; who reported to the house, "That he had received a special command from the queen, that there [illegible]

for the good-will she bore to them, she did revoke her two former commandments; but de- [illegible]

the Journal, "was taken by the house most joyfully; with most hearty prayer and thanks [illegible]

clared, "That it was to defray the queen's [illegible]

tions against John O'Neyle, in Ireland." This bill was sent up to the Lords, on the [illegible]

a Subsidy; a subsidy from the clergy of 4s. in the pound to be paid in 3 years, had been con- [illegible]

[illegible] oblige them either in taking a husband

Then the Lord Keeper (after the queen had

*The Lord Keeper's Answer.*] "Mr. Speaker;

I gather 4 things; 1st, denoting yourself. 2nd,

cerning governance, as well by succession as

cause you have dealt well. I therefore leave
it, and mean to speak only a few words, as to

they deserve reproof as well as the others de-

her letters patents in question is not a little

clemency; so that she is loth herein to be aus-

us, which she putteth orderly in trust to see it

say, that when the lords spiritual and temporal

above all, yea, a trust above all other, and

her marriage; whereof she hath put you in
remembrance of 3 things; the 1st is, that where

it should be a thing against reason to human
creatures; especially therefore now it behoveth

"My Lords, and others the Commons of
this Assembly; although the Lord Keeper hath,

name, yet as a periphrasis I have a few words
further, to speak unto you: notwithstanding I
have not been used, nor love to do it, in such
open assemblies; yet now, not to the end to

command; I mean to say thus much unto you.
I have in this assembly found so much dissimu-

I marvel thereat; yea two faces under one

by this means I have seen my wellwillers from

eloquent tales, persuaded others, are in the

matter; who, in my opinion, are most to be

be mortal? No, I warrant you. Or that I

wiser; yet I assure you, none more careful
over you: and therefore, henceforth, whether
I live to see the like assembly or no, or how-

standing (not meaning to make a Lent of

parliament.

[illegible]

In this interval, also, a dangerous insurrection [illegible] moreland. It grew to some height in a short [illegible]

*[illegible] Parl. called.*] In 1571, a parl. was called [illegible] omitted in both the Journals; but sir Simonds [illegible] general, and solicitor-general; after whom fol- [illegible] lord admiral of England; the lord great chamberlain was the earl of Oxford; and the earl [illegible] in her coach, in her imperial robes, and a [illegible] first, sounding; and heralds riding, and keep- [illegible] there sat in princely and seemly sort, under a [illegible]

on each side of the chamber; that is to say, [illegible] then stood up in her regal seat, and with a [illegible] after a long stay, spake a few words to this effect:—

*The Queen's Speech.*] "My right loving lords, [illegible] jects: We in the name of God, for his ser- [illegible] here assembled, to his glory, I hope, and pray [illegible] towards sir Nicholas Bacon, knt. Lord Keeper of the great seal of England, standing a little [illegible] shew the cause of the parl. who thereupon [illegible]

*The Lord Keeper's Speech.*] "The queen's [illegible] briefly as I can, led thereunto as one very loth [illegible] wise men, and well-disposed (as I judge you [illegible] crown and state, as it may be best preserved in time of peace, and best defended in the time [illegible] erected and built; and as the straight line, [illegible] or no? and if any want shall be found, to sup- [illegible] tains, and to whom the imperfections of the [illegible] over perilous to the state. For like as the [illegible]

[illegible]

and ever will be, a necessary peculiar partain- [illegible]

[illegible] of men, from the highest to the lowest; the [illegible]

[illegible] But, here I rest greatly perplexed, whether I [illegible]

[illegible] you thankfully and readily to grant this extraordinary relief or no: I know the queen's maj. [illegible]

[illegible] alike, nor remember alike; therefore I mean, [illegible]

[illegible] with a few words, touching this point. True, it is, that there be 2 things that ought vehe- [illegible]

[illegible] own livings and liberties, and of our lives; the [illegible]

[illegible] mean I to remember briefly 3 of them, whereof the 1st and chief is restoring and setting at [illegible]

[illegible] nefit us in the best degree; to wit, our minds [illegible]

[illegible] great a benefit in being delivered of the one, as in the possessing of the other. Yet if there [illegible]

[illegible] nefits to their value, whilst they possess them, [illegible]

[illegible] subjects, bred such care over us in her breast, [illegible]

[illegible] lands; no adventuring of her credit, either at home or abroad? a plain and manifest argu- [illegible]

[illegible] dered at; and if offences were, then her ma[illegible]

[illegible]

the conquest. Nay, a man might affirm, that

any like in times past; comparing singula singulis, what should I say? these be the true fruits of true religion. I could further remem-

restoring your money to fineness; yea, I could

to be thankful to your power, I leave any lon-

sovereign: yet can it not be denied, but a sub-

by necessity a relief granted, amongst many

subduing the rebels within that realm, and

hath bred no small want; for although in time

great surety: yet, in the mean time, this want must some way be supplied; for you know the

ourselves it is that are to be relieved in this

necessity to be had, to withstand a greater

ught, a noble conversation (God continue it, and

for it!) a princely example shewed by a sove-

some particulars. What need I to remember

delectable pastimes and shows? Ambassadors

honourable and comely? These and such like

these was accounted 'rara avis,' &c. and yet (God be thanked) a phoenix, a blessed bird of

dent; but so I should be over tedious unto

is, that if I had stayed, I may be warranted

ceeds then to tell us, that on the 4th of April the

derly govt. of a commonweal, which to be duly poral causes, but in spiritual or ecclesiastical, in which wholly her maj.'s power is absolute

'rex, &c. sciatis quod dedimus dilect. nostro

was the sign of perfection; the staff the sign

find that an excommunication of a certain

commonwealth is stayed, 3 things, he said, are

men, their good wills were most, being of itself a strong fortress; for armour, the neces-

treasure was, he a little dectored. And concluded, that all 3 must be conjoined, men, ar-

stay of the commonwealth; he said there must

indeed a matter most pernicious; and this he

must be the door, and then is a good law said

ing ended, he then made 4 petitions; 1st, that

3 parts; the 1st, where he had sometimes in-

untruly protect others. For the 2nd, he said,

ters concerning the commonwealth."

given us several of them: besides the two

the Lords a first time on the 6th of April;

[illegible] 8th of May, with a new proviso, and certain [illegible] land then bore to their prince and country. [illegible] former laws, "that if any man should attempt the death or personal hurt of the queen; or raise war, or excite others to war against her; [illegible] can claim a juster title thereto; or should [illegible] infidel; or should usurp the right and title of [illegible] that any other has a right to the crown; or [illegible] incur the penalty of a premunire, that is, the [illegible]

[illegible] About this time pope Pius V. thundered out a[illegible]zabeth, and published a bull of excommunication [illegible] that a bill passed the Lords, April 21st, with this title, "a bill against bringing in and putting in Execution of Bulls, Writings, or In[illegible] the see of Rome." By it was enacted, "that [illegible] of Rome, and those who should be so recon[illegible]

[illegible] out the queen's leave, within a limited time, [illegible] gifts, alienations, &c. of their estates were [illegible] for dilapidations; and a third touching Leases [illegible] with cure.

*A Subsidy.*] May 10th, a bill with a grant [illegible] pressing the late Rebellion, in the north; and pursuing the rebels, which were fled into Scotland. Great care was taken that the queen [illegible] grant; for two bills were passed this parl. the one against frauds of tellers, receivers, collectors and treasurers of the public money; the other, that all such lands, goods, chattels, &c. as any receiver, teller, collector, &c. should have at their entering into their charge, [illegible] clergy; which at this time was 6s. in the pound.

[illegible] by the lord steward of the queen's houshold, they proceeded to the election of a Speaker; [illegible]

April 5th, the house was again called over; [illegible] they had entered there without being returned [illegible] ist observes, on such a case, in a prior parl [illegible] themselves. But, in later times, the knights, [illegible] tiful boroughs, remarkable now for nothing but their meanness and poverty, retain the same privilege; and have a power of being [illegible]

Mr. *Strickland*, a grave and ancient man, of great zeal, stood up, and made a long discourse, [illegible] ness, giving unto us the light of his word, toge- [illegible] wrought so great things, and blaming our [illegible] ceed the rule of the law, reduced to a certain- [illegible] pted therein; for which purpose he said, the [illegible] parl. that it might be approved; but either [illegible] guessed, a man neither ill-disposed to religion, nor a negligent keeper of such matters of [illegible] same; he added also, that after so many years, [illegible] pretence, any errors in matters of doctrine to [illegible] tolerable; as, namely, in the Administration [illegible] such other errors; all which, he said, might [illegible] might slander us; it being a reformation not [illegible] fession; that is, to have all things brought to [illegible] churchmen; as first, that known papists are [illegible] livings; that godly, honest, and learned protestants having little or nothing; that boys [illegible] the faculties, either unable men are qualified, [illegible] several livings; finally, he concluded with [illegible] tuality, for consideration and reformation of [illegible]

Mr. *Norton*, a man wise, bold and eloquent, [illegible] but had long since learned what it was to speak on a sudden, or first, before other men [illegible] or by the advice of 8 bps. 8 divines, 8 civilians, [illegible] hand the same; which was drawn by that [illegible] and that there was a book newly printed, to be [illegible] mind, chiefly for the avoiding and suppressing [illegible] Recorder; mr. Bell, mr. Henry Knolles, sen. mr. Mounson, mr. Norton, mr. Strickland, mr. [illegible] thereof, argued; and in part wished the bps. [illegible] mr. Fleetwood moved, that the penalty of that [illegible]

[illegible] the [illegible]

did grow by these men's doings; wherein no reformation was sought, but private gain to the [illegible]

[illegible]

be free; if of himself, he should be whipped [illegible]

[illegible]

make offer of a Subsidy before it should be re- [illegible]

[illegible] house.—Sir F. Knolles made a long needless [illegible]

[illegible] hardly be levied; namely, by licences, and the abuse of promoters; for which, if remedy we [illegible]

[illegible] lingly; which he proved, for that by licences a [illegible]

[illegible] poverished; and added, that if a burden should [illegible]

Mr. *Popham* affirmed for Bell's speech, and [illegible]

[illegible] stalled a debt of 30,000 l.; which occasioned [illegible]

[illegible] aforesaid; unto the which he added 3 abuses more; 1st, the abuse of purveyors, wherein he [illegible]

[illegible] to yield to reformation; and, in his opinion, it [illegible]

[illegible] in a sum certain:—3rdly, another reformation; which is upon a great abuse in the exchequer, [illegible]

[illegible] writ 'quo titulo ingressus est.'

[illegible]

[illegible] liked well of the motion of the Subsidy, and commended the motions of the gentlemen be- [illegible]

[illegible] never able to satisfy the same; whereby the [illegible]

Mr. *Goodier* said, that every man ought to [illegible] to stay till it should be demanded; desiring, [illegible]

[illegible] and already more were remembered, than in [illegible]

A Committee was then appointed to consider [illegible]

April 9th, a Report was made concerning the right of the Burgesses; and it was ordered, [illegible]

[illegible] consideration; and being ordered to be engrossed, a debate arose, in which

Mr. *Fleetwood* argued, "that there might [illegible] done; but leaving to speak thereof, he entered [illegible] Ed. I. Edw. III. and Hen. IV. with a saving [illegible] book of 2 Ed. VI. for the parl. of Ireland, [illegible] be done? whether they might depart with any [illegible] agreed they might not; and so he concluded, [illegible] 'rege non consulto,' was perilous. He also [illegible] all merchants to trafic by sea, 'nisi publice [illegible]

[illegible]

Mr. *Alford* said, that he might not speak of [illegible] ed in the law; but made some remembrance [illegible] patents were not sufficient; and therefore he [illegible] the house, might be conjoined to the former [illegible] sir F. Knolles, sir Nich. Arnold, sir Hen. Nor[illegible] severally to the said bill: whose speeches be[illegible] others was restrained; and at last upon the [illegible] ed at some other time; it was thereupon or[illegible]

*Debate on the Bill for coming to Church.*] [illegible] the original Journals, a bill for coming to the Service of the Church, which seems to be a [illegible]

[illegible] places, from the prescribed rule; as where no part of those prayers were observed, but a sermon, and some such other prayers only as the [illegible] numbers. And since it is law, that in this [illegible] shall be at any other form of service, shall incur the penalty prescribed, and that the mi[illegible] should, and as is by the law prescribed and [illegible] this kind, should occasion a dilemma in mi[illegible] 100 marks.

Mr. *Aglionby*, burgess of Warwick, moved, [illegible] This did he prove to be fit out of Plato his [illegible] prince and the poor man; not giving scope to [illegible] there is a God; and in this respect there [illegible] more good his example may do. He therefore [illegible] to inforce consciences. And, to that pur[illegible] sulted with. Finally, he concluded, that "bo[illegible] good laws can make a bad man fit to receive [illegible]

[illegible] proved what mr. Aglionby had said: for the 2nd, he could not be of that mind; and he [illegible] phet, restrained: withal, he said, conscience [illegible] of their consciences, but a charge or loss of [illegible] christians.

[illegible] two laws, which were intended to be con- [illegible] be according to the law, no man is bound to [illegible] ther were they to regard the error, curiosity, [illegible] causes aforesaid; but, he wished provision might be made for such as be imprisoned, or cannot come for fear of arrests. He wished [illegible]

[illegible] when the bill, and the additions to it, that cer- [illegible] a debate arose, in which

Mr. *Goodier* spake to this effect: 1st, he made a solemn protestation of his sincerity, [illegible] her highness's means, and religiously prayed for her preservation; but, his whole discourse stood upon these 3 points;—what he thought of the persons there assembled; what he disliked in the matter of the bill propounded; [illegible] chor of our safety; but, whether all were with a sincere meaning to the state of the crown, [illegible] contrary [illegible]

[illegible] ormer laws provided for; and hereunto he [illegible] which concerned the first which did clearly [illegible] a fault already committed, which at the time [illegible] not in the same degree; it was a precedent [illegible] said, had not been seen; and where he hath [illegible] such a precedent. An extremity rare, and never practised, no not in these the greatest [illegible] our state (the Papists I mean) is most hateful. [illegible] punished, much less to suffer death, for what [illegible] talked of, no man yet hath made a report. Withal, it may haply occasion dislike between her maj. and the house, which were odious and hateful; but doubtless, he prophesied it [illegible] give no warranties. Neither is it that the se- [illegible] of a crown, which words may not be strained [illegible] such as more curiously could, and more cunningly would, look thereinto than he. For matters of title of the crown, he said, he neither knew any, nor durst to intermeddle or take knowledge of any; and concluding, he [illegible] needs condemn the same, since that 'veritas est nuda, simplex & plana.'

Sir *Thomas Smith*, her maj.'s principal secretary, [illegible]

Mr. *Norton*, in his accustomed manner of [illegible]

Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] free of unjust slanders, and undeserved re- [illegible] tion of her maj.; and to this end was he and [illegible] bent; she being of this realm, not only in re- [illegible] And since that consultation is no other than 'consultare in commune,' he was as well to [illegible] maj. hath or shall imagine, intend, or go about, [illegible] and the thirst for a kingdom is unquenchable. [illegible] between two, for a small matter in suit, when [illegible] knowledge that he had either offered, or defended an injury. He said, for working of great matters, great time is required; and such a mischief, as to overthrow a crown, is not in a day compassed; and therefore what here- [illegible] —Where it is said, the like hath not been seen, and a miracle made of it, as if there [illegible] kind of prayer to God, either to convert her, or confound her. Whereupon it was enacted, That every person whoso, and in such sort, [illegible] be taken for a traitor. The case of Bennet [illegible] it may be remembered; his transgression was [illegible] the offence perpetrated, as it was afterwards; [illegible] was from the old nature altered; and he, who before at the time of the offence, until the [illegible] discretion was used, who can imagine it to be [illegible] especially of so good and virtuous a prince as she, of whom our confidence is now? But yet we are charged with partial affection, unset- [illegible] earnestly craved the judgment of the house. [illegible] tion with himself of any title, but was to be [illegible] renounce all title during her highness's life, [illegible]

Mr. *Comptroller*, after some declaration of [illegible] more than moved with mr. Goodier's speech, [illegible] matters contrary or repugnant to the bill, moved that it might be severed; because the first [illegible] by her maj.'s learned council; the other was but the advice of a private man; which ad- [illegible] yet was it not, in his fancy, to be joined with [illegible] such, who shall endeavour, compass or ima- [illegible] no charitable precedent; concerning the au- [illegible] but said it was a prevention.

[illegible] not utterly dislike the conjoining of the addi- [illegible] whereof he acknowledged her highness to [illegible] for the word 'hath,' he saith it contained no [illegible] mean well, it could not be misconstrued; and [illegible] in a prince's case, is not to be disliked. He [illegible] the law be sharp, yet such is her mildness,

[illegible]

[illegible] approve the effect of the whole, both in Bill and addition; albeit for the pains in the Bill [illegible] words he was doubtful; as for the word 'compassing,' he made some question; of this, 'bodily hurt,' he had no perfect intelligence, [illegible] cause. He also said, that saving in the statute of 27 H. 8. he hath not read it. But further he said [illegible] for lawful queen, in his conceit, should also be called a Traitor; but for the speaking of those [illegible] for the first offence taken as a Traitor; for [illegible] being a far greater offence, is but the pain of [illegible] offence also might be made Treason, he could [illegible] 'Heretic,' he said, that the papists all, of [illegible] they are *re et veritate* heretics, which name they willingly will not bear. He further said, [illegible] a Traitor; for that some say, there are in [illegible] is of another religion than is published; and [illegible] whereby the doctrine (in sort as it is) is thus [illegible] tion might be testified by two witnesses. For [illegible] be nothing. For, said he, there can be a

removed, [illegible]

Mr. *Mounson* said, it were horrible to say, [illegible] of the crown; for then would ensue, not only the annihilating of the statute 35 H. 8, but [illegible] void; a matter containing a greater conse[illegible]

Mr. *H*[illegible] Addition should be severed, or both to be re[illegible]

Mr. *Long*, a young gent. would have proved the word, have, and a regard of the time past, [illegible] offence the malice of the offender was as great [illegible]

Mr. [illegible] throw of that which was truly meant; whereu[illegible] required the Suppressing of all such Abbies, [illegible] were also founded; to which, when by no [illegible] counterfeit friend heaped in, to give the king [illegible] of all, both goods and possessions, whereof [illegible] do directly, with face of further friendship [illegible] were well and most safe, to make two [illegible] to be referred to the [illegible] counsel, as Mr Heneage had well divided.

Mr. [illegible] meaning of the words 'bodily hurt' said, it [illegible] there was great reason they should be; for, [illegible] self to have title, &c. to be a Traitor. He [illegible], that it should be no [illegible] to the bill to have matters of the same nature added; being also provided for the same purpose, as good, [illegible] And [illegible] he said, it could not, in reasonable construction, [illegible] the realm to be a realm.—After some further debate, the business was referred to a committee.

*Bill for the Suppressing of Simony.*] April [illegible], the bill for suppression of Simony, [illegible] Presentations to Benefices, was read the first time, on which mr. Snagg observed, "That the cause of the [illegible] private uses; whereas the first original of the [illegible] mination, if it be truly used; since that, deal- [illegible] &c.

*A Bill relating to Vagabonds.*] The same day the bill against Vagabonds was read a first time, and, though not usual in such cases, [illegible] abstract:

Mr. *St. John* moved, that an old bill, before [illegible] concerning this matter, might be perused.

[illegible] for the poor; saying, that it might be possible [illegible] Worcester.

Mr. *Treasurer* [illegible] he would have a bridewell in every town, and [illegible]

Mr. *Wilson*, a Master of the Requests, ar- [illegible] he said, it was no charity to give such a one as we know not, being a stranger unto us. [illegible]

*Debate on a Bill for reforming the Common Prayer.*] April [illegible] by mr. Strickland, and read a first time, which occasioned another debate:

Mr. *Treasurer*, of her majesty's household, [illegible] it behoveth us to refer the same to her maj. [illegible] ters of her prerogative, quoth he, it were not [illegible] we are not to search; whether it be, for that in [illegible] then refer to our consideration, insinuating in [illegible]

Mr. *Pistor*, with a grave and seemly coun- [illegible] how conscience enforced him to speak; and [illegible]

[illegible]

... dealt in.

[illegible]

... weight.

Sir [illegible] spoke very vehemently ... [illegible]

[illegible] ... only upon this vain sup- [illegible]

[illegible] ... can do nothing contrary to [illegible]

[illegible] ... before that ... [illegible]

[illegible] ... yet ... [illegible]

[illegible] ... as it should seem ... [illegible] ... some members of the ... [illegible]

[illegible] ... church, except they will claim a liberty to sin; [illegible] ... Becket ... [illegible] ... naughtiness, and for such as might be of the [illegible] ... that the whole house resolved to take care for redress.

The parliament was then, by the consent of [illegible]

[illegible] house at 7 of the clock in the morning. During [illegible] of the Privy Council; and required to attend [illegible]

[illegible] the 2nd time; upon which ensued divers ar- [illegible]

Mr. *Warnecomb* of Hereford; who standing up, said to this effect; that it behoveth all [illegible] bill, for, quoth he, this may touch and over- [illegible] whereunto to stay; but that lords letters shall [illegible]

Mr. *Norton* first made explanation of the [illegible] reen, by sending of unfit men; and lest happly any thing might be objected to the imperfec- [illegible] fit for so great a place and employment, with- [illegible] tion, some said, no; but the greatest number [illegible]

[illegible] such decayed towns; that it is so, I will not [illegible] and nothing so suppressed, but by God's grace the same may [illegible]

[illegible] and public consultation in parl.? whether from [illegible] whom? I am surely of mind, that neither for [illegible] 3 purposes employed, and thereby 3 sorts of [illegible]

Of these 3 grounds, in the first division there groweth, to our knowledge, 3 sorts of men: [illegible] necessary, commodious, or seemly for a settled [illegible] the rest 'supplementum, consilium et auxili- [illegible] shame: 'parva sunt foris arma, nisi consilium [illegible]

[illegible] occasion may serve) to alter, constitute, or re- [illegible] all. How may her maj. or how may this court [illegible] letters of instruction sent; some one, whom [illegible] Christ, and so forth [illegible]

[illegible] we hold for a maxim [illegible] I mean this wholly to no other end, but since we deal universally, for all sorts and all places, [illegible] yet can I hardly call that a liberty which is [illegible] commonly granteth as a free gift, and by these words, 'et de majori gratia nostra, &c. dedi- [illegible] more for a man to have of his own, than to have (by any man's discretion) of another.— [illegible] and for this reason [illegible] what was done a hundred years since [illegible] queen Mary's [illegible] And I have known one, [illegible] a great man's displeasure, [illegible] buy his land, did, upon small occasion, bind

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

Though now at this present, God be praised,

effect you do nothing, if I guess aright.—It is

ed council, and who know them, and the country will deal for them. I mean it not so

were framed. I stand too long hereon, and

out cause is not convenient; to give every

a liberty; to lose their liberty, I think it a bad

penned, "forasmuch as some towns are decayed, and have not of their own, therefore

ticular proposition to make a general conclusion, it is against our rules; and nothing, as saith the philosopher, is more absurd than 'non causam pro causa.' Some towns can-

spreading of the salve, do either smart, fret, or

there is due cause. Let there be therefore

to hurt. And I could wish, according to the

on than thus abruptly overruled; and while

Mr. *Bell*, in answer to this, did collect the

the commonwealth; and that some of them

letters of noblemen; he could not, he said,

many young men, not experienced, for learn-

default he knew not; whether letters of no-

joined together; and that there should be one

and the other a man learned, and able to ut-

said, was as requisite for consultation as the lished; and, in that respect the temporal law

is nothing; yet that it was ill, neither Chris-

was not hurtful; for to have any man lend his

themselves only, for that he willed they should
lend as brethren together: for unto all others

fectly, uprightly and brotherly; yet, 'ex de-

ill law; if it were to appoint men to take

what given in consideration. Let be that there

thus in answer of this question; 'qui non dat

redressed it; and utterly prohibited the use

and the like did Lycurgus by a law which he
made, and seeing the fire, he said, 'he never
saw so fair a flame as those books yielded.'
He then made a definition of Usury, shewing

ney, it is not mine. And the law is, that

mutuum; the one implying a contract, the

ble. This he seemed to say in answer to that

employ the same that way; so that her cus-
toms must decrease: to the common-wealth,

lost; for most men seeking most ease, and
greatest gain, without hazard or venture, will

shewed it to be so hateful in the judgment of

hope; for we are no saints, we are not of per- [illegible]

[illegible]

text, 'date nihil inde sperantes;' these are no [illegible]

[illegible]

commonwealth, that there should be 'homines [illegible]

[illegible]

sharp and extreme a law as to lose all, he [illegible]

[illegible]

our actions and doings; and therefore, as utterly vain to prohibit it, in vain words of gene- [illegible]

[illegible]

apt) when we may not reach to the best, fur- [illegible]

[illegible]

of wares; that the husbandman shall till his [illegible]

[illegible]

such a number of sheep; that there shall be [illegible]

[illegible] ticularity; whereas otherwise, generally amongst [illegible]

[illegible] terly on a pain, it may not be: but thus rather [illegible]

[illegible] deeply.

Mr. *Fleetwood* said, he had read the civil [illegible]

[illegible] promise ought: what Usury was, he said, he [illegible]

[illegible] forced not much; for if there were not civil [illegible]

[illegible] of Athelred; whereby it was ordained, that [illegible]

[illegible] was called *foenus*, and a lesser known by the [illegible]

[illegible] them, he said, was whipping; he said further, [illegible]

[illegible] allowed; he said, it might be construed and compared there with the statute of Tithes: where it is said, 'that till for 7 years after [illegible]

[illegible] for that of some other transgressions, her maj. may dispense afore with; but for Usury, or to [illegible]

Mr. *Norton* shewed, that all Usury is biting; as in the word 'steal' is contained all kind of injurious taking away of a man's goods: and [illegible]

[illegible] biting, they being both so correlated or knit [illegible]

[illegible] saying, 'Quod dubitas ne feceris,' and for that 'Quod non ex fide est peccatum est,' therefore [illegible]

After which debate, the bill was committed to [illegible]

*Debate relating to the Liberties of the* [illegible]

[illegible] been reported of it. On which Mr. Speaker declared, 'That the queen had as good liking [illegible] her maj.'s reign'—The same day a bill for [illegible] without Licence, was read a first time; on [illegible]

[illegible] in mind of a speech made by sir Humphrey Gilbert some days before; he proved his [illegible]

[illegible]

all colours, saving white; even so, said he,

[illegible]

As this of David, 'Thou O Lord shalt destroy

[illegible]

parl. since she came unto the crown; and

[illegible]

Mr. *Carleton*, with a very good zeal, and or-

[illegible]

how that a member of the house was detained

[illegible]

man, but to supply the room, person and place of a multitude specially chosen, and therefore

[illegible]

rant might stretch, nor to hazard our good

[illegible]

He further said, that he was in no sort stayed for

[illegible]

examined and considered of.

[illegible]

a private man; (where he utterly forgot the

[illegible]

meant; for that place required and permitted

[illegible]

of himself a private man but a public; by

[illegible]

Mr. *Yelverton* said he was to be sent for,

[illegible]

sonages, under so gracious a prince, nothing

[illegible]

prerogatives; but yet the same to be straitened

[illegible]

said then, that of experience he could report [illegible]

could not meddle with so late matters, but what he had learned in the parliament rolls, [illegible]

considered of. In the time of Hen. IV. a bp. [illegible]

house for ease of their grief in this case; was to be humble suitors to her maj. and neither [illegible]

that the house should make stay of any fur- [illegible]

tendeth but to prove a man a christian, is to- [illegible]

o man; for that by religion only a [illegible]

But the conscience of man is eternal, invisi- [illegible] greatest [illegible]

[illegible] of that [illegible]

we must [illegible] t do ill that good may grow there- [illegible] by to make him to do what is not in his power; [illegible] be fit for so great a mystery God al [illegible]

pointed, st. Paul hath pronounced it to be [illegible]

tive church to prove a commandment for [illegible] tion; he said, st. Ambrose did excommunicate [illegible]

too strange [illegible]

co [illegible]

be, there must be many minds, and in consul- [illegible] thereby the rather to wrest out the best: but [illegible]

moved, that all suspected for papistry might [illegible] se till their pleasure was

mitted unto him, as a commissioner in this [illegible] their friends, or negligently or remisly, of pur- [illegible] of what is due unto her; such, I say, may justly be charged as men forgetting their duty towards God, and their Sovereign, and to their country. It cannot be denied, that numbers [illegible] universal profit of the realm, which is their [illegible] universal body; but their imperfection would [illegible] heretofore by others. I am to remember you, that all these labours, travels, and pains, taken about the laws now made, and before time [illegible] the charge sustained by the realm about the [illegible] hath been said, a law without execution is but a body without life, a cause without an effect, a countenance of a thing, and indeed nothing; [illegible] serve for correction without hands. Were it [illegible] unlight? Or for one to provide fair and hand- [illegible] those vain provisions before remembered; for [illegible] hurt; but the making of laws without execu- [illegible] makers, and of all magistrates; which is the [illegible] it is, that the queen's maj. that is head of the [illegible]

claimed and published; and yet ceaseth not [illegible] mits of their commissions; and yet besides all this, by her maj.'s commandment, a number of [illegible] for help of this, that is left undone? Surely nothing, to her maj.'s honour and renown. [illegible] executed; and certainly this offence groweth great or little, as the trust committed for the [illegible] this hereafter. Were it possible, trow you, [illegible] you, a monstrous disguising, to have a justice [illegible] number by a prince to appease all brawlings [illegible] ting some for gain, indicting others for malice, [illegible] overthrowing others as his enemy; procuring [illegible] chiefs; these be they indeed of whom such ex- [illegible]

[illegible] here it may be said, the mischief appears, [illegible] although I had such hopes, I could find no more helps but these. The 1st is, having [illegible] realm a triennial or biennial visitation in this [illegible] nisters, that by virtue of their office have in [illegible] I mean, that the queen's maj. should make choice, every 2nd or 3rd year, of certain ex- [illegible] sion should be granted, to try out and exa- [illegible] fences of all such as have not seen to the due [illegible] doubtless; and reason I see none, but that a like good ought to follow upon a like visita- [illegible] to find out the faults seemeth not hard, for [illegible] evident, and easy; and that is where offences do abound in any country, contrary to the [illegible] mation of those offences; I do not see but this makes a full charge of their uncarefulness [illegible] sides, to set forth other pains upon them, as [illegible] twice done, I doubt not but the examples fol- [illegible] than now there is. And the better to under- [illegible] might be entered into some rolls; and also [illegible] offences he hath also prosecuted for a decla- [illegible] careful bees. And like as I could wish this to [illegible] do I desire that the same course might be pur- [illegible] words will not reform these matters, as I have seen by proof. And this is the sum of what I [illegible]

[illegible] folk to assist her; and, by a formal contract of [illegible] lease him; which being found out, and the [illegible] to call a new parl. the next year after the dis- [illegible]

*A new Parl. called.*] Accordingly a parl. was [illegible] ry lord Norris. There is nothing else entered [illegible] defect from a MS. of his own, which gives us [illegible] the parl. in these words:

*[illegible] Parl.*] "The queen's maj. our most dread [illegible] of the summons of this assembly for a parl. to [illegible] yet I must needs confess, that neither shall [illegible] to be done. And yet the often experience [illegible] hearing [illegible]

[illegible] so much encouraged me, that (as I trust) it shall be done, although not cunningly nor elo- [illegible] well understood and easily borne away, and [illegible] such a matter will suffer. True it is, the origi- [illegible] universal consent as in parl. is used, remain firm and stable. Now the matters that are in this parl. to be proved, do consist altogether of 2 parts. The former is in matters of [illegible] establishing of the queen's maj.'s royal estate, [illegible] cause, which faithfully, sincerely, and diligently done, like as it cannot but bring success to [illegible] ger of all the rest. And the greater that the [illegible] forgetting it, or not following it so effectually [illegible] countenance, and credit to the ministers of his [illegible] offices, ought to be preserved in credit and [illegible] set forth by them that want credit? Mar- [illegible]

[illegible] thing, but all that which the difficulty of time, in so great a scarcity of men meet to be ministers, will suffer to be done, shall by my [illegible] be good and yet continue. True and too true [illegible] their countries live in what dissolute and inconti- [illegible] simony, the very canker of the church, with- [illegible] the very ornaments of our religion, are very [illegible] to common-prayer and divine service; and [illegible] And yet to the help of this there was at the last parl. a law made, but hitherto no man, no, no man, or very few, hath seen it executed; [illegible] this discipline is always to be avoided, lest [illegible]

[illegible] Or whether that hath been thought meet I should summary

and [illegible] make you [illegible]
[illegible] be the better und[illegible]. I
[illegible]
[illegible]
finding this her realm in a ragged and torn
state, and yet in wars with a mighty enemy,
[illegible]
realm's great dishonour and weakening; her
Frontier towns not sufficiently fortified, the
[illegible]
[illegible]
realm also greatly indebted; the land of Ire-
[illegible]
[illegible]
marvellously consumed: the Navy and Sea-
[illegible]
forced to give ear to a peace with some other
[illegible]
[illegible]
gerous defaults might be in the time of peace
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
neither hath she sticked for the compassing of
[illegible]
[illegible]
and abroad to the uttermost, and all this for
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
vation of common quiet, and for our own
[illegible]
care or travel in the devising; no more hath
she charge or expence in the performing. I
may safely affirm it, because I am well able to
[illegible]
[illegible]
since the queen's maj. came to the crown,
in supplying the dangers aforementioned, a-
[illegible]
sides that I can remember; the matter not
[illegible]
to be continued for that which is to come by
[illegible]
[illegible]
forbid) should run to ruin: if when any part
of the natural body happeneth to be in danger,
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
whole care, and bear the whole burthen, and
[illegible]
charged therewith? How light a burthen it is
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
wisdoms well know, that the office of this
place which I occupy, craveth thus much to
[illegible]
[illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
being uttered, I do assure myself to suffice to
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
against a Foreign enemy, that he were able to
[illegible]
vereign, himself, his wife and children; espe-
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
other matters of will and pleasure; I mean,
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Yet hath it been seen e'er this, that prince's
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
become the prince's delight; a good change,
God continue it, a marvellous good example
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
it might be moved, that the realm might con-
tribute to the realm's defence; with such dif-
[illegible]
[illegible]
surety saved) this had never been attempted:
[illegible]
[illegible]
been devised, this had not been: and so, from
[illegible]
you.—Oh what a grief it is to a prince (trow you)
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
as their deserts do crave! knowing that most
[illegible]
[illegible]
self to the cannon, the pike, the fire, is either
[illegible]
[illegible]
they call them) of that perfection, that virtue
[illegible]
who hold for firm, that 'recti facti merces est
fecisse tantum,' but 'rara avis in terris, &c.'
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
by such. To give good words is a good thing,
[illegible]
[illegible]
and is indeed 'dare verba.' Marry, p[illegible]
[illegible]

dations; for it is as much as can be done: for 'ultra posse non est esse.' But hereof thinketh little the greatest number. But to a prince [illegible] and feeleth of it, what a tormenting trouble is such a want think ye? These wants when they happen, would be, ought to be most holden. But here I have troubled you further than I [illegible] the defence of the enemy abroad; your office [illegible] matters, which I have the rather summarily [illegible]

The former pertaineth to my office as a re- [illegible] allowed. [illegible] usual ceremonies, was allowed. But no further notice is taken of the speeches commonly [illegible]

[illegible] Queen of Scots.] [illegible] "That this day, by advice and consent of the whole house, a Committee was appointed to [illegible] as it should please them to appoint, for the [illegible] the earls of Oxford, Kent, Worcester, Sussex, Warwick, Bedford, Leicester, and Essex; the [illegible]

Mr. Treasurer
[illegible]
[illegible] the Dutchy
[illegible] the [illegible]
[illegible] of Ireland
Sir Maurice Berkeley
[illegible]
Sir Thomas Scott
[illegible]
[illegible]
Sir John Thynne
Sir Hen. Gates
Sir Rowland Howard

Mr. Doctor Wilson
[illegible] of the [illegible]
Mr. Recorder of London
Mr. Serjeant [illegible]
Mr. [illegible]
Mr. Mounson
Mr. Sandys
Mr. [illegible]
Mr. Yelverton
[illegible]
[illegible]
Mr. Charles Howard
Mr. Hatton
Mr. Astley

Mr. Slute
Mr. Hen. Knolles, sen.
Mr. Hen. Knolles, jun.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Mr. William Moor
[illegible]
Mr. Tho. Rundall

Mr. John Vaughan of Caermarthen
Mr. Greenfield, sen.
Mr. Charles Somerset
Mr. Hen. [illegible]
Mr. [illegible] Gerrard
Mr. Dalton, and
Mr. [illegible]

We hear no more of this Conference in the Journals of the Lords, nor what was done in it, [illegible] result of which was, that on the 4th of June a bill passed the Lords, with this addition to the title, 'A bill touching Mary, daughter and [illegible] turned it, concluded. But though the bill went [illegible] queen would not suffer it to pass into a law; [illegible] much in the dark what were the contents of this extraordinary bill. Mr. Cambden only writes, that, "it was proposed, that if the [illegible] English peer. But the queen, interposing her [illegible] However, though this act did not pass, yet [illegible] against all who had designs in favour of the Queen of Scots. On the 19th of May a bill [illegible] Tower, Fortress, Ships, or other munition of war. This passed into a law; and, by it, some [illegible] high treason. On the 21st, a bill was brought in, and read against all such as shall conspire [illegible] This act declared, "That if any person should [illegible] Treason, before his arraignment, the said person should forfeit his life estate, and be impri- [illegible] ed, he should incur the penalty of death; if [illegible]

[illegible] laws was only necessary for the times; and the parl. thought fit to make them temporary, [illegible] duke of Norfolk, out of the Tower, as hastened [illegible]

4 months; and it was not till after passing the [illegible] hill, June the 2nd. He died with great courage and magnanimity, amidst a vast crowd of sorrowful and weeping spectators; for it is incredible, says our author, "how dearly he [illegible] he had gained by a munificence and affability suitable to so great a prince."

*A Case of Privilege.*] A case of Privilege was [illegible] Cromwell, who had been attached, by a writ, [illegible] age; but so, that at any time hereafter, by [illegible] law, or sufficient precedent, the persons of any of the Lords of parl. in such cases as this of [illegible] this order, or any thing, therein contained, to [illegible]

[illegible] wards, which will appear in the sequel. In the mean time, on the 16th of May, a motion was made, 'Whether it was convenient that [illegible] petition to her maj. for the execution of the [illegible] tition or direction from this house.

[illegible] highest degree of Treason; and therein to touch her, as well in life as in title and dig[illegible]

*A Message to the Commons, not to meddle with Religious Matters.*] May 22, a bill for [illegible] been read in the house 3 times; on this day [illegible] or received into this house; unless the same should be first considered and [illegible]

[illegible] if so it were that her maj. should not like well of the said bills, or of the parties that preferred them: and declared further, that her [illegible] and that her highness express will and plea[illegible] words farther, That her maj. as defender of [illegible] length agreed upon a joint Petition to the [illegible] presented her a Petition with Reasons to [illegible] nalist tells us, "That mr. Treasurer reported [illegible] sently come from her maj.; and that her maj. [illegible] against the Scottish Queen with a 2d bill, [illegible] minding in that bill, by any implication or [illegible] signified the same her like pleasure unto the Lords, by some of the Committees of the same house." The Commons came to a Resolution on the question, "Whether a Petition was to be drawn up and presented to her majesty for the speedy execution of [illegible]? That the said Petition should be digested and put in writing against the next morning, and delivered to the Speaker to be presented by him to the Queen. But two days after, May 31, a question was put for respiting the said petition, and, it was carried in the affirmative. "Because, perhaps, her maj. will order it to be done sooner of her own accord than being pressed to it by the house. And therefore it was wholly laid aside." But, however, the bills and remonstrances against the Queen of Scots, took no effect till several years after. The duke of Norfolk, however, fell a sacrifice to the jealousies of the times, being beheaded, as before observed, whilst this parl. was sitting.

The Ceremonies at the conclusion of this Session are omitted in both the Journals; and, we are only told, in that of the Lords, that, on the 30th of June, the queen came to the house, when the lord keeper, by her command, prorogued this parl. to the end of Nov. following. From the time of the last prorogation, we meet with nothing like a parl. till the 18th year of this reign. The Journals of the Lords do not expressly give us the times of the several prorogations in this long interval; but only inform us, that on the 8th of Feb. 1575, after various and sundry prorogations, the same parl. met to transact business.

*A Bill against Luxury in Apparel.*] Being assembled, the Queen came not to the house, because this was no new parl.; and the first thing we find that was done by the Lords, was to read a bill for the reformation of Apparel. Mr. Camden takes notice, that the year before this, the queen had put out a proclamation to stop the [illegible] excess [illegible] luxury had then [illegible]. Observing, that, to maintain this shining vanity, a great quantity of money was [illegible] out of the land, to buy [illegible] foreign [illegible], to the impoverishment of the [illegible] wealth, and the [illegible], who strove to [illegible] with one another [illegible] kind of extravagance. [illegible] others [illegible] that several sumptuary [illegible] the Queen [illegible] act of parl. [illegible]. But this way had [illegible] access [illegible] former, for though the bill passed the Lords, and was sent down to the Commons, they never returned it.

*A Subsidy.*] There is nothing remarkable else entered in the Lords Journals, till the 27th of this month; when a bill for a Subsidy of two [illegible] was sent up by the Commons, and passed the Lords on the 1st of March. The [illegible] 15ths and 10ths, besides the Subsidy. There was also an act for confirming a grant of 6s. in the pound, from the Clergy, to be paid in 3 years.

*Mr. Wentworth's Speech in behalf of the Liberties of the House.*] But though the Journals of the Lords furnish us with so little to the purpose, those of the Commons were never more copious for so short a session as in this, In which are many things very remarkable, relating to the Liberties and Privileges of that house. The Journalist gives us a Speech made on the very 1st day of this session, by Peter Wentworth, Esq. member for the borough of Tregony in Cornwall. As the speech and the consequences of it are as memorable as any thing we have yet met with in the course of these enquiries, we shall make no apology for the length of it.

"Mr. Speaker;—I find written in a little volume these words in effect:—'Sweet is the name of Liberty, but the thing itself a value beyond all inestimable treasure:' So much the more it behoveth us to take care lest we, contenting ourselves with the sweetness of the name, lose and forego the thing, being of the greatest value that can come unto this noble realm. The inestimable treasure is the use of it in this house. And therefore I do think it needful to put you in remembrance, that this hon. assembly are assembled and come together here in this place, for three special causes of most weighty and great importance.—The 1st and principal is to make and abrogate such Laws, as may be most for the preservation of our noble sovereign. The 2nd . . .

The 3rd is to make or abrogate such laws as may be to the chiefest surety, safe-keeping, and enrichment of this noble realm of England. So that I do think that the part of a faithful-hearted subject is, to do his endeavour to remove all stumbling-blocks out of the way that may impair, or any manner of way hinder, these good and godly causes of this our coming together. I was never of parl. but the last, and the last session, at both which times I saw the Liberty of free Speech, the which is the only salve to heal all the sores of this commonwealth, so much and so many ways infringed, and so many abuses offered to this hon. council, as hath much grieved me even of very conscience and love to my prince and state, Wherefore to avoid the like, I do think it expedient to open the commodities that grow to the prince and whole state, by free speech used in this place; at the least so much as my simple wit can gather of it, the which is very little in respect of that, that wise heads can say therein, and so it is of the more force.—1st, All matters that concern God's honour, through free speech shall be propagated here and set forward, and all things that do hinder it removed, repulsed and taken away.—Next, There is nothing commodious, profitable, or any way beneficial for the prince or state, but faithful and loving subjects will offer it in this place.—Thirdly, All things discommodious, perilous, or hurtful to the prince or state shall be prevented, even so much as seemeth good to [illegible] tected to all good, needful, and necessary [illegible] thereby? Verily I think none, nay, will you [illegible] ness of the sun sheweth more excellent and [illegible] shadow and darken it, be found out? for it is offered in this place as a piece of fine needle- [illegible] there cannot be a false stitch (God aiding us) [illegible] cometh thereof, a wicked purpose may the [illegible] this point I conclude, that in this house, which [illegible] prince and state as free speech; and without this it is a scorn and mockery to call it a Par- [illegible] very school of flattery and dissimulation; and [illegible] experience, I will utter plainly and faithfully, I will use the words of Elehu, 'Behold, I am [illegible] I will speak that I may have a vent. I will open my lips, and make answer, I will regard no manner of person, no man will I spare, for if I should go about to please men, I know not [illegible] text is vehement; the which by God's suffer- [illegible] offend none; for that of very justice, none [illegible] the which I do mean to speak: the one is a ru- [illegible] liketh of such a matter, whosoever speaketh [illegible] The other: Sometimes a Message is brought [illegible] hibiting, very injurious to the Freedom of Speech and consultation. I would to God, [illegible] hell, I mean Rumours and Messages; for [illegible] now I will set down reasons to prove them [illegible] case than any of her subjects. And in the beginning of our speech, I shewed it to be a [illegible] honour, to her maj.'s peril, or the peril of the state. And therefore I will shew the Incon- [illegible] follow not the prince's mind, Solomon saith, 'The King's Displeasure is a Messenger of Death': this is a terrible thing to weak nature, [illegible] and especially have regard unto the matter [illegible] Solomon saith, 'In the way of the righteous there is life,' as for any other way, it is the [illegible] death and condemnation, with the high and [illegible] cording to the prince's mind: and now I will shew you a reason to prove it perilous always [illegible] falleth out, that a prince may favour a cause perilous to himself and the whole state; what [illegible] and state? Yes truly, we are chosen of the whole realm, of a special trust and confidence [illegible] conveniences. Then I will set down my opi- [illegible]

[illegible]

have [illegible] and flatterers in the house, as [illegible] Mr. Speaker [illegible] Speech, for [illegible] and [illegible] state [illegible] that [illegible] present [illegible] the Lord [illegible] state, [illegible] state, and so shall every one of us discharge

our duties in this our high office, whereunto he hath [illegible] us, and [illegible], and [illegible] that that [illegible] to the setting forth of God's glory and honour, and the preservation of our noble queen and commonwealth; for these are the marks that we ought only in this place to shoot at. I am thus earnest, I take God to witness, for conscience sake, love unto my prince and commonwealth, and for the advancement of justice; 'justice,' saith an antient father, 'is the prince of all virtues, yea, the safe and faithful guard of man's life, for by it empires, kingdoms, people and cities be governed; the [illegible] taken away, the society of man cannot long endure.' And a king, saith Solomon, that sitteth in the throne of judgment, and looketh well about him, chaseth away all evil: in which state and throne, God, for his great mercies sake, grant that [illegible] [illegible] and [illegible] them, that [illegible] speech [illegible] seek [illegible] of the Liberties of this house [illegible] that I have [illegible] and great [illegible] my prince and state [illegible] the pit of oblivion, and so no good come thereof."

*Mr. Wentworth's* [illegible] Journalist, the House out of a reverent regard [illegible] ceeding before he had fully finished. The Message Mr. Wentworth meant and intended, [illegible] Commons, in the 14th year of her reign, upon [illegible] &c. inhibiting them, for a certain time, to treat [illegible] queen, (see p. 782.)—Mr. Wentworth being sequestered the house for his said speech, it [illegible] ons had therein) that he should be presently [illegible] and so remaining, should be examined upon his said speech, for the extenuating of his fault therein, by a Committee consisting of all [illegible] being of this house, and other members.

*Mr. Wentworth's Examination before the Committee.*] Next follows mr. Wentworth's own account of his Examination, before the Committee, as follows:—

*Committee.* Where is your late speech you promised to deliver in writing? *Wentworth.* Here it is, and I deliver it upon 2 conditions: the 1st is, that you shall peruse it all, [illegible] me answer all as if I had uttered all. The 2nd [illegible] want of love to her [illegible] state therein also; let me answer it.—*Com.* [illegible] in the house. *Went.* Your honours cannot re-[illegible] will do her maj. good; it will hurt no man but [illegible] *Went.* I humbly require your honours so to do. [illegible] will make you no answer: I will do no such injury to the place from whence I came; for I am now no private person, I am a public, and a councellor to the whole state, in that place, [illegible] freely; and not for you, as counsellors, to call me to account for any thing that I do speak in [illegible] will make no answer; but if you ask me as committees from the house, I will make you [illegible] committees from the house. *Went.* I will then answer you; and the willinger for that mine [illegible] necessity it must be. Your question consisteth of these two points, Where and of whom I [illegible] heard them was the Parliament House; but of whom, I assure you, I cannot tell.—*Com.* This [illegible] when I can make you no better. *Com.* Be-[illegible] use speeches thereupon. *Went.* I assure [illegible] thing that I heard since I came to town.— [illegible] think I speak for excuse-sake, let this satisfy you: I protest before the living God I cannot tell of whom I heard these rumours; yet I do verily think that I heard them of a hundred or [illegible] cause it was so general a speech, I marked [illegible] monly when they be general: and I assure you if I could tell, I would not. For I will [illegible] any man, when I am not enforced thereunto, as in this case I may chuse. Yet I would deal plainly with you, for I would tell your honours so, and if your honours do not credit me, I will [illegible] that I cannot tell of whom I heard those rumours. [illegible] authorities, I will refuse it; because I will do [illegible] But what need I to use these speeches? I will give you an instance, whereupon I heard these rumours to your satisfying, even such a one, [illegible] is that? *Went.* The last parliament [by which [illegible] in An. 14 Reg. ejusdem] uttered a very good [illegible] granted to 4 courtiers, to the utter undoing of 6 or 8000 of the queen's subjects. This speech [illegible] was not one in the house that durst deal in [illegible] words and time in their preamble, requiring [illegible] cils hard handling of the said good member, whereupon this [illegible] house [illegible]

[illegible] and shame; by means whereof, [illegible] the realm drawn into great [illegible] and abused [illegible] [illegible] of [illegible] Popery [illegible] war, [illegible] the Queen, [illegible] this [illegible] restored and conserved [illegible] from that [illegible] restored again the most [illegible], or slacking any [illegible] the first, [illegible] [illegible] But advertising [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] appear [illegible] [illegible] the [illegible] [illegible], the one a [illegible] though not so [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

mercy, had not prevented it. Notwithstanding all which [illegible] [illegible] and [illegible] her Majesty most carefully and providently [illegible] saved this kingdom from a great and [illegible] debt, wherewith it hath been [illegible]. A Debt [illegible] 4 years, at least, [illegible] the reign of Henry VIII and not cleared till within these 2 years, and that with running upon interest [illegible] course able to eat not only private men and their patrimonies, but also princes and their estates, but [illegible] hath been the care of [illegible] time, as now the state is clearly freed from that [illegible] corrosive, the truth whereof may be testified by the citizens of London, whose bonds, under the common seal of the city, [illegible] being usually given [illegible] have [illegible] so many years to their great danger and to the [illegible] [illegible], are now all discharged, cancelled, and delivered into the Chamber of London, to their own hands. By means whereof the realm is not only acquitted of this great burden, and the merchants free, but also her Majesty's credit thereby both at home and abroad greater than any other prince for money, if she have need, and so in reason it ought to be, for that she [illegible] to [illegible], [illegible] princes [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] persons [illegible] here [illegible] oppression [illegible] persons in general, [illegible] prudent and wise [illegible] that we [illegible] peace, [illegible] [illegible] home, and safe enough [illegible] that we [illegible] that we [illegible] [illegible] of our consent [illegible] be [illegible] of Rome, [illegible] oppressed. And thus we [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] may prepare their [illegible] to withstand attempts [illegible] in this our blessed time of peace that we enjoy, by the blessing of God [illegible] ministry of her Majesty we ought to [illegible] provision to prevent any [illegible] either here or abroad, and neither to be careless or negligent, but [illegible] these storms, which are [illegible] in other countries, may [illegible] before they be carried, [illegible] forget the [illegible] that is [illegible] sary of our [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible], as are now one of the most principal [illegible] ed of the realm is both to consider aforehand [illegible] offer unto her maj. such a contribution as shall [illegible] sure; yet, for your satisfactions, I will let you [illegible] which I dare affirm, having more knowledge thereof than some other, in respect of the place I hold in her maj.'s service.—First, how fa- [illegible] than by the law is granted, a matter now drawn [illegible] the like whereof was not seen before. Fifthly, [illegible] great and continual Charges in Ireland, by the evil disposition of the people there; all which [illegible] particular estate; living, as you see, in most temperate manner, without either building or other superfluous things of pleasure; and like [illegible] s to them, but wrought great damage to the realm, which we yet feel; and should do more, had not her maj. to her perpetual fame, [illegible] time could suffer. The Sale of Lands, [illegible] terest, the burthen whereof the realm hath [illegible]

[illegible] times; if so then, much more so now. Besides [illegible] how the present state is now; and therewith [illegible] unfurnished of that which will be sufficient to [illegible] given us so gracious a queen over us; and shew [illegible] alacritate.' This speech ended, a committee was immediately appointed to draw up a bill for a Subsidy.

[illegible] to the house, "that whereas a member of the [illegible] had, in a set speech, uttered divers offensive [illegible] been committed prisoner to the Tower by that [illegible] chequer, rose and spoke as follows: "Mr. Speaker; I think that by this whole nation, [illegible] as our most gracious sovereign is; a princess [illegible] great an offence this was, to reprove so good and gracious a queen so unjustly, and that to [illegible]

[illegible] remit so great an offence; a thing rarely found [illegible] lightly. The greater is her maj.'s commenda- [illegible] us, proceeding from the just trial of our dutiful [illegible] again, for those were her words; a marvel- [illegible] our parts to be forgotten: the rather for that [illegible] 3rdly, that for so gracious a dealing, it was [illegible] duty to so gracious a queen: true it is, that nothing can be well concluded in a council [illegible] causes brought in, Deliberation, Liberty, and [illegible] as they cannot, nor dare not, speak their opi- [illegible] be reputed for a servile council; even so all the proceedings therein shall be rather to sa- [illegible] herein we may not forget to put a difference [illegible] Speech; for by the one men deliver their opi- [illegible] and is a thing most necessary to be preserved amongst us; yet the same was never, nor ought to be, extended so far, as though a man in this house may speak what and of whom he [illegible] sion of further boldness; and thereby so much [illegible] into necessary and just severity; a thing that I trust shall never happen amongst wise and [illegible]

[illegible] *marry.*] A motion had been made in the [illegible] present time. Then he made a large enume- [illegible] they might hope for a continual Succession of those benefits in her posterity. To which, having added a compendious relation of such [illegible] Subsidy, in their names, unto her maj."

[illegible] loweth:—"Mr. Speaker; The queen's maj. our most dread and gracious sovereign lady, [illegible] thereof may be reduced into 5 parts, whereof the 1st containeth a discourse of sundry kinds [illegible] Majesty's Virtues, and of her great and gracious govt. from the beginning, with a remem- [illegible] is a Declaration of Laws past in the Lower House, with an humble suit for her highness's [illegible] 5th and last, concerning a presentation of the [illegible] sundry kinds of Governments, I see not that this time and place doth require any answer to be given unto it other than this; that you, mr. [illegible]

[illegible]

manifold benefits that you have received at her

[illegible]

principal parts, together with the great gifts of

[illegible]

her, to give God hearty thanks for those virtues

[illegible]

and dare certainly affirm unto you, by her

[illegible]

it is, that these your loving and reverend con-

[illegible]

thankful part, as a special and peculiar pro-

[illegible]

any man can devise any more ready, or any more strong persuasion to move a princely na-

[illegible]

yet I am sure, I were not able to set forth this

[illegible]

Benefits received, is one of the greatest satis-

[illegible] for them. And as to the 3d. which

[illegible]

more than this; for therein she consisteth that

[illegible]

her maj. to give a gracious ear unto this your

[illegible]

fection grounded upon her good governance of

[illegible]

also: a matter greatly to move her maj. (she

[illegible]

highness is not unmindful of all the benefits

[illegible]

she ever marry were she a private person; yet

[illegible]

meet for such a Marriage; whereof there be

[illegible]

hath assented (as is before remembered.) And

[illegible]

4th part, which concerneth a Declaration of

[illegible]

her highness requireth in this point; for she is

[illegible]

royal assent granted in vain; which must needs come to pass, [illegible] look better to

[illegible]

[illegible] been conveniently granted."

The Queen [illegible]

[illegible]

A List of the Public Acts passed in this session [illegible] reign.

*The same Parl. meet again after 24 Proroga-* [illegible]

[illegible]

Treasurer, &c.

Edw. earl of Lincoln,

[illegible] of Shrewsbury

Geo. [illegible]

Hen [illegible]

[illegible]

Thos. visc. Howard of Byndon

[illegible] Bergavenny

[illegible] Audley

[illegible]

Edw. lord Sutton of [illegible]

[illegible] timer

[illegible]

Harrowden

Frederick ld. Windsor

[illegible]

[illegible] Chich.

Ch. lord Howard of Effingham

Roger lord North

[illegible] Chandois

[illegible] Hunsdon

[illegible]

[illegible] West lord de [illegible]

[illegible] Clinton of [illegible]

[illegible] Norreys of Rycot

[illegible]

In [illegible] the Commons could not proceed to business.

Accordingly, a long representation is entered [illegible] a former precedent, in a session of parl. holden [illegible] queen's household; sir Js. Crofts, comptroller; sir Fr. Walsingham, and dr. Wilson, secretaries [illegible] Arundele, to go along with a select number of [illegible] 18th: on which day it is entered, that the lord chanc. produced a Commission from the Queen under the broad seal, whereby he was [illegible] Lords Journals relative to this matter.

Feb. 6, a bill was brought into the Lords, to [illegible] first reading.

*A Subsidy granted.*] March 2d, a bill was sent up by the Commons, for granting a Supply [illegible] bill passed the Lords, for fortifying the Borders [illegible] remarkable entry is made in their Journals: "This day the Commons sent up a new bill, 'For fortifying the Borders towards Scotland,' and withal, returned a former bill, which the [illegible] their pleasure, that this their misliking should [illegible] by the Lord's Journal; but we find, that on

[illegible] University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

the 10th, the new bill was read a first time by [illegible] of Lords, and entered in their Journal. In this session, there is a long memorandum made of a Cause between the marq. of Winchester, his lady, and one Mr Oughtred; which at last was referred to a committee of Lords, chosen [illegible]

*A new Speaker elected.*] The Journals of [illegible] and the election of a new one. But as this [illegible] gave him this admonition: "That the House [illegible] son or Estate, or Church-government."

[illegible] made a motion, for a public Fast, and daily [illegible] actions." This motion occasioned a warm [illegible] tion; and mr. Cook, mr. Sec. Wilson, and mr. Serjeant Flowerden, for it. Mr. Norton [illegible] the last session with a Speech on the Liberty [illegible] lution aforesaid, a Fast was appointed to be kept, in the Temple-church, on the 29th of [illegible] in resolving to have a public Fast; and shew- [illegible] such sort as he before did fear it would do; and, [illegible]

Mr. *Vice-Chamberlain* declaring a Message [illegible] in committing such an apparent contempt [illegible] privity and pleasure first known; blaming first [illegible] ercise thereof in her own person; but repro- [illegible] and the state of this commonwealth; (in re- [illegible] or of any member of the same; imputing the [illegible] warrant of the house, [illegible]

[illegible]

Mr. St. Leger extenuated the said offence; [illegible] of the fast; then the imperfections and sins to [illegible] supported by prayer, and humiliation; and [illegible] out of use in the church; lastly, he trusted [illegible]

[illegible]

Mr. Seckford, urged the same submission, but thought it very fitting, and could wish it; [illegible] again unto her highness.

[illegible] intention in speaking for the Fast; but now [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] was for the Liberty of the house; but the [illegible] of a tender care as it seemeth to give no further [illegible]

[illegible] proceeding; with one special note, that they [illegible] to indict a Form of publick Fast without order and without her privity, which was to intrude [illegible]

*Motion for securing the Kingdom, &c. against the* [illegible] of the exchequer, rose and said, "Mr. Speaker, The principal cause of our assembly here, be[illegible] realm, I have thought good with your patience, [illegible] weight and necessity of them I take to be worthy of your considerations. Wherein I mean [illegible] religion of the gospel, which for a time was [illegible] again into thraldom; the rather for that they [illegible] wreck, do from a raging and tempestuous sea, [illegible] of a most impudent, blasphemous and ma[illegible] intending thereby to make a general revolt of [illegible] force, which otherwise he could not do. And [illegible]

[illegible] his friends; having hitherto resisted all at- [illegible] 'Veni, vidi, vici;' so expedite and so ho- [illegible] Enterprize of James Fitz-Morice defeated, and himself slain: The Italians pulled out by the ears at Smirwick in Ireland, and cut in pieces by the notable service of a noble captain and [illegible] of Religion; but like a constant christian [illegible] her, and made us to live in peace 22 years [illegible] felt.—But yet notwithstanding, seeing our enemies sleep not, it behoveth us not to be careless, as though all were past; but rather to think, that there is but a piece of the storm [illegible] devoted unto Rome; assuring ourselves that if [illegible] realm shall find at their hands all the miseries and extremities that they can bring upon it. [illegible] malicious enterprizes seem for a time to be as it were at a stand; yet let us be assured, that [illegible] cease thus; but if they find us negligent, they [illegible] places, and to begin here as their greatest im- [illegible] have joined hands together against us; and if they can, they will procure the sparks of the flames that have been so terrible in other [illegible] kindle as great a fire here. And as the Pope, [illegible] fast in their disobedience to her maj. and her [illegible] gospel hath had a free course, and hath been [illegible] christian govt.; yet such have been the prac- [illegible] the obstinate and stiff-necked Papist is so far [illegible] and such other things of Rome. You see how lately he hath sent hither a sort of hypocrites, naming themselves Jesuits, a rabble of vagrant friars newly sprung up, and running through the world to trouble the church of God; whose [illegible] land, is both evident and lamentable to con- [illegible] only those which from the beginning have [illegible] nouncing of that blasphemous Bull against her [illegible] or to resort unto our preaching and prayers. [illegible]

[illegible] doubt great mischief threatened to this realm; [illegible] it behoveth her maj. not only to provide in [illegible] terprized, either by enemies abroad, or by evil subjects at home. What difference there is [illegible] seen in all ages, and especially in the late [illegible] maj.'s reign: the countenance of which cle- [illegible]

[illegible]

now I say it is time for us to look more nar-

[illegible]

those sudden invasions which other frontier

[illegible]

be levied, that carry with them willing, va-

[illegible]

for many years without any new; I dare assure you for the acquaintance I have (though

[illegible]

thereby Loans upon Interest, as a most pesti-

[illegible]

being easily taxed and easily borne, whereby

[illegible]

having continued so this 400 years or more.

[illegible]

dishonour, but also prove a thing most dangerous to England; considering the nearness

[illegible]

and justice; which the enemies labour to in-

[illegible] gers, not seen afar off, but imminent over our [illegible] peaceable govt. of her maj. doth make us to enjoy all that is ours in more freedom than any nation under the sun at this day: but let [illegible] ened; but let us think certainly that the Pope [illegible] trust there be none here) that he cannot con- [illegible] tries, and there behold what trouble the Pope [illegible] to persuade us; let us think upon these matters as the weight of them deserveth; and so [illegible] to keep our country in order, and to furnish [illegible] resistance, as shall bring confusion to themselves, honour to our most gracious queen, [illegible]

*Mr. Norton* pursued the same admonition, and required the house to proceed to a manner of executing it; which in his opinion was to [illegible] certain other fit persons, to consult of bills [illegible] motion also was well allowed, and Commit- [illegible]

[illegible] points during this session; the bill for a Supply being passed without any. There are also [illegible] tions, &c. but none of them are material [illegible] them a favourable answer to it: on which the [illegible]

[illegible] presenting of the Bills to her maj. he spoke to [illegible] service and glory of God; 2ndly, for the sure- [illegible] the commonwealth; ascribing the sincere and [illegible] lowed by her highness; and also, some other [illegible] state of the commonwealth in general, as for the private benefit and necessary relief of sundry her maj.'s particular good subjects: and [illegible] ness, and especially 2 of them, whereof one [illegible] and reforming of her maj.'s disobedient and obstinate subjects, the utter adversaries of true [illegible] maintenance and preservation of her ma- [illegible] all the said Laws by her royal assent. And then yielding unto her highness most hum- [illegible] for her maj.'s most gracious acceptation of [illegible] for Reformation of some Abuses yet remaining in the church; and most humbly renewing the speedy consideration thereof unto her maj.'s [illegible] sure, did further most humbly beseech her [illegible] their most humble suit, the rather) have a vi- [illegible]

[illegible]

their humble duties; and gave her maj. most

[illegible]

*The Lord Chancellor's Answer.*] The *Lord* [illegible]

her honour, good fame and dignity; but yet [illegible]

was fit for them to do; and giving them withal [illegible]

speedily, as any other like ever hath been; [illegible]

been to her own private use; where in very deed it is to be employed to the general ser- [illegible]

3 years more. During this period, except the [illegible]

tor delivered a Commission from the queen, [illegible]

the clerk of parl. to be read; by which Com- [illegible]

following.

[illegible]

commons, entitled, 'A bill against Jesuits, [illegible]

March 10th, when a Conference was desired [illegible]

up with this title, 'An act for the Security of [illegible]

returned within 6 months after notice given, [illegible]

a Præmunire. That if any of the peers of the [illegible]

and imprisoned at the queen's pleasure. That [illegible]

[illegible]

met with no opposition, in either House, but,

[illegible]

a civilian; who, pleading against it, said, that
'it was a cruel, bloody and desperate law,

[illegible]

confession, &c. in Hollingshead, p. 1384.

[illegible]

a bill mentioned before, for the Surety of the

[illegible]

Peace in the Realm. This was a stroke, aimed,

[illegible]

was passed in the Lords, March 13; and by it

[illegible]

with. Thereby it was enacted, "That 24, or

[illegible]

invade the kingdom, raise rebellion, or at-

[illegible]

*A Subsidy.*] March 18th, the Commons

[illegible]

reading, the Lords dropped the 10ths; and it

[illegible]

was committed to a number of members; who,
we find, framed a new one, which was read,

[illegible]

appointed to consider of a Supply.

[illegible]

rose up and put the house in mind of a Bill

[illegible]

much therein, that it was at length resolved

[illegible]

said ministers, or a supply of able men in

[illegible]

house would proceed to the reading of a bill,

[illegible]

*and Seminary Priests, &c.*] Dec. 17, the bill [illegible] our brethren, uncles, and kinsfolks; and also full of confiscations, but unto whom? Not, [illegible]

[illegible] but that zeal would cause the bill to have passage both in this House and with the Lords, [illegible]

[illegible] stay and rest there; until which time he would [illegible]

[illegible] better satisfaction of this House; or what other [illegible]

[illegible] reproachfully against a bill, first travelled in, and [illegible]

[illegible] as of a good and necessary bill; and that, [illegible]

[illegible] House; and yet, that he, the said dr. Parry, had termed the said bill to be a bill savouring [illegible]

[illegible] jects of this realm; and withal, that he would [illegible]

[illegible] to this House; but would reserve them only [illegible]

[illegible] bound it with a protestation) was without any [illegible]

[illegible] the House; and made repetition of his said [illegible]

[illegible] done to her maj. [illegible]

[illegible] him; in respect that he had said he reserved [illegible]

[illegible] humble submission unto this House, with a du- [illegible]

[illegible] ner of his offence, that it might be the House [illegible]

[illegible] his knee in very humble manner, affirmed de- [illegible]

[illegible] that he had never been of this House before [illegible]

[illegible] any man in it; and so humbly prayed their [illegible]

[illegible] be received into this House again as a member [illegible]

[illegible]

Chamberlain declared unto the house, that her maj. considering the great pains and faith- [illegible] own house, in the mean time, for their better ease and recreation. On which it was resolved, that the most humble and dutiful Thanks of [illegible] cious acceptation of their dutiful care for pro- [illegible]

*The Queen's Answer to the Address of* [illegible]

[illegible] Vice-Chamberlain returned the following An- [illegible] careful, and obedient affections of this whole [illegible] parable princely account and regard of all [illegible] of her highness, her maj. doth most sincerely [illegible] attributing the cause of these good effects (next [illegible]

[illegible] him; and so referring himself to the residue of [illegible] affirming he had not, he ended his speech."

[illegible] to the 4th of Feb. following, "the said Mr. [illegible] the House, 'that besides the rendering of our [illegible] Paper in writing in his hand, devised and set [illegible] kneeling upon his knees, the said mr. Vice-Chamberlain begun the said prayer. Which [illegible] relative to the form of passing a bill to pre-

[illegible]

served: "The open Dangers threatened to

[illegible]

which dangers though the time of them were a

[illegible]

yet the purpose was not; which their late

[illegible]

already ordained; to provide for the preservation of her maj.'s person; to terrify Ireland, and to provide sufficient forces at home both

[illegible]

ment and draw up a bill for that purpose;

[illegible]

commandment, answered, "That she did gra-

[illegible]

two Houses."

[illegible]

cellent prince and gracious queen; "The

[illegible]

realm; that I was thereto directed." And as

[illegible]

power; which was of my good will, diligence,

[illegible]

so now, if I should not acknowledge in this

[illegible]

witnesses against me) the multitude of imper-

[illegible]

our minds, cogitations and hearts: which other-

[illegible] ing; and what were also necessary for the [illegible] avoid things hurtful to the same; to which [illegible] humble thanks; beseeching [illegible] the like benefits of your goodness from time to [illegible] wealth, as we have done, from the beginning [illegible] did the like with such continuance; 2ndly, we humbly beseech your maj. to give your accustomed gracious interpretations to all our proceedings. Wherein if any speeches, motions, [illegible] above our capacities; I can assure your maj. that in this assembly, wherein I was always [illegible] tion to be offensive to your maj. And for proof hereof, when it pleased your maj. to di- [illegible] as it seemed to me, and so I have cause to per- [illegible] God's ordinance a supreme authority for that [illegible]

[illegible] though in your maj.'s princely sight many of [illegible] particular; or because the matters of some of [illegible] lack of greater in greater bodies: and, as in [illegible] maj. as our only head, and fountain of [illegible] imaginate against your maj. we have by a form of law, if it shall like your maj. to [illegible] were most willing to have extended this ordi- [illegible] the same meet for your safety, and for terrify- [illegible] maj.'s pleasure was, that it should not be ex- [illegible] as your maj. hath a manifest demonstration [illegible] have added (for a further outward declaration [illegible] our voluntary minds) a small portion out of [illegible] defence of your realm, and us your humble [illegible] needful for the defence of your realms, against [illegible] sides this our offer, you cannot lack a further [illegible]

[illegible]

I understand not, nor so forgetful that I re- [illegible]

dissolved accordingly [illegible]

lord Burleigh, lord high-treasurer of England; [illegible] her maj.'s commissioners; in her name, to [illegible] for her in this present parl. Which letters [illegible] said Commissioners left their own seats, and [illegible] the lords [illegible] spake to the Houses to this effect:—"That this present parl. was summoned for no usual causes; not for making of new laws, whereof her maj. [illegible] passed." He then shewed, "what misery the [illegible] amongst you to be your Speaker, and present [illegible] their Speaker; who, with the usual forms, was [illegible] nothing is entered in the Journals.

[illegible] realm; notwithstanding the many great Bene-[illegible] ceived of her maj. After the chancellor had ended, lord Burleigh, lord treasurer, stood up; and, as one unto whom the whole Proceedings [illegible] Commons together. And, we are told, in the Journals of the latter, that on [illegible] one member offering to speak to it,

[illegible] stood up and told the House, "That having matter of most great importance to deliver [illegible] with their good favours, for this time to inter-[illegible] then shewed, that her maj. thinking that all those of this House, which were lately in the [illegible] parl. could not hear the same; and also that [illegible] yet any Subsidy, albeit, if need so required, [illegible] were never almost heard of, nor any parl. called for, in former time, that can be found or read [illegible] the said Queen of Scots, [illegible] reign forces; rebellion and civil wars, and dissentions within this realm. Yea, and withal [illegible] the said Queen of Scots, [illegible] concluding with this sentence, 'Ne pereat Is-[illegible] of the duchy, and mr. sec. Woolley; who all [illegible] the said Queen of Scots. Which speeches being ended, the house rose [illegible]

[illegible] the next day, the House [illegible] the 'Great Cause,' as they termed it, several [illegible] Scott, mr. Francis Bacon, mr. Alford, mr. Throgmorton, mr. Barker, mr. Dalton, mr. Baynbrigg, and mr. Solicitor: all vehement [illegible] Queen, and procuring a foreign invasion to [illegible] should be appointed to consider of a Petition to her maj. to that purpose, and also to request the Lords, if they thought good, to join with them in it. Accordingly, a Committee was [illegible] George Moore, who averred, "That only Popery is the chief and principal root of all the [illegible] uces, and the Queen of Scots a principal [illegible] branches; for that the Papists, in very deed, [illegible] than for any affection they bear to her person; [illegible] He therefore moveth, "That it may be joined in the petition for the 'Great Cause,' That [illegible]

[illegible] mons came up, and desired a Conference with [illegible] to them. Whereupon, the Lords appointed [illegible] treasurer, the lord steward: the earls of North- [illegible] berland; the lords Cobham, Grey, Lumley, [illegible]

[illegible] her to him, Charles Pagett, and others. The [illegible] a form of a Petition agreed upon by the com- [illegible] Lordships to make choice of such number of [illegible] them in petitioning her maj. Whereupon, the [illegible] chamberlain, the lord steward; the earls of [illegible] mons made a request to have the Petition [illegible] in the rolls of Parl.; which their lordships thought better to defer, until her maj.'s liking [illegible] The Lords then adjourned to the 15th: again [illegible] tered in their Journals.

[illegible] her maj. by way of Petition; the effect where- [illegible] own, a series of notes, which, he says, were [illegible] the queen, on this occasion. Which, for fear [illegible]

*Petit*[illegible]

*F*[illegible]

"May it please your most Excellent maj. We, [illegible]

[illegible] of your Royal Person was imagined and [illegible]

[illegible] now, by justice, may and ought to be deep[illegible]

We do most humbly beseech your most ex- [illegible] advised and great consultation, we cannot find [illegible] behalf, left us, in the Sacred Scriptures, doth appear. And if the same be not put in pre- [illegible]

[illegible] Petition read, the Queen with great majesty, [illegible] torian, answered to this purpose:—"So many [illegible] being in no sort able to express them. And [illegible] yet am I not more deeply bound to give him [illegible] miracle; namely, That as I came to the crown [illegible] now, after 28 years reign, I perceive in them [illegible] which should I once lose, I might, perhaps, find myself to breathe, but never could I think that I were alive. And now, though my life [illegible] should fall into so great a misdemeanor. And so far have I been from bearing her any ill-will, that, upon the discovery of some treason- [illegible] write this with a purpose to entrap her, for I knew already [illegible] safety and welfare of all my people, I would (I [illegible] obtain a more flourishing condition and a better prince, I would most gladly lay down my life. [illegible] that I desire to live. As for me, I see no such great reason (according as I have led my life) [illegible] die. I have had good experience of this world; I have known what it is to be a subject, and I now know what it is to be a sovereign. Good neighbours I have had, and I have met with bad: and in trust I have found treason. I have bestowed benefits upon ill-deservers; and where I have done well I have been ill requited and spoken of. While I call to mind these things past, behold things present; and [illegible] these, I am armed with a better courage than [illegible] will not so far wrong myself, or the laws of my kingdom, as not to think but that she, [illegible] mer laws, though the late act had never been [illegible] made to prejudice her, as divers who are in- [illegible] seeing it had now the force of a law, I thought good to proceed against her according to the same. But you lawyers are so curious in scanning the nice points of the law, and pro- [illegible] selves, that if your way were observed, she must have been indicted in Staffordshire, and have holden up her hand at the bar, and have been tried by a jury of 12 men. A proper way, forsooth, of trying a princess! To avoid therefore such absurdities, I thought it better [illegible] cause to a select number of the noblest per- [illegible] realm; and all little enough. For we princes [illegible] view of all the world: the least spot is soon spied in our garments, the smallest blemish presently observed in us at a great distance. [illegible] and perplexities, that I must resolve upon the [illegible]

Digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

allied to me in blood, and whose practices against me have touched me with so much grief and sorrow, that I have willingly chosen to absent myself from this parliament, lest I should increase my trouble by hearing the matter mentioned, and not out of fear of any danger to my person, as some think. But I will now tell you a secret (though it is well known that I have the property to keep counsel): It is not long since these eyes of mine saw and read an oath wherein some bound themselves to kill me within a month. Hereby I see your danger in my person, which I will be very careful to prevent and keep off. The association which you entered into for my safety I have not forgotten; a thing I never so much as thought of, till a great number of hands and seals to it were shewed me. This has laid a perpetual tie and obligation upon me to bear you [illegible] goodwill and [illegible] comfort that [illegible] respect and [illegible]. But forasmuch as this matter now in hand is very rarely exampled, and of greatest consequence, I hope you do not look for any present resolution from me: for my manner is, in matters of less moment than this, to deliberate long upon that which is but once to be resolved. In the mean time, I beseech Almighty God so to illuminate and direct my heart, that I may see clearly what may be best for the good of his Church, the prosperity of the Commonwealth, and your safety. And that delay may not breed danger, we will signify our resolution to you with all conveniency. And whatever the best of subjects may expect at the hands of the best princess, that expect from me to be performed to the full."

The Commons' Journals inform us, that on the 14th of Nov. when the Speaker had reported to the House the effect of the Queen's Answer, sir Christopher Hatton stood up, and having first affirmed that the Speaker's Report was true, he added, that the Queen had commanded him [illegible] to signify to the house, "That her highness, not without some great [illegible] of the Scottish Queen, in respect of her honour, sex, and great fortunes in her younger years, her nearness of kindred to her maj. and also of herself, could be well pleased to forbear taking of her blood; if, by any other means to be devised, by the Great Council of this realm, the safety of her maj.'s person and government might be preserved, without peril, ruin and destruction. But hereby she meant not to restrain them [illegible] to their own free liberty and [illegible] of proceeding otherwise at their choice. For, as her maj. would willingly hearken to the reasons of any particular member of this house, so, he added, they might exhibit their thoughts in that case either to any of the Privy Council, being of that house, or to the Speaker, to be by him delivered to her maj." After the said [illegible] had delivered this message, he took occasion to put the House in mind, that at the beginning of this parl. the Lord Chancellor told them, that it was her maj.'s express command, no Laws at all should be made this session, her maj. purposing not to be present to give her royal assent to any. Wherefore he moved that [illegible] might be [illegible] to Nov. 19, in which [illegible] other answer to their Petition, which she had not [illegible] the House [illegible] and arguments, the House came to a Resolution, "That no other way, device, or means whatsoever could [illegible] be found or imagined, that such safety can in any wise be had, so long as the said Queen of Scots doth or shall live."

The Lords' Journals say nothing of this Message, but there [illegible] it was sent to them; because that authority informs us, that on the [illegible] after a long debate in that House, the Lords agreed that the matter should be put to the question, and every peer being asked his several voice, answered, with one consent, "That they could find no other way." The same day, [illegible] the Lower House came up, and desired the Lords to be content to appoint some of their House to confer with them, upon the Answer that was to be made to her highness. Whereupon, the Lords [illegible] of the [illegible] Canterbury, [illegible] Lord-treasurer, &c. And the Lords, after conference had with the Committees of the Lower House, made report, that the same question was proposed to them in the Commons' House, and that they answered all with one consent, no man gainsaying, "That they could find no other way." Whereupon the Committees of both Houses agreed upon this Answer to be made to her [illegible] on that [illegible] that [illegible] was set down in their Petition. Which Answer, for the Lords, was delivered to her majesty by the Lord Chancellor, and for the Commons by their Speaker, at Richmond, Thursday, Nov. 24. On the 2[illegible], the Lord Chancellor reported to the Lords her maj.'s Answer to their last Resolution, the effect whereof was, 'If,' said her maj. 'I should say unto you that I mean not to grant your petition, by my faith I should say unto you more than perhaps I mean. And if I should say unto you I mean to grant your petition, I should then tell you more than is fit for you to know. And thus I must deliver you an answer answerless.'

Thus much verbatim from the Lords' Journals. And all we have to add from the same authority is, that an entry is made in this day's proceedings of every thing done in the foregoing relating to this affair; with a copy of the Petition at the conclusion. The unhappy Queen of Scots had not one advocate, in either House, that would or durst plead in her favour. The current against her was as growing as would then [illegible] Christendom thought themselves interested in it. But it is certain that the violent party [illegible] maj. or to the realm; yet, knowing that in [illegible] ple of their nation; and this rabble using to [illegible]

[illegible] giving his opinion to the House, "that there [illegible] heart to the Petition of this House; and that [illegible] tion it was answered by mr. Treasurer, that he took it to proceed from a good intention; [illegible] for that purpose; and every member might do [illegible]

Feb. 15, 1587, both Houses met pursuant [illegible] was done, because the Lord Chanc. was sick, [illegible]

[illegible] paid in 3 years, was read and passed also.

*A Benevolence from both Houses.*] But [illegible] of the state; on the 11th of March, a Message [illegible] of their House for a Conference with a committee [illegible] lord chamberlain, the earls of Kent, Worcester, Rutland, Hertford, and Leicester, the [illegible] after the Conference, made a Report to the House, "That the Commons made humble [illegible] this House join with them in a contribution or [illegible] 15th; when another Mem. is entered, "That [illegible] report unto the whole House, that upon divers [illegible] maj. about a Benevolence, or contribution, [illegible] their lordships shall seem convenient." Ac[illegible] contribution; when after some conference [illegible]

Spiritual had made a prior offer of contribu- [illegible] consent, [illegible] the [illegible] the sum and the payment thereof.

On the [illegible] day of the session, the Commons [illegible] for the [illegible] of the Lords [illegible] debate due to the [illegible] Lords had before [illegible] that [illegible] had rejected [illegible] conference with [illegible] the Lords [illegible] up, the [illegible] contrary to [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] whole House [illegible] [illegible] and voted [illegible]

*Sir C. Hatton* [illegible] Sir Christopher Hatton [illegible] House [illegible] that [illegible] [illegible] the [illegible] [illegible] Catholics [illegible] the king of Spain, the [illegible] Papists [illegible] [illegible] agreed [illegible] the term [illegible] very pieces asserted, [illegible] Pope [illegible] Spanish [illegible] them [illegible] Pope and the [illegible] Scotish queen [illegible] by their means. Pope [illegible] and sent Jesuits and Seminaries [illegible] and Ireland, and [illegible] Rebellion [illegible] Papists [illegible] [illegible] should their [illegible] devices, and which to

the cardinals of Lorrain and Guise, that [illegible] with [illegible] [illegible] Scotland [illegible] England [illegible] the [illegible] of France [illegible] and [illegible] mentioned [illegible] [illegible] He contrived [illegible] in the Low Countries [illegible] Countries, with the [illegible] Drake, with [illegible] Their shew [illegible] to extirpate them [illegible] gion, not only [illegible] of the [illegible] dinals of Lorrain and [illegible] These [illegible] tish queen, but [illegible] king of Spain's [illegible] [illegible] and Ireland [illegible] of Spain [illegible] of Florence [illegible] 12,000 [illegible] abroad. [illegible] blood of

[illegible]

[illegible] Anthony. Which he answered to be [illegible] that was [illegible] the last session of parliament which mr. Speaker sent to her ma- [illegible]

*Mr. Wentworth's Speech relating to the Liberties of the House.*] March 1, "Mr. Went- [illegible] motion until her maj.'s pleasure was further [illegible] would not be so satisfied, but required his [illegible] Speech and the Questions at large, which are [illegible]

"Mr. Speaker, forasmuch as such laws as [illegible] by this hon. council, I as being one moved and [illegible] it, that I do find in myself a willing mind to [illegible] highness's honour and glory; and to shew unto [illegible] faithful, and dutiful service; of the which mind, I am sure, mr. Speaker, here are many [illegible] this hon. council, doth hold and stay us back. For us we have a hearty desire to serve God, [illegible] Wherefore I pray you, mr. Speaker, eftsoons [illegible] state. For I am fully persuaded, that God [illegible] ledge of them also. So here are the Questions, mr. Speaker: I humbly and heartily beseech you to give them a reading, and God [illegible] vice of our merciful God, our lawful prince, [illegible] them even with his spirit, the spirit of wisdom, [illegible] but foolishness."

*The Questions.*] "Whether this council be not a place for any member of the same here [illegible] realm?—Whether that great honour may be done unto God, and benefit and service unto the prince and state without free Speech in [illegible] Whether there be any council which can make, add to, or diminish from the laws of the [illegible] cil to make any secret or matter of weight, [illegible] prince, or state, without the consent of the [illegible] over-rule the house in any matter or cause [illegible] the prince and state can continue, stand, and [illegible]

[illegible] but shewed them to sir Tho. Heneage, a privy [illegible] March 2nd, mr. Cope, mr. Lewkenor, mr. Hurleston, and mr. Bavnbrigg, the 4 speakers [illegible]

Sir *John Higham* made a motion, "That [illegible]

Mr. *Vice-Chamberlain* answered. "That if [illegible] house, then there might be room for a petition. [illegible] yet he conceived it very unfit for her maj. to [illegible] no more of this matter, nor how long these [illegible]

[illegible] of all the bills are particularly recited for that [illegible]

*A new Parl. called.*] A new parl. was sum- [illegible] letters patents, directed to sir Christ. Hatton, knt. then lord chancellor, Wm lord Burleigh, [illegible] sembled, and the Queen present, the Lord Chancellor opened the cause of the summons to this effect: he told them, say the Lords' Journals, "That her maj. had made it her [illegible] invade her dominions; nor had taken arms to [illegible] visions of her enemies, nor the frequent soli- [illegible] things, could move her to make war. And, [illegible] hopes of it aside: for she sent a set of grave, [illegible] labouring to effect, behold, a vast navy of Spanish ships were seen on our English coasts. Such a navy, that for number and greatness of the ships, for quantity of arms and military [illegible] was never seen to float on the ocean before. But God Almighty, her maj.'s hope, defender, and preserver, rendered this vast Armado of [illegible] raised-up rocks and mountains of ships; and, [illegible] new the fight, they fled for it, and took a long [illegible] ern regions, and by those means hoped to re- [illegible] make you secure and void of fear? Do not you imagine, I say, that they are ardently stu- [illegible] that our navy, which is the greatest bulwark [illegible] their Speaker. Accordingly, on that day, the [illegible] Snagg, serjeant at law, for their Speaker, who, [illegible] the Lords went upon was to bring in a bill [illegible] raising a Supply. The former bill passed the Lords, and went no further; but a bill against [illegible] War, and Victual, which was made felony, became a statute.

*A large Supply granted.*] March 11, an [illegible] but, on the 14th, when the bill was first read [illegible]

[illegible] bill was read for the Confirmation of a Sup- [illegible] Supply was carried in the Commons will ap- [illegible]

*Debate on a Bill for Regulating Abuses in* [illegible] house that several particulars of a speech, he [illegible] by a very great Person. And praying that the [illegible] of the Excheq.; who said, " That he offered [illegible] tion; but putting the house in remembrance [illegible] ment Supply of treasure to be had and levied [illegible] and the greater part of the residue of the com- [illegible] and weighty a cause doth require, have met [illegible] an extraordinary proportion of provision, as [illegible] sion of necessity doth require, and that they [illegible] also moved might be read unto them; to the [illegible] give their assents unto it, mr. Speaker might [illegible] have the same framed into the form of a bill [illegible] and shewed further, that as the grant of this [illegible] the said other note; and that withal the said [illegible] learned council for the further proceeding [illegible] good. Whereupon the house liking well of [illegible] —After the Chancellor had ended, sir Henry [illegible] tion, and urged the present Reading of the bill. [illegible] Message came from the Lords to desire a con- [illegible] cerning a Message they had just received from her maj. On this, a large committee were appointed, who, returning, made report, " That [illegible] cases. The one tending to regulate the officers and ministers of her own household; and the [illegible] mean themselves ill, her maj. was of herself [illegible] length, it was resolved to chuse another Committee to consider of this matter; and, also to [illegible] unto the House, " That he and others of this [illegible] and that they received from her maj. most [illegible] subjects, yea more than of her own [illegible] of Exchequer, it pleased her maj. to tell them, That for the one, to wit, the abuses of Purvey- [illegible] late lord steward to address his letters unto all the shires of this realm, for the due inquiry and certificate of the misdemeanors of Purveyors in all places, for some courses thereupon to [illegible]

I had no convenient [illegible]

[illegible]

most dangerous enemy, [illegible] and her [illegible] into Scotland, and the king had assured her [illegible]

[illegible] his adherents, greater; the charge of her maj. for defence of her realm, both with forces by sea, [illegible] hath [illegible] jects [illegible] yea, caused her to sell part of her highness's crown. [illegible] how her maj. could be able to maintain [illegible] realms conspired against us.—Wherefore, [illegible] of our own, for the defence of others, and assistance of her maj. in such an insupportable [illegible] much more forward ought we to be? The aid [illegible] in these like cases, is with such slackness performed, [illegible] granted cometh not to her maj. A great shew, a rich grant, and a long sum, seemeth to be made, [illegible]

[illegible] of assize also to go to their circuits. So the [illegible] elect a speaker.

[illegible] himself as follows: "Your maj.'s most loving [illegible] speak before your maj.; yet this their nomi- [illegible] approbation. For, as in the heavens, a star is but 'opacum corpus,' until it have received light from the sun; so stand I 'corpus opacum,' a mute body, until your highness's bright-shining [illegible] How great a charge this is, to be the mouth of [illegible] small experience, being a poor professor of [illegible] that of a number in this house, I am most unfit. For, amongst them are many grave, [illegible] those of ripe judgments: but I am untimely fruit, not yet ripe, but a bud scarcely blossomed. So, as I fear me, your maj. will say, 'Neglectâ frugi eliguntur folia:' amongst so many fair fruit ye have plucked a shaken leaf.—If I may be so bold as to remember a speech (which I cannot forget) used the last parl. in your maj.'s own mouth, Many come hither [illegible]

[illegible] above that which ever she thought was in [illegible]

[illegible]

It may be answered, 'In promptu causa est, [illegible] realm.'

[illegible]

and, for myself, I humbly beseech you and [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] *lief of maimed Soldiers, &c.*] The Lords Jour- [illegible]

[illegible] And, as the Commons, at this present par- [illegible]

[illegible] arish was [illegible]

[illegible] realm ; although at some time more vehement [illegible]

[illegible] try, to apply all our endeavour, being every [illegible]

[illegible]

his. Besides this, his possessing a great part

[illegible]

a frontier enemy to all the west of England

[illegible]

a port full of shipping for the war, he is a dan-

[illegible]

a man might enlarge, the danger so great to

[illegible]

dukedom, but he destines all his forces to con-

[illegible]

great officers of the crown; and by them, and

[illegible]

in some of the principal towns of France, as

[illegible]

others, he hath procured a rebellion against

[illegible]

France, even to Paris and Roan, armies col-
lected of Walloons, Lorainers, Italians, Spa-

[illegible]

[illegible] Besides these foreign armies,

[illegible]

it with matter of defence of Catholic religion,

[illegible]

point, are merely France. These are the

[illegible]

draw England into like peril; without God's

[illegible]

to invade England, whereof I think no good

[illegible]

wise, yet I will remember to you divers man-

[illegible]

arguments or tokens, I will declare to you, the

[illegible]

off with that loss. But it is certain he hath, the two last years, builded a great number of

[illegible]

diness to serve on the seas, a good argument

[illegible]

England. For now that he hath all the mari-

[illegible]

sea to enter into any part of France with this navy.—How he and the Pope pay [illegible] to [illegible] a party in England to be ready [illegible]

[illegible]

to gain so great a multitude of vulgar people;

[illegible]

realm is certain; this that followeth shall

[illegible]

to believe nothing until he shall see it. There

[illegible]

blemen, of the greatest calling in Scotland,

[illegible]

that might concern these noblemen. They

[illegible]

with Spain for the Queen of Scots, a man of a

[illegible]

being a principal contriver of this conspiracy.

[illegible]

opus, hic labor est.' And I would gladly [illegible] company, of whom I might have

[illegible]

question; wherein, when time shall serve, I

[illegible]

| | |
|---|---|
| [illegible] by year — — — | 100,000 |
| For the charge in mr. Huddlestone's time, for —— years — — | 154,000 |
| [illegible] | [illegible] |
| [illegible] loughby, for 6000 men — — — | 49,283 |
| [illegible] sex, with —— thousand men. In [illegible] sometimes with 600 — — — | 232,000 |
| [illegible] — — — — — — | 14,100 |
| For the office of the ordnance — | 62,000 |
| Scotland — — — — — | 15,000 |

[illegible]

[illegible] to the Lords, entitled, 'an Act for the grant of 3 entire Subsidies, and six 15ths and 10ths,

[illegible]

Bill for Entailing the Succession.] This is all that the Lords Journals give us; but, that of

[illegible]

sir Hen. Bromley delivered a Petition to the

[illegible]

the lower, unto her maj. for 'Entailing the

[illegible]

called before the Council; and, though the

[illegible]

to the Tower, sir Hen. Bromley to the Fleet; and one mr. Rd. Stevens and mr. Welch, two

[illegible]

long these 4 members were confined is uncertain; for, on the 10th of March, one mr. Wroth, moved the House, on the Subsidy-bill, "That

[illegible]

Sir *Rob. Cecil* rose and said: "Mr. Speaker, as I remember, I have been of this house these 5 parliaments; and I have not determined to [illegible] ing, and it is in Latin, 'Nec te collaudes, [illegible] other, I do confess, I hope, you will pardon me. The occasion of this parl. as I take it by [illegible] from her maj. to us in the Higher House, is [illegible] and greatest price, and at this present in im[illegible] christ of Rome, (for I may well couple them [illegible] her, the one being [illegible]

[illegible] but trifles and paultry devices, which I mean [illegible] in his possession, whither he still sendeth [illegible] tinually, and there have his navy in a readi[illegible] he had the wind in a bag. Besides, having [illegible] riched and her maj.'s impost increased, being one of the greatest revenues of her crown. [illegible]

[illegible] latter actions. He hath seen it is but a fishy [illegible]

[illegible] I be deceived, the last letters, that came from [illegible] make a road into the north, and to bring back the lord Bothwell and the lord Huntley. The [illegible] you would consult how to withstand such in- [illegible] membered. Wherefore I would desire mr. [illegible]

Sir *John Wolley* spake to the like effect, say- [illegible] speech should consist; which he likened to a natural body, in which the more danger the [illegible] was a poor admiral now, but yet he doubted [illegible] bring such a navy as should terrify the queen [illegible] and the confusion of her maj. and her loyal [illegible] be in their countries, besides the sickness be- [illegible] also exhorted the house to a speedy agreeing [illegible]

[illegible] point now, 'Non utrum imperare, sed utrum vivere.' I will speak of nothing but that which [illegible] above 100,000l.? For it is well known that [illegible] of them, 150,000l. All which her maj. be- [illegible] from war at home. Besides, when her maj. came to the crown, she found it 4 millions in- [illegible] she found greatly decayed: yet all this she [illegible] thing indebted; and now she is able to match [illegible] found when they came to invade us. Yea, [illegible] it with artillery of brass; so that one of her ships is not a subject's but rather a petty king's [illegible] consumed little or nothing in her pleasures. [illegible] maj. with his purse, seeing it concerns his [illegible] deal, and stick for no cost nor charges: how [illegible] whereof not only a member but the whole is [illegible] are less by half than they were in Henry [illegible] swered every one fully. I desire the matter may be put to a committee."

[illegible] lowing; "That which these hon. personages [illegible] but the other I should know. I did use great [illegible] it was a thing not to be done suddenly nor at [illegible] in reforming his laws."—The rest of his argument tending to the appointing a committee, [illegible] lieve her maj. with Subsidies, in respect of those many and great enemies against whose [illegible]

[illegible] *Ecclesiastical Courts.*] Feb. 27. Mr. *Morrice* [illegible] own oaths, to accuse themselves in their own [illegible] shall take such oaths, because they know not [illegible] the time they be sworn; and also after such [illegible] tion, degradation or suppression, upon such [illegible] a corporal oath of their canonical obedience to their ordinaries. And shewing further it [illegible] the end pray a consultation to be had therein [illegible]

Mr. *Dalton* answered thus: "This bill pre- [illegible] to make of a mole-hill a mountain in words, so by a well compiled speech to make a grave and dangerous thing of nothing; nay, a thing indeed needless, for that the state hath hith- [illegible] as too busy a meddling in such a thing so for- [illegible]

Sir *Francis Knowles* answered, "That where- [illegible] law; it tended, in his opinion, but, to the reforming of abuses, and so restraining of the prelates, that if they meddle against the laws, [illegible]

Dr. *Lewen* endeavoured to shew, "That as [illegible] the other, than a house without a foundation. [illegible] the bishops to be such a part of the body [illegible]

[illegible]

Then it might be that the party accused, if the

[illegible]

like was used in our churches as at Geneva, so

[illegible]

ing, is no other than in the common law ; for

[illegible]

his oath he may be freed. And so as to the

[illegible]

Mr. *Oliver St. John* spake for the bill. " It

[illegible]

myself, I am but young, yet will I shew unto

[illegible]

reason ; for so were the official prestitute to

[illegible]

they had done so ; and set it down that it was answered in the parliament house, ' that thieves

[illegible]

accusers ? And for that manner of accusation,

[illegible]

the lawyers themselves speak against it ; for one sixth of it, ' Ut libere fatear quod sentiam,

[illegible]

subscription in this form. And because it is

[illegible]

Absolution, there is no such oath to be required therein in our writ ' de excommunicato

[illegible]

Sir *Robert Cecil* answered, " I am unwilling to speak, yea, I speak against my will; and

[illegible]

What the bill containeth, I am ignorant of; and whether to allow of it or not, I will sur-

[illegible]

whom I love ; yet a bill to be offered and in-

[illegible]

yet not forgetting the cause, she had, in her

[illegible]

it is not fit, and her maj. cannot but be offended at it. For the bill, I protest, I know

[illegible]

unto us. And if I may do this office and service

[illegible]

I fear the things sought will be denied for the

[illegible]

Mr. *Speaker* said, " In favour and freelove,

[illegible]

sently to open it, I cannot so readily understand it, and do it as I should; for indeed it is a matter far above my ordinary practice: and to deliver a thing before I conceive it, I

[illegible]

Hereupon the house was in question, whether it should be committed to the Speaker only, or

[illegible]

was read. Therefore, upon a motion made

[illegible] by 2 or 3."

[illegible]

[illegible] that if it might be lawful and open war, there [illegible]

[illegible] since the time of the granting of the said dou- [illegible] 2 entire Subsidies and four 15ths, do negative- [illegible] house of less than 3 entire Subsidies, to be paid in the 3 next years, at two payments in [illegible] Committee of this House. But insisting for [illegible] and were also imposed, for the most part, [illegible] declaring, that he knew one shire of this [illegible] living and countenance, but none of them, in the said last Subsidies, assessed at above four- [illegible] no one assessed at above 300l. goods a man, and that not yet past above 4 or 5 such." Which speech, in effect, being ended, "He, [illegible]

*Mr. Francis Bacon* spoke next. "He yielded [illegible] ing of it. For the custom and privilege of this [illegible] the Subsidies from hence, then to the upper house; except it were that they present a bill [illegible] as the greatest number; nor is it reason the [illegible] ours? for the thanks will be theirs, and the [illegible] Wherefore I wish, that, in this action, we [illegible] an answer from us to-morrow, some answer [illegible] "That they had considered of their lordships [illegible] do as so great a cause deserved. To join with [illegible] pose he cited a precedent in Hen. VIIIth's time (see p. 485,) where cardinal Wolsey came [illegible] that he did infer, that the Lords might indeed give notice unto the said House of Commons, [illegible] done."

Whereupon the House ordered, that the [illegible] the house; whether a Subsidy should be yield- [illegible]

Sir *Wm. Moore* shewed, first, "That her [illegible] him. He had a Benevolence, and then a Subsidy, paid within 3 months. Edw. VI. had [illegible] paid him. Mary had a relief paid her, which [illegible] hath been a continual defence of her own [illegible]

Sir *George Carey* said, "I speak for the [illegible]

[illegible] digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

than [illegible] enemy; which will be, if, with our forces, we [illegible]ed to us this summer. The Spaniard already [illegible] to corrupt the nobility; and, to the king, [illegible] mised; and the king of Spain will levy 30,000 [illegible] encounter them with a great navy. Where[illegible]

Sir [illegible] *R*[illegible] knew. "He very well discovered the great strength of the king of Spain. And, to shew [illegible] the world. As also, that his malice and ill purpose was evident to this realm: he shewed [illegible] themselves, and to resist others. For, as he [illegible] with 60 gallies, besides other shipping, with purpose to annoy us. We must then have no ships (if he invade us) riding at anchor; all will be little enough to withstand him. At his [illegible] place of most danger, for no ordnance can be carried thither to remove him; the passages [illegible] him is this: to send a royal army to supplant him in Britany, and to possess ourselves there; and to send a strong navy to sea, and to lie [illegible] upon all that come. This we are able to do, and undoubtedly with fortunate success, if we [illegible] "That it was the opinion of the majority to [illegible] But, [illegible]

Mr. [illegible] up and said, "That he dissented from the [illegible] case. For, that, in his opinion, the same would [illegible]"

Mr. *Beale* seconded him. "He insisted [illegible] cient liberties and privileges of this House in [illegible] the Lords: and gave an instance of a former precedent in the like case; and offered to shew [illegible] lowed in the 9th Hen. IV. The two houses [illegible] house desiring a greater Subsidy than was granted by the lower house; hereupon 12, that [illegible] upper house; namely a greater Subsidy; and, to that end, conference to be had with them of [illegible] meet to be done in so general a matter, but thought the conference a derogation to the [illegible] in all things he thought it just to prefer them."—The court party were very earnest for this conference; and thereupon

Sir *Robert Cecil* spoke again. "He put [illegible] house were had with the Lords, as a matter very behoofful: especially for that their lord[illegible] maj.'s present store of treasure, more or less, [illegible] nion, still to give his consent, That conference [illegible] lordship's said former motion and request for [illegible]"

Sir *Wm. Brunker* stood up, and, "He reciting the said great present necessity of consultation and provision, and that it cannot be otherwise, but that the proportion of convenient supply of treasure, answerable to the [illegible] must needs require a greater mass of treasure [illegible]"—[illegible] Speaker put the question, For a Conference [illegible] And, on a division of the house, it [illegible] 217 [illegible] a Committee to wait upon the Lords, and ac- [illegible] soft terms as possible. Who, returning, made report, "That their lordships well hoped that [illegible] due care for a speedy and a proper Supply, [illegible]

Mr. *Beale* stood up and desired to satisfy the house, "By reason it was conceived by [illegible] the 9th of Hen. IV. the Commons having granted a Subsidy, which the Lords thought [illegible] himself mistaken in the question, and desired [illegible]

Sir *Tho. Heneage* "propounded the question [illegible]

Sir *John Wolley* thought, "That the former [illegible]"

Sir *Hen. Knivett* moved, "That for the [illegible]

Sir *Hen. Upton* spake "in defence of the for- [illegible] it had proceeded; 1st, agreeing to a double subsidy and four 15ths; this being offered, and the lords thinking it seemed little, and consi- [illegible] sired a Conference with the Lower House, giving reasons of great importance for a greater aid; and they gave us a taste of what was needful, as 3 Subsidies at the least; and upon those great causes desired a conference the [illegible]

[illegible]

Sir *Robert Cecil* said, "I desire now I may [illegible] answer to 3 speeches. Those 2 hon. persons [illegible] a kind of satisfaction for a former mistaking; [illegible] The 2nd man's motion thus far I allow, That [illegible] but if his meaning be, that we may not im- [illegible] her, I am altogether against it. This only I [illegible] of 3 points. The 1st was news, the 2nd was [illegible] the queen. This was news. For I heard it not before. The history was a large report of [illegible] Subsidy, but not conclude a Subsidy with them. His manner seems contrary to his [illegible] that we should confer with them about a Sub- [illegible] taking of the question; and that since some [illegible]

[illegible]

voice.

[illegible]

. . . as they . . . , I will . . .

It was on the . . . of March, that . . .

[illegible] *forbidding the Commons to meddle with the* [illegible]

[illegible]

. . . this day, when I saw the heat of these . . .

[illegible]

persons here present, who, if I fail in delivering what was given me in charge, can report it unto you: and I am glad that there are [illegible]

is not violated; for her maj. in her most gra- [illegible]

require the bill of me; for this only she re- [illegible]

of 3 things; 1st, the End for which the parl. [illegible]

sure and Commandment now is. For the 1st, [illegible]

her maj.'s person) 'to call parliaments; and [illegible]

same; it is in my power to assent or dissent [illegible]

some sharper means to a more due obedience, [illegible]

State, or in causes Ecclesiastical; (for so her maj. termed them.) She wondered 'that any [illegible]

tempt' (I use her own words) 'a thing con- [illegible]

that were not there; her maj.'s present charge and express command is, 'That no bills touch- [illegible]

allegiance, I am commanded, if any such bill [illegible]

liaments;—"The high court of parl. most high [illegible]

ancient court within this your realm. For be- [illegible]

West-Saxons, we read of a parl. holden; and [illegible]

In the time of the West-Saxons a parl. was [illegible]

'I, Ina, king of the West-Saxons, have caused [illegible]

Fatherhood, in ancient time, were these which [illegible]

maj.'s writ 'de discretioribus & magis suffici- [illegible]

& urgentibus negotiis, nos, statum & defensi- [illegible]

our councils: but yet so urgent causes there [illegible]

it, I must presume to say that which hath been [illegible]

their habitations, 'ut in tutissima turri.' They [illegible]

away out of their hives, 'non habentes aculeos.' And whoso assails their king, in him 'immit- [illegible]

ble queen, whom we all serve; being protected, [illegible]

wish you may ever sit upon your throne over [illegible]

ut confundantur ne noceant.' Under your [illegible]

[illegible]

a Confirmation of all Letters Patents, from her."

[illegible]

you, by God, if I knew those persons, or may [illegible] fearful in so urgent a cause.—The Subsidy you [illegible] your good-will with it; but if the necessity of [illegible] it, I would refuse it. But let me tell you, the [illegible] coffers for your defence in time of need, and [illegible] command in your countries, I require you to [illegible] peace, I command and straitly charge you, that [illegible]

*A new Parl. called.*] A new parl. was called [illegible]

*The Lord Keeper's Speech.*] "The queen's [illegible] clare unto you, my lords and others here pre- [illegible] before I can express, I must confess truly, [illegible] Wherefore, if, either through fear I forget, or [illegible] sent, to assemble this hon. and great council [illegible] and inestimable benefit of her subjects, as [illegible] therein; the whole realm enjoying peace in [illegible] cruel and bloody wars. This her maj. is pleased to ascribe to the great [illegible]

[illegible] no less unto His holy name; who, of his in- [illegible] her highness's chief care and regard of all, [illegible] through all the parts of her realm; and as [illegible] of wicked and ungodly men; that continuing [illegible] and go forward in their wickedness: for 'Mora [illegible] solete and worn out of use; others idle and vain, serving to no purpose: some again over [illegible] a due consideration of the said laws; and where you find superfluity, to prune and cut [illegible] biguity, to explain; that they be not burthen- [illegible] which being a service of importance, and very [illegible] revenge to requite injuries; but this against [illegible] cellent maj. to be taken away; which hitherto, [illegible] Wherefore it is high time that this be looked [illegible] thereof, her maj. hath not spared to disburse a mass of treasure, and to sell her land for [illegible]

[illegible] and infinitely more of her own. The taxa- [illegible] the payments of the Commons then did far exceed any that have been since her maj.'s reign; which is of record in the histories of [illegible] provide needful and convenient Aid, in some [illegible] continue at, for the defence of the realm. [illegible] will not be forward to contribute and bestow whatsoever he hath: for if, with the common- [illegible] in danger, he that would seek then to lay up [illegible] him that would busie himself to beautify his house, when the city wherein he dwelleth is on fire; or to him that decketh up his cabin, [illegible] those which seek to devour all; and to give, [illegible] God, of our most gracious sovereign, of our [illegible] that I may not offend in too much enlarging this point, as a poor remembrancer to her maj. I shortly say to your lordships, 'Quod justum et necessarium est;' nothing can be more just [illegible] proceed, and wisely consult of these weighty [illegible] is, you should, according to your accustomed [illegible] for discretion fit, as your mouth, to signify [illegible] next, to present in this place."

*Christopher Yelverton, esq. elected Speaker.*] [illegible] presented mr. serjeant Yelverton as their [illegible]

[illegible] creetly and wisely used, as was meet.

*Proceeding in the Case of Lord De la Ware.* [illegible] four earls, ten bps. and five barons introduced; [illegible] parl. His Petition was referred to a committee [illegible] report to the house accordingly. This lord's father had attempted to poison his uncle, the [illegible] estate; and was, by an order of parl. in the [illegible] demned for treason in Mary's reign; but after- [illegible] the former sentence, he could not by law enjoy [illegible] queen's special favour, created lord La Ware, by a new patent, and as long as he lived [illegible] his creation. The queen referred the whole matter to the lords in parl.; who, finding that [illegible] ways involved in the same, and that the at- [illegible] because it was impossible for him to lose a [illegible] because he was not in possession of it when he [illegible] rank with his predecessors, betwixt the lord [illegible] the Lords Journals of this Award.

*Lords' Journal to be authenticated.*] The same day the Lord Treasurer made a motion, "That forasmuch as the Journal-Books kept [illegible] have some errors in them in the misplacing of [illegible] scribed by them. Taking unto them for their [illegible] this order might begin this present parl." On another motion of the Lord Treasurer, such [illegible] at home, by bringing in a bill, this parl. for

maintenance of Tillage and Husbandry; for

lectors, &c. of the public money; and for

passed in the Lords, 'An act for a Grant of 3 entire Subsidies and six 15ths and 10ths to

was given to her, as a compliment, 'for her maj.'s wise administration; for restoring religion to a better state; for the security of the

into a precedent, but only upon such pressing

pound, to be paid at 6 several payments.

both houses, on a Conference, are entered this session in the Journals of the Lords; no-

will fall better in our account of the proceed-

hold, as a fit man for that office; the said serjeant stood up, and urged his disabilities in too remarkable a manner to be omitted.—

be your mouth or Speaker should proceed,

proceed; for well known it is to a great

tenance of this dignity: for my father, dying, left me a younger brother, and nothing to me

took a wife, by whom I have had many children, the keeping of us all being a great impoverish-

choice is, a gracious and favourable censure

But I most humbly beseech you, recall this your sudden election; and therefore because

yet let this one thing persuade you, that my-

to speak before Phocion at Athens; how much

of our dread and dear sovereign: the terror

mightily doth the estate and name of a prince

again and again, to proceed unto a new elec-

[illegible]

thy Providence, we are called from all parts

[illegible]

the subjects of a gracious prince, and members

[illegible]

majesty, a good zeal to thy word, and a loyal

[illegible]

country and commonwealth.—O Lord, so unite

[illegible]

threefold cord not easily broken; giving

[illegible]

Mr. *Francis Bacon* stood up, and made a motion, "against Inclosures and Depopulation of

[illegible]

it, two bills, not drawn with a polished pen,

[illegible]

a shrinking and abate elsewhere: and that

[illegible]

great, yet they seem the less, because 'Quæ

[illegible]

and converted them to sheep pastures; yet

[illegible]

benefit of the commonwealth, I doubt not but

[illegible]

moth-eaten laws, in this point, a praiseworthy

[illegible]

tillage; 3rdly, subversion of houses, and de-

[illegible]

impoverishing the state of the realm. A law,

[illegible]

state. And I would be sorry to see, within

[illegible]

but the eye of wisdom is the quick-sighted eye;

[illegible]

mean, for 'panis sapor vitæ.' And therefore

[illegible]

against those viperous natures, who fulfil the proverb, 'Si non posse quod vult, velle tamen

[illegible]

counties, no doubt but they will prove laws

[illegible]

Committee to consider of the bill; which was

[illegible]

*of the Excheq.* made a motion for a Supply.

[illegible]

ing to more than a treble value of the last 3

[illegible]

Spain; and further referring the particulars of

[illegible]

this house, by mr. Secretary; moved for a se-

[illegible]

Mr. Secretary *Cecil* showed, at large, "The

[illegible]

since the last parl [illegible]

[illegible]

Spain is more reconcileable, and a greater inclination of affairs to a peace than before [illegible]

[illegible] realm. Since the last parl. it is also notorious in every man's knowledge and remembrance, [illegible] of that avenue and place of approach for Eng- [illegible] of Spain before; and that is Calais; which in [illegible] value or service it is, I know not; but in common understanding, it is a knocking at our [illegible] run on and raged more: which cannot but be a great attractive to the ambition of the council of Spain, who by former experience know of how tough a complexion this realm of Eng- [illegible]

[illegible] to scorn: so that no blood can be so frozen [illegible] venge upon so mighty a disgrace. So at the concurrence of occurrents, all since our la- [illegible]

[illegible] on and provoke him, but cannot threaten an increase of our peril in great proportion. Lastly, mr. Speaker, I will but reduce to the [illegible]

[illegible] tained a course they long wished for and were restrained from. Myself can remember both [illegible] places of this realm, how forward and affec- [illegible] Then we would say, a defensive war was [illegible] eating and consuming interest, and needs would be adventurers and assailants; 'habes [illegible] make it good, especially when we have tasted so prosperous fruit of our desires?—The 1st of [illegible] great felicity, ravished a strong and famous port in the lap and bosom of their high countries; brought them to such despair as they [illegible] fice, as a good odour and incense unto God for the great and barbarous cruelties which [illegible]

[illegible] am it was like a Tartar's or Parthian's bow, which shooteth backward, and had a most [illegible] France and Flanders; so that our neighbours and confederates have reaped the harvest of it; [illegible] we have a perfect account of all the noble and good blood that was carried forth, and of all [illegible] fore, I doubt not but every man will consent [illegible] badges: the one, of the danger of the realm by so great a proportion, since the last parlia- [illegible]

Whereupon it was agreed, "that all the privy [illegible] knights returned for the counties into this pre- [illegible] at their pleasure."—Dec. 7, a bill for a Grant of 3 Subsidies and six 15ths and 10ths, was read a first time. On the 10th it was ordered to be engrossed, and, on the 14th it passed [illegible] which the Journalist makes this Observation: [illegible] in the next, a still larger supply was given." [illegible] ingly urgent; or that the former grants served [illegible] of the first grant expressly says, "That these large and unusual grants, made to a most excellent princess, on a most pressing and extra- [illegible] hereafter, be drawn into a precedent."

[illegible] in this session are relative to matters of small [illegible]

And, on the 9th of Feb. the Queen came to the House of Lords in the afternoon, as was the usual custom in those days; when, sending [illegible] effect, as follows:

*The Speaker's Speech at the dissolution of the Parl.*] "First, he shewed the happiness of a com- [illegible] jects are held in due obedience; which her [illegible]

[illegible] y statutes, and the making of new, never before enacted: and that [illegible]

[illegible] provision of treasure; therefore, said he. [illegible]

[illegible] hearts; the which, I hope and think, was granted without a thought of a *no*. Sure I am, without the word of a *no*. The 2nd [illegible]

[illegible] a committee.—The 3rd shewed a thankfulness [illegible]

*The Ld. Keeper's Answer.*] To which speech [illegible]

[illegible] leave that to her disposition. And as her [illegible]

[illegible] thanks: but, in your petition, I must also join [illegible]

[illegible] which had passed both houses, the said great [illegible]

[illegible] at this time was as follows:

[illegible] gion, to reduce us to a tyrannical servitude. [illegible]

[illegible] reason we deal with a provident enemy; and confident, because God hath ever, and he [illegible]

[illegible] taketh for our instruction: and 2ndly, the suc- [illegible]

[illegible] a confused govt. and state she brought them [illegible]

[illegible] But, 'de mortuis nil nisi bonum.' I would be [illegible]

[illegible] her girdle the price of her blood; I mean jew- [illegible]

[illegible] have done that unto her, which I hope God [illegible]

[illegible] for treasure is the sinews of war, &c."

[illegible] nalist tells us, that the commons presented [illegible] and mighty Sovereign; upon your maj.'s com- [illegible] most humble servant, being a member of the [illegible] weak to undergo so great a burthen, I do most [illegible] to make a new election of another, more able [illegible] subjects. And I beseech your most excellent [illegible] hath pleased your maj. to license me to speak before you. For, I know, and must acknowledge, that under God, even through your maj.'s great bounty and favour, I am what I [illegible] being ready, to perform even the least of your maj.'s commandments. I therefore do most [illegible] service of so great a prince, and flourishing [illegible] be effected, to command your dutiful and [illegible] burgesses of the Lower House, to proceed to a new election."

*The Ld. Keeper's Answer.*] [illegible] answered thus: "Mr. Speaker; her maj. with [illegible] grave excuse for your discharge, commanded [illegible] speech of defence for yourself, is a great motive, and a reason very persuasive, both to ratify and approve the choice of the loving [illegible] as also to commend their wise and discreet [illegible] both for sufficiency well able, and for your [illegible]

*The Speaker's [illegible]*] [illegible] in this manner; "Most sacred and most puissant Queen; seeing it hath pleased you to command my service, by consenting to the [illegible] And so made a vehement invective against [illegible] ambition, the rebels of Ireland, which, he said, were like a snake cut in pieces, which did crawl and creep to join themselves together [illegible] part, to beseech her maj. for freedom of [illegible] delivery or understanding, and not to the [illegible]

*The Ld. Keeper's Answer.*] The Ld. Keeper, [illegible] answered as follows: "Mr. Speaker, her maj. [illegible] proceeding from a sound invention, and the other from a settled judgment and experience. [illegible] greatness of our puissant and grand enemy [illegible] charges of the wars of Ireland; which if they [illegible] of our gracious sovereign in defending us; but also, the greatness of the charge continually bestowed by her maj. even out of her own [illegible] her maj. to continual trouble and toilsome [illegible] Wherefore mr. Speaker, it behoveth us to [illegible]

[illegible] Southampton [illegible] Digitisation Unit

[illegible]

pectation."

[illegible]

hazard of being rejected. Another way was [illegible] Keeper acquainted the house, that he had re- [illegible] or 18th of this month at the farthest; that [illegible] mained in matters concerning the public, and [illegible] been proceeded upon; but the main bill for a Supply was yet to come, which, no doubt, the queen's message expedited; for it was deli- [illegible] 12th the commons sent up a bill for a grant of [illegible] which, in a few days more, had the assent of [illegible]

*The Commons resent their being shut out of* [illegible] Nor is there any notice taken, in the said [illegible] their own house and chuse a Speaker. Much [illegible] however; and, being assembled, mr. Richard [illegible] convenient time; but seemed to impute the [illegible] upper house.

*Lord Keeper's Speech.*] Nov. the 3rd. Mr. *Lieft* stood up and moved, "That since many [illegible]

[illegible] certified: "For my own advice, touching the [illegible] hear me, if with your favour, I may particu- [illegible] delivered speech, touching the State of Ireland, I shall be very glad, both for my own discharge, and for your satisfaction. The king of Spain, having quit himself of France, by a base and [illegible] jects of his father's ambition, England and the [illegible] able and for the public good, I hold that neither a wise nor an honest man would im- [illegible] conduct of a valiant, expert, and hardy cap- [illegible] live and die in this service. These 4000 are [illegible] neighbour of the Low-Countries, what neighbour hath Spain, to whom he shall not be troublesome.—I will shew you further what [illegible] he is continually over us. To resist the Turk's attempts, he hath sent 10,000 men; to the Low Countries 9000; in an enterprize of his [illegible] Ireland, to resist those attempts in being, and the ensuing provisions against us, let us consider the certainty of our estate in Ireland: [illegible] army, fed even out of England; with what charge it brings to the queen, what trouble to the subject, what danger it is to them there left, if the provision should fail; what hurt to [illegible] this, I assure you, it is beyond all precedent [illegible] there, is to defend the Catholic cause: I [illegible] for I may say she hath no Catholic obedient [illegible] nicate at this present by force of two bulls of this Pope's, by which the subjects are absolved [illegible] for a prince that desireth not to do any thing [illegible] eth all the neighbouring princes to gain their [illegible] prosperities. I hope I shall not see her fune-

living, bestows it to our good; and dying,

Mr. *George Moore* moved, "That whereas the lord-keeper's oration was, 'That the great-

a bill for Explanation of such Statutes as re-

read; to which only Mr. *Boise* stood up and

nants: to the bp. present, in the maintenance

place or answerable to their living. For, con-

even by the most ancient statutes and laws of this land now extant. Hurtful it is to their

means out of their spiritual function? But this

I myself am farmer to a bp. and I speak this

after 4 or 5 years, ever to fine and take a new

I can certify, that I have the copy of the bill

I having conferred together with the present

and spoke thus: "Mr Speaker, I am not of

their own children: but I, Mr. Speaker, have a bill here, which, I know, I shall no sooner

receive and approve. I liken this bill to that

dox in the fore-front of his book, 'First water,

take a stately gallery for pleasure, but neither to dine in nor sleep in; but this bill is a bill

bill a continuation of the statute of the 11th

whole being a revival of a former statute: for I take it far better to scour a stream, than to turn a stream. And the first clause is,

[illegible]

who is to certify the lord keeper, and so to [illegible]

[illegible] Speaker.”

[illegible] structed.”

[illegible] when Sir Walter Raleigh moved the house, [illegible]

member of the commons, and [illegible] that we [illegible]

[illegible] up a full Subsidy.”

[illegible] novation.”

[illegible]

Sir Walter Raleigh said, “That being a [illegible] speech.”

[illegible]

[illegible]

I do know, it were the safest way for a man's [illegible]

any precedent argument, for rare is the as- [illegible]

opinions. And I am of opinion, if we had all [illegible]

[illegible]

should be higher assessed. Others were of [illegible]

[illegible]

a Subsidy, because 'subsidium and auxilium are all one. The most voices concluded, That [illegible]

[illegible]

and confusion. And the whole realm, when [illegible]

[illegible]

was said by a member of the house, that he [illegible]

[illegible]

where you see and hear; I dwell where I hear and believe. And, this I know, that neither [illegible]

[illegible]

that spake this, in my conscience, spake it not [illegible]

[illegible]

by no means, I would have the 3 pound men [illegible]

[illegible]

try—I have read when Hannibal resolved to [illegible]

[illegible]

ladies, and women of Rome sold their ear-rings, [illegible]

[illegible]

Sir Rob. Wroth then moved, "That this new Subsidy might be drawn in a bill by itself, to which should be annexed a preamble of the great necessities, the willingness of the [illegible]

Mr. Francis Moore moved that, "That [illegible]

[illegible] this part."

[illegible] cil, members of this house, "That seeing the [illegible]

Mr. Francis Bacon, after a repetition that the 3 pound men might not be excluded, concluded, "That it was 'dulcis tractus pari jugo,' [illegible]

Sir Walter Raleigh said, "I like not that [illegible]

[illegible] alledged, but, I am sure, it argues poverty in [illegible] made, of 'dulcis tractus pari jugo,' call you this 'par jugum,' when a poor man pays as much as a rich, and peradventure his estate is [illegible] wealth? Therefore it is not 'dulcis' nor 'pari.'"

Mr. Sec. Cecil. "That for what the gen- [illegible] and omega of this parl.:' I think he spoke it [illegible] probability; for, I can assure you, her maj. [illegible]

[illegible] until some things be amended: for that, that [illegible]

[illegible] keep him out, which should be a matter of [illegible]

[illegible] out: yet I do not say, it is good he should know we do sell them. That is, I would have [illegible] be no need) but not of our poverty in selling, or of any necessity we have to sell them, which I think none will do, neither shall need to do." Then all the house cried, 'No, No;'

[illegible]

8 or 10l."

Serjeant *Heyle.* "Mr. Speaker, I marvel [illegible]

[illegible] talked. "Well," quoth serj. Heyle, "all [illegible]

[illegible] is a great disorder that this should be used; [illegible]

[illegible] ceeded, and when he had spoken a little [illegible] sat down. In his latter speech he said, "He [illegible]

[illegible] Stephen, &c." which was the occasion of their [illegible]

Mr. *Montague* said, "That there were no [illegible]

[illegible] ing a 10th fleece of wool, and a 10th sheaf of [illegible]

A bill for redressing certain inconveniencies in the statute of 21 Hen. VIII. c. 13, intituled, 'An [illegible]

[illegible] or equalized with the best."

Dr. *Crompton* wished "That pluralities of [illegible]

[illegible] ralities allowed; as also spiritual men bound [illegible]

Sir *Geo. Moore* "Thought the bill most fit [illegible] mon, a good law, and tending to a good and [illegible]

Mr. *Lock.* "I think bare silence is not an exoneration of a man's conscience: the simili- [illegible]

Dr. *James.* "That it had been said, that [illegible] tion into the church; but for that, under [illegible]

[illegible] would be a means of preaching the word; for [illegible] living be taken away, it will be a means to [illegible]

[illegible] churches; six hundred of which do but afford competent living for a minister: what then [illegible]

[illegible] is no equality; for 'Inæqualibus æqualia dare [illegible]

[illegible] divinity: this must needs enforce preachers to preach 'placentia;' which is a thing abhorred [illegible]

[illegible] 'ad minimum nationi magister, aut publicus [illegible]

Mr. *David Waterhouse.* "Because myself am an officer, I mean only to speak of the [illegible]

[illegible] his office for non-attendance; so for a benefice [illegible]

[illegible] 18 days absence: so that now, if we set this [illegible] vation in us, but a renovation of the common law. And I will end only with this caution to [illegible]

[illegible]

food."

[illegible]

Debate on [illegible] Monopolies.] Nov. 20, [illegible]

[illegible]

have the two first but not the last. I speak [illegible]

[illegible] to prevent this [illegible]

Mr. [illegible] Bacon. "I [illegible]

[illegible] prince, for my own part I ever allowed of it, [illegible]

[illegible] by himself or his deputies for a certain time [illegible]

[illegible] there is a scarcity or a small quantity, and the [illegible]

[illegible] it, otherwise disallow it. And also I know that [illegible]

[illegible] made unto her by petition, and some by 'quo [illegible]

[illegible] in this place, but a stranger in this vestment [illegible]

[illegible] a number of burgesses, or a corporation, that [illegible] I say, and I say again, that we ought not to [illegible] rogative. I wish every man therefore to be careful in this business; and humbly pray this [illegible] behalf; and protest I have delivered my conscience in saying that which I have said."

[illegible] that now which I had not intended to speak before; I mean a monopoly of salt. It is an old proverb, 'Sal sapit omnia;' fire and water are not more necessary. But for other Mo- [illegible] they are, (because Monopolies) I must confess, [illegible] know, there is a great difference in them; and [illegible]

Mr. *Lawrence Hide.* "I confess, mr. Speaker, [illegible] prince. And for the bill itself I made it, and I think I understand it: and far be it from this [illegible] dice or derogation of her maj.'s prerogative royal [illegible] above 300 years ago, I will offer to your con- [illegible] which time, one John Peach was arraigned at [illegible] the king a monopoly for sweet wines. The [illegible] a precedent worthy of observation; but I dare [illegible] And, mr. Speaker, as I think it is no derogation [illegible] all but evil; so I think, it is no derogation to [illegible] in some proportion. Yet, mr. Speaker, because two eyes may see more than one, I humbly pray, that there might be a commitment had [illegible]

Serjeant *Harris.* "For ought I see, the [illegible] of a petition; it must then begin with more humiliation: and truly, sir, the bill is good of it- [illegible]

Mr. *Montague.* "The matter is good and [illegible] by bill well enough in this matter. The grievances are great, and I would note unto you [illegible] cessful effect."

Mr. *Francis Moore.* "I know the queen's prerogative is a thing curious to be dealt withal, [illegible]

[illegible] have a law for the true and faithful currying of leather; there is a patent sets all at liberty, [illegible] prerogative? Out of the spirit of humiliation, mr. [illegible]

Mr. *Martin.* "I speak for a town that grieves and pines, for a country that groaneth [illegible] soil and the commodities of our own labour, [illegible]

Sir *George Moore.* "I make no question [illegible] polies of salt; but, if we add thereunto petre, then we had hit the grief aright; with which my country is perplexed. There be three per- [illegible] this statute with a 'non obstante,' yet the queen may grant a patent with a 'non obstante,' to cross this 'non obstante.' I think [illegible]

Mr. *Wingfield.* "I would but put the house [illegible] ter the last part.; in the end whereof, our [illegible] dressed; if not, she would give us free liberty [illegible] green under the sore, and are still without re- [illegible] so now I do it with all humility, and wish all [illegible]

Sir *Walter Raleigh.* "I am urged to speak in two respects; the one because I find myself [illegible] that privilege; and that patent being, word for [illegible] stannary, I can sufficiently inform this house [illegible] the duke's seal. Now I will tell you, that be- [illegible] week, finding themselves: but since my pa- [illegible] at what price soever, they have 4s. a week truly [illegible] it may, and have that wages. Notwithstanding, if all others may be repealed, I will give [illegible]

Mr. *Downland.* "If we proceed by way of [illegible] and the reason why I think no reformation hath been had, is, because I never heard the [illegible]

Mr. *Johnson.* "I would we were all so [illegible] heard this day; I think verily, in my soul and [illegible] mitting the bill or not, and it was carried in [illegible] of white salt.[b]

purpose, and the committees drew a speech, were a course, 'nec gratum, nec tutum.' And therefore, the best way is to have a committee

for, I doubt not, but we be all agreed of the

fore the law is 1 Hen. VII. 'That the king

cedent, I think it most fit to proceed by bill,

Mr. Secretary *Cecil.* "If there had not been

afraid in these vast powers of our mind, we

things in question; 1st, the prince's power; 2dly, the freedom of Englishmen. I am born an Englishman, and am a fellow-member of this house; I would desire to live no day, in which I should detract from either. I am servant unto the queen; and before I would speak or give consent to a case, that should debase her prerogative or abridge it, I would wish my

in that time, when the king was afraid of the subject. Though this precedent be a substance,

ture.' And for my own part, I like not these

of access I like it well, so it be first moved and the way prepared. I had rather all the

tended. I will tell you what I think of these Monopolies: I take them to be of three natures, some of a free nature and good, some

a penal law that is left to the alteration of sovereignty, I think it powerful and irrevoca-

cards, &c. And therefore I think, it were fit to have a new commitment, to consider what

I know, lest perhaps I should displease. The

Mr. *Martin.* "I think the common griev-

verence sake, I must needs name, mr. Mon-

mr. sec. Cecil shewed the committee a large

moved to have them dealt in by petition to

but zeal with discretion. I have been (though unworthy) a member of this house in 6 or 7 parliaments, yet never did I see the house in so great confusion. I believe there never was in any parl. a more tender point handled

did I never know it subject to construcbefore us and cancelled; and this was bravely

have wished in so good a cause. Why, if

conceits; but I wish every man to rest satis-

in passing of so hasty and free a subsidy; which

councils; and for our loyalty. I do assure you

assented to grant any thing which was 'malum

commandment was given a little before the

for that also was another word, which I take

imperfections; which joined with my fear,

both then heard, and since know. I was pres-

liberty agreeable to the law. There is no pre-

[All the House said Amen.] "In particular,

non to the patent. I dare assure you from [illegible] consequence and importance. I say therefore, there shall be a proclamation general through- [illegible]

[illegible] can buy it or make it, freely without danger of that patent, which shall be presently revoked. [illegible]

[illegible] liberty. Train-oil shall go the same way; oil of blubber shall march in equal rank; brushes [illegible]

[illegible] shall be. Oade, which, as I take it, is not re- [illegible]

[illegible] good disputation; yet for your satisfaction, the [illegible]

[illegible] tion; only she prayeth thus much, that when [illegible]

[illegible] Those that desire to go sprucely in their ruffs, [illegible]

[illegible] wish; for the patent for starch, which hath so [illegible]

[illegible] yarn, a matter that I am sorry there is cause [illegible]

[illegible] the patentee; a gentleman of good service [illegible]

[illegible] But I must tell you, there is no reason that all [illegible]

[illegible] steel, which one mr. Beale once had; this too [illegible]

[illegible] ther, sir Edw. Dyer, a gent. of good desert, [illegible]

[illegible] new misgovernment of the time; yet this shall [illegible]

[illegible] The patent for Glasses, which though I do least [illegible]

[illegible] and slandered; it digs into every man's house, it annoys the inhabitant, and generally troubleth the subject; for this I beseech you be contented. Yet I know, I am to blame to desire it, it being condemned by you 'in foro con- [illegible]

[illegible] sifted and tried 'in foro judicii.' Her maj. [illegible]

[illegible] I must tell you the kingdom is not so well fur- [illegible]

[illegible] though she be willing to help the grave gent. [illegible]

[illegible] counsellor of state, have done my best endeavour to salve the sore? but I fear we are not secret within ourselves. Then I must needs give you this for a future caution, That whatsoever is subject to public expectation cannot [illegible]

[illegible] dinary talk in the street. I have heard myself, [illegible]

'God prosper those that further the overthrow [illegible]

[illegible] tive touch not our Liberty!' I will not wrong [illegible]

[illegible] sembly; yet let me give you this note, That [illegible]

[illegible] vereignty were converted into popularity; we being here, are but the popular mouth, and our liberty, the liberty of the subject: and the [illegible]

[illegible] of the Speaker. But I must crave your favours [illegible]

[illegible] my life, and I have been told that I deserved to be taxed yesterday of the house. I protest [illegible]

[illegible] please her maj. by a harsh and rash proceed- [illegible]

[illegible] tion, that I said it might rather be termed a school than a council, or to that effect. But [illegible] were 'puerlles & dignos pueris.' And yet that was to a popular state. And I wish that what-

synagogue, who would always 'sepelire sena-

lies and imperfections. If any man in this

I do heartily pray, that no member of this

*Address of Thanks, &c. to the Queen upon*

said, "I must confess mr. Speaker, I moved the

point; but I never meant (and I hope this

the prerogative royal. But now seeing it hath

city, or country, free; I would be bold, in one

house. The 1st, that mr. Speaker might go

thankfulness unto her for the same: the other,

have been told her maj. and perhaps ill conceived of by her; I would therefore that

Mr. *Wingfield* said, "My heart is not able to conceive the joy which I feel, and I assure

I cannot refrain to express; there could nothing

this message. And I verily think, if ever any of her maj.'s works be meritorious before God, this is. I do agree with all my heart in the

but do utterly mislike the latter: for it is not

were a thing in my opinion inconvenient, and

subject; 2ndly, That the hon. assembly of this house would move her maj. and be earnest

Mr. Sec. *Cecil* said, "I promised to be as

in me. I do not speak because I do dislike the

public a matter of this weight. Though the idol of a monopoly be a great monster, yet

shall see him dismembered; and I protest there

queen gave order for a draught of a proclama-

went even now out of the house; then I read

Mr. *Davis* said, "Mr. Speaker, that which

think to be gospel, that is, glad tidings: and as

Sir *George Moore* said, "This eating and

tested with my heart; and the greater the grie-

Mr. *Laurence Hide.* "I think the gent.

ance of her promise. In that he wished it might be recorded in paper here or parchment, it is

Mr. *Comptroller.* "I think he that first

and exceedingly detracted from her maj.; who,

this house, hath taken such speedy course, as

a strait fast-holding prince, nor yet a waster;

bestow on me, I will not hoard it up, but re-

own properties I count yours, to be expended

“ Mr. Speaker, I would wish you and the rest

commons from me: for had I not received a

formation. Since I was queen, yet never did

I embrace with a princely care; for above all

suffer it; yea, when I heard it, I could give

honour? No. Mr. Speaker, I assure you, it
for conscience-sake, than for any glory

out condign punishment. But I perceive they

a drug make it more acceptable by giving it

before a higher judge. To whose judgme

me, have neglected or perverted what I have

grants, yet what danger would not I rather
incur for your good, than I would suffer them
still to continue? I know the title of a king is
a glorious title; but assure yourself, that the

name of a king, or royal authority of a queen,

rulers or home enemies. I speak it to give

for I, O Lord, what am I, whom practices

the house, to whom hearts recommend me,

and further counsels. And I pray you, mr.

into their countries, you bring them all
my hand.”

in those days; we cannot avoid giving a note,

[illegible]

this vice, which brings a plague, which breeds [illegible]

[illegible] grossed.

[illegible] with the bill."

Sir *Francis Hastings.* "I never, in my [illegible] but two questions; the 1st, If he would have [illegible] the first statute, or in this, an easier way for [illegible] the first, I know his scope; if the 2nd, no [illegible]

Sir *Carew Reynolds.* "The sabbath is ordained for four causes; 1st, to meditate on the [illegible] together to give thanks; 3rdly, that we might be the better enabled to follow our own affairs; [illegible] tify the same. King James IV, of Scotland, in [illegible] doubt not but great reformation will come if this bill pass: to the better effecting whereof, I humbly pray, that if there be imperfections [illegible]"

Sir *George Moore.* "For the gent. that last [illegible] his heart; howsoever, I mean not to search it, or answer him; only I turn him to Solomon, [illegible] service: I say, none, though one was made [illegible] law which takes no force; for 'executio legis [illegible] a bill in question for the service of our God, [illegible] the commandment of God, who saith, 'Thou shalt sanctify the Sabbath day, that is, every [illegible] a commitment."

Mr. *Bond.* "I wish the Sabbath sanctified [illegible] may be observed in the manner, 'non jubendo, [illegible] thoughts, 'quæ solent esse prudentiores.' Her [illegible] chusing rather 'delinquere,' I know not how to [illegible] of a wise prince, for an historian saith, 'Timor [illegible] and also touching taxation. I will only say thus much with Paphnutius in the Nicene council, 'Absit quod tam grave jugum fratribus nostris [illegible]

Mr. *Comptroller*, said, "I am sorry, after [illegible] this nature. And I would that any voice durst [illegible] tices of peace, ministers to her maj. without [illegible] tent unto her, and a scandal unto us all."

Mr. *Glascock.* "In that I am taxed to tax justices of peace, I am to [illegible]

Mr. Speaker, I will not deny that I spake, and protest it in my conscience, I spake only [illegible] basket-justices; against these I will not speak [illegible] growth at noon, and dead at night: So these statutes quick in execution, are like a wonder [illegible]

Mr. *Speaker.* "Mr. Glascock, you speak [illegible]

Mr. *Martin.* "I am rather willing to speak, in that I would willingly have an end of this matter. I think we all agree upon the sub- [illegible] diment, I know it is a grief, but I leave it as [illegible] the queen and of her govt. I wish it may be [illegible]

Sir *Robert Wroth.* "I think the office of [illegible] that exclaims against it, and I think he will [illegible] they were; otherwise honest men will be loth to serve the queen, when they shall be slandered without proof. Therefore I would be [illegible]

Mr. *Johnson.* "This bill is an excellent bill; [illegible] 'A justice of peace is a kind of living creature, [illegible] with a dozen of penal statutes.' I think it is [illegible] therefore I humbly pray he may answer it at [illegible]

Mr. *Hide.* "Every man agrees this bill [illegible] form: some have more wit, and some have [illegible] neatly, let us not in a spleen straight cry, [illegible]

your patience to hear me. The matter that I [illegible] country; two very high points for me to handle, and require a more eloquent discourse than I am able to make. I will use no circumstance, or with superfluous matter abuse the [illegible] I have been of the part 5 or 6 times, and I [illegible] are wars offensive, and I do not hear the contrary: how then comes it that such a number [illegible] extreme torture, racked, carried away, imprisoned, ransomed, fined, and some executed; [illegible] for these ten years, I am sure, the subjects of [illegible] and the next day here with us. I must needs [illegible] be suffered: for it is a great dishonour both [illegible] of the kingdom; but we suffer our ships still to [illegible] midst whereof stands a little grove full of [illegible] ported unto me by a Scottish man, that duke Albert and the Infanta should plainly publish, [illegible] My humble motion is, That it would please the [illegible] of the queen and of the kingdom."

Mr. *Peake.* "I must needs shew unto this house (upon so good an occasion offered) how [illegible] serve, is vexed and almost undone; insomuch, [illegible] subject; I think him to be the best and most

1st. That it will be a matter of charge; and

of. For the 1st, I leave it to you; for the 2nd, it is out of my element. Withal I must excuse them that have authority to remedy this; for unless you would have a continual charge

Mr. *Dannet.* "I would only move the house

Walter Raleigh, the burgesses for ports and

Mr. *Bond.* "This bill as it is now in-

with in a Law; and as it is in natural, so it is

ticular laws against particular offences induce

is the fruit of your labour to have preached

2d no less, but rather a greater imputation

ceive great difference betwixt 1 Eliz. when

from massing and superstition: now they are

warden presents some and not others: it will

Will not this be a great breach to unity and

in the statute 1 Eliz. In this statute a war-

to charity and 'crambe recocta;' I humbly

Sir *Francis Hastings.* "I shall speak upon great disadvantage; I perceive this member

cannot do a more acceptable thing to God,

I know the Jesuits and priests be out of square, and be at a jarr amongst themselves: I pray God it be not to make a breach among us,

far from religion," pointing at mr. Bond, "that [illegible] and heard the [illegible] court, and [illegible]

[illegible] **house, with his whole family, that should be a** [illegible] Ayes [illegible], Noes [illegible]. So the [illegible] passed. Then it was put to the [illegible]

[illegible] Church-Wardens [illegible] there be [illegible] parishes [illegible] 240 church-wardens [illegible]

[illegible] that, by order of the [illegible]

[illegible] It was Mr. Dale [illegible]

Sir [illegible] "What [illegible] to [illegible] sleeve, [illegible]

[illegible] and said there [illegible] **the house.**

Mr. [illegible], after silence, said, "I [illegible] Walter Raleigh, that [illegible]

Mr. Secretary Cecil: "I am sorry to see [illegible]

[illegible]

voice; and though I am sorry to say it, yet I must needs confess, lost it is, and farewel it."—And

[illegible]

*Debate on a Bill relating to Soldiers, &c.*] Dec. 16. a bill concerning Captains, Soldiers,

[illegible]

Mr. *Glascock* said, "Mr. Speaker, I have

[illegible]

I have been observed, mr. Speaker, to be an

[illegible]

that I never used any irreverent language to-

[illegible]

justice of peace; the other, the adulterating

[illegible]

And I call him uncircumcised, because he

[illegible]

The adulterating justice is he, that is a gentleman born, virtuous, discreet, and wise; yet

[illegible]

man, I hold unfit to be a justice, though I think

[illegible]

wealth. Because I hold this for a ground in-

[illegible]

thority; my reason is this, he will so bribe you,

[illegible]

saith, 'Munera excaecant oculos justorum;' and

[illegible]

by bribery. And such kind of ministers I speak of. And I call him an adulterating justice;

[illegible]

come, and how they be made. It cannot be

[illegible]

be a man both honourable, grave and wise; so

[illegible]

wronged that he ever complained. Therefore,

[illegible]

may, for he only maketh them. No, I may

[illegible]

a certificate from divers justices of the peace

[illegible]

ving subject. And I think this a position both

[illegible]

Mr. *Townshend* shewed, "That in too much

[illegible]

ters, and may be prest; no exception of any,

[illegible]

a lawyer, and therefore unfit to be a professor

[illegible]

lay of the next parl.; or else, that, as a worthy gent. (serj. Heale) the last parl. in a bill of

[illegible]

which the house laughed heartily; and the bill

[illegible]

and said, "Mr. Speaker, because I see the

[illegible]

liver my opinion, with desire of reformation: I

[illegible]

nitions; a testimony of levity for the one, and scant sound judgment for the other.—And

[illegible]

—The church and commonwealth are two [illegible] Rome and Spain; from thence all our rebel- [illegible] ness of the Jesuits, and Seminaries, is greatly [illegible] vereign queen, judge you. For my part, I am, [illegible] care of them, for themselves do brag they have [illegible] they call them) in England; besides, their retinue, poor Catholics and Neuters, and I know [illegible] cure, because we find no harm: for it is a true position, that security, without Providence, is most dangerous. I conclude only with this de- [illegible] may do faithfully; and that we may be kept [illegible]

[illegible] set in the upper house in their parl. robes, between 2 and 3 in the afternoon, the Commons [illegible] thither with John Crooke, esq. recorder of London, their Speaker, who being placed at [illegible] upper house, after he had made three reverences to her maj. sitting under a rich cloth [illegible] more than one medicine for all diseases; if he [illegible] thing to be considered, he would say, Religion. [illegible] votion; devotion breeds zeal and piety to God, [illegible] and observed in a well-governed common- [illegible] religion, had laid such a foundation upon which [illegible] a [illegible]

[illegible] wise, that there was almost no offence but was met with in a law. Notwithstanding her maj. [illegible] a prayer unto her maj. that she would accept, [illegible] unto her, with a free heart and willing spirit, 4 entire Subsidies and eight 15ths and 10ths, [illegible] and having craved pardon for his offence, if [illegible]

*The Lord Keeper's Answer.*] The *Lord Keeper* answered thus in effect. "First, as touching [illegible] for them and yourself; I will deliver her maj.'s commandment with what brevity I may, that [illegible] suaded subjects did never more dutifully; and [illegible] humble petition; and therefore, that thanks [illegible] willingly yieldeth: but she now well perceiveth, [illegible] under public pretence. 2dly, Touching the presentation of your subsidy, she specially [illegible] manner; for the 1st, she fell into commendations of the commonalty; for the 2d, the [illegible] or persuasive inducements, but freely out of [illegible] same as a loving and thankful prince; and that [illegible] she never was a greedy grasper nor strait-handed [illegible] dom and discretion, that it is much to your [illegible] peace, "That they would not deserve the epi- [illegible] reign.

### *Taxes in the Reign of Elizabeth.*

had a subsidy of two 15ths and two 10ths:

porality; besides a subsidy from the clergy of

grant of two 15ths and 10ths, and a subsidy from the temporality, besides 6s. in the pound

entire subsidy: which was (according to Stowe)

15ths from the temporality; also 6s. in the

besides which both houses joined in a benevo-

—In 1561, wheat, 8s.; rye, 8s.; malt, 5s.; oats,

rings only five for 2d.; bay salt, (never so dear)

wheat was 3l. 4s. per quarter, at London; and,

by great transportation, 2l. 13s. 4d.; a hen's egg, 1d. or, at best, three for 2d.; a pound

2l. 8s.; oatmeal, 8s. the bushel.—In 1597,

for a penny.

Newtown
Clithero

Sudbury
Eye

Boroughs - 31 Members - 62

### *Acts passed in this Queen's Reign.*

1 Eliz.—1. An act restoring to the crown

craments. 3. Of recognition of the queen's

fruits and 10ths, and rents reserved 'nomine

by certain offences be made treason. 6. For

words and rumours. 7. To revive a statute

[illegible]

[illegible] 14. For the [illegible] [illegible] 15. [illegible] or plate [illegible] [illegible] Westmor[illegible] [illegible] 17. That [illegible] of Leicester may [illegible] [illegible] 18. For the river Lee, [illegible] called Ware river. 19. For the [illegible] of caps. 20. [illegible]

[illegible] divine service into the Welsh [illegible] tuals within 5 miles of Cambridge and Oxford,

[illegible]

For redress of erroneous judgments in the [illegible] 12 shires of Wales, to [illegible] county of Hereford [illegible] statute, intituled, 'An act to redress disorders in common informers upon penal statutes,' [illegible] 11. [illegible] For [illegible] the following of hue and cry. 14. For the reviving of a former statute, for the true making [illegible] 15. [illegible] artificers using the cutting of leather. 17. [illegible] Devon and Cornwall, called plain white straights, and pinned white straights. 19. For the preservation of timber in the wilds of the [illegible] of Sussex, Surrey, and Kent, and for the amendment of highways decayed by [illegible] 20. For the preservation of the haven of Plymouth. 21. For the preservation of Orford haven. 22. For the [illegible] the city of Chichester by a new cut channel, to the subjects of the same city. [illegible] sea-banks and sea-works in the county of Norfolk. [illegible] 26. [illegible] in the county of Kent. 27. For the inning of [illegible] Marsh. 28. [illegible] free pardon. [illegible] others. 2. Concerning errors in records of [illegible] 3. [illegible] dulent assurances made in certain cases by traitors. 4. To prevent extortion in sheriffs, [illegible] 'An act to detain the queen's maj.'s subjects in their due obedience.' 7. Of one subsidy by the clergy. 8. For the grant of one intire subsidy [illegible] For the queen's maj.'s most gracious, general, and free-pardon.

[illegible]

[illegible] and King's Bench. 2. For abridging of process [illegible] the Common Law. 3. For the avoiding of privy and [illegible] war, and victual. 5. Concerning informers. 6. Against abuses in election of scholars, and presentation to benefices. 7. Against erecting and [illegible] 10. [illegible] 11. Of explanation of declaration of the statute of 'octavo regis [illegible] avoid horse-stealing. 13. For reviving and [illegible] her maj.'s reign, for repairing of Dover haven. 14. For confirmation of the subsidies of the clergy. 15. For the granting of four 15ths and 10ths, and two entire subsidies, to [illegible] the queen's most excellent maj. 16. For the queen's maj.'s most gracious, general, and free pardon.

[illegible] 1. An act to retain the queen's maj.'s subjects in their due obedience. 2. For the restraining of popish recusants to some certain places of abode. 3. For explanation of a statute made in the 34th year of king Henry VIII [illegible] the necessary relief of soldiers and mariners. [illegible] ments, late sir Francis Englefield's, knt. attainted of high treason. 6. Against converting of great houses into several tenements, [illegible] Westminster. 7. For the reviving, continuance, [illegible] 8. For the avoiding of deceit used in making and selling of twice laid cordage, and for the [illegible] within the county of Somerset, and elsewhere [illegible] 10. For the reformation of sundry abuses in cloths, called Devonshire kersies or dozens, according to a proclamation [illegible] of the queen's maj.'s reign. 11. For the bringing in of [illegible] parts beyond the seas, and the restraining [illegible] and preserving of timber within this realm. 12. For confirmation of the subsidies of the clergy. 13. For the grant of three entire subsidies and six 15ths and 10ths granted by the temporalty. 14. For the queen's maj.'s most gracious, free, and general pardon.

[illegible] 1. An act [illegible] the [illegible] house of Assumption. 2. For main-

[illegible]

maj. intituled, 'An act to make the lands, te-

[illegible]

away of women against their wills unlawfully

[illegible]

nance of navigation; repealing a statute made

[illegible]

VII. for fustians. 14. Prohibiting the bring-

[illegible]

18. For the reviving, continuance, explanation,

[illegible]

same, against a certain pretended concealed title thereunto. 23. For the repairing of the

[illegible]

ing of a bridge over the river of Wye, at Wil-

[illegible]

the two ancient statutes, the one made the

[illegible]

28th year of king Edw. III. for repressing of

[illegible]

grant of 3 entire subsidies, and six 15ths and

[illegible]

free pardon,

[illegible]

in law, in her maj.'s courts at Westminster.

[illegible]

---

[illegible]

tion; and, on the 25th of July, st. James's day,

[illegible]

nations on this happy union, a dreadful plague

[illegible]

short space, carried off, from that city and its

[illegible]

cil from calling a parl. so soon as it was usual

[illegible]

year of this reign. But, at the same time, a [illegible] Members, [illegible] Rymer's [illegible], tom. xvi. p. 561.

*The King's Proclamation for calling a Parl.*]

"Wee [illegible] generall conformity and submission to all such [illegible] of this crowne, according to the right of our succession, as it would ever nourish in us an earnest desire to shew our selves carefull in [illegible] their joyfull maner of receaving us, Wee perceave [illegible] yield more generall, more cleare, or profitable proof to their people, then by redressing abuses, wherewith they fynde their subjects justlie grieved, either in constitution or administration [illegible] ver any defectes in the former policy, or when accidents in the state of any commonwealth require [illegible] these things, which are of soe greate moment in a state, have accustomed to be considered and ordered [illegible] verned commonwealthes, by a lawfull assemblie of [illegible] commonly called the parliament, Wee were desirous [illegible] soe great a multitude into one place as that [illegible] a parl. at our citie of Westminster, as soon as Wee [illegible] without the perill aforesaid; in which, as God knowes [illegible] satisfaction of any private desier or particular [illegible] suit and resolve with our loving subjects of all [illegible] parte, may be matched with a like integrytie on theirs, and as it is the first in our reigne, [illegible] the kingdome, but also to be a president for [illegible] were [illegible] the wisdome of [illegible] vice, and where it is soe well knowne to every [illegible] councell, with others then publick myndes, [illegible] knights for the county be selected oute of the [illegible] without any partiall respects or factious com[illegible] more care is taken to compasse private endes [illegible] some laws for the realme; and because it is [illegible] and resolutions from inconsiderate or insufficient spirites, then to have a sounde or health[illegible] speak for their children or kyn, though they [illegible] what laws are fyt to bynde a commonwealth; [illegible] should be selected principallie, of whose gravity and modest conversation men are likest [illegible] and above all thinges consideryng, that one of [illegible] tion of unity in the profession of sincere reli[illegible] nyshe that there be great care taken to avoyde [illegible] their turbulent humours other waies, because their disorderly and unquiete spirites will dis[illegible] in that greatest and gravest councell. Further, Wee doe [illegible] of known good behaviour and sufficient liveli[illegible]

[illegible] retorne or certificate, that then their liberties, [illegible] upon him the place of a knight, citizen, or bur- [illegible] viledges have in tymes past consumed a great [illegible] ing of these severall abuses afore-mentioned, [illegible] and solemne meeting, such a comely propor- [illegible] jects in a suer expectation of a happie issue [illegible]

*State of the Peerage.*

The following are the Names and Titles of all [illegible] knt. lord Ellesmere, a little time before, [illegible]

[illegible]
Thomas, e. of Suffolk, [illegible]
Gilbert, e. of Shrews- [illegible]
Edward, e. of Bedford [illegible]
Anthony, visc. Montague [illegible]
[illegible] Bedley
[illegible]
Ed. Stafford, l. Stafford

Thomas, l. Scrope, of [illegible]
Edw. Sutton, l. Dudley
John Lumley, l. Lumley
[illegible]
Wm. Parker, l. Mon- [illegible]
Ralph, l. Evers
Philip, l. Wharton, of [illegible]
Tho. Cecil, l. Burghley
Charles, l. Willough- [illegible]
Oliver, l. St. John, of [illegible]
William, l. Compton
[illegible]
Graves
Edward, l. Wotton, of [illegible]
Francis, l. Russel, of [illegible]

[illegible] Grey, of [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] Danvers, of [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] Spencer, of Wormleyton
[illegible] Say and Sele
[illegible], of [illegible]
[illegible] Arundel, of Warder

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] Norris, of [illegible]
[illegible]
Edward, l. Denney, of W[illegible]
George, l. Carew, of [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] of Lincoln.

### List of the House of Commons.

The following are the Names of all the Members [illegible] 1603 [illegible]

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]

*Bedford* T.
Sir Christ. Hatton, kt.
Thomas Hawes, gent.
[illegible]
Sir F. Goodwyn, knt.
[illegible]
*Buckingham* T.
Sir Thos. Denton, kt.
[illegible]
*Wiccombe* B.
Sir J. Townshend, kt.
[illegible]
[illegible] B.
Sir Wm. Burlace, knt.
[illegible]
[illegible] B.
Sir Henry Nevile, knt.
[illegible]
*New Windsor* B.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] B.
Sir [illegible], knt.
[illegible], esq.
*Wallingford* B.
Sir Wm. Dunch, knt.
[illegible], gent.
*Abington* B.
Sir Rich. Lovelace, kt.

[illegible]
Sir W[illegible]
Sir [illegible]
*Dunhivid*, alias
*Launceston* B.
Sir Thos. Lake, knt.
[illegible], esq.
*Leskard* B.
[illegible]
Reginald Nichols, esq.
*Lestwithiel* B.
[illegible]
Sir Wm. Lower, knt.
*Truro* B.
Thos. [illegible], esq.
Henry [illegible]
*Bodmyn* B.
[illegible]
[illegible]
*Helston* B.
Sir [illegible], knt.
Robert Nanton, esq.
[illegible] B.
Sir [illegible], knt.
Thomas [illegible], gent.
[illegible] B.
John [illegible]
Anthony Turpin, gent.
*Portpigham*, alias
*W[illegible]* B.
Sir Wm. Wade, knt.
Sir Hen. Goodyer, kt.

[illegible] B.
Sir [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] B.
Sir [illegible]
Sir [illegible]
[illegible]
Sir [illegible]
Sir [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible], esq.
Rd. Carvoigh, gent.
*Bossiney* B.
Sir [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible], esq.
[illegible] B.
[illegible]
Jn. Tregenna, gent.
*F[illegible]* B.
[illegible]
Henry Peeter, gent.
*St. Germains* B.
[illegible]
[illegible]
*Michel* B.
William Carpe, esq.
[illegible]
*Newport* B.
[illegible]
Sir R. Killegrewe, kt.
[illegible] B.
[illegible]
[illegible], esq.
[illegible]
William Rolle, gent.
Sir R. Wilbraham, kt.
[illegible]
[illegible]
Edw. Musgrave, esq.
*Carlisle* C.
[illegible], esq.
[illegible]
[illegible]
Sir John Peyton, knt.
[illegible]
*Cambridge* T.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] LL.D.
[illegible]
[illegible], kt.
Sir Roger Astone, kt.
*Chester* C.
[illegible], esq.
[illegible], esq.
[illegible]
Sir John Harpur, knt.
William [illegible], esq.
*Derby* T.
John [illegible], gent.
[illegible], gent.
[illegible]
Sir John Ackland, kt.
Edward Seymor, esq.

*E[illegible]* C.
George [illegible], esq.
[illegible]
[illegible] B.
[illegible]
W[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
J[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
George Peard, gent.
*Plimpton* B.
Sir W[illegible]
W[illegible]
[illegible] B.
Sir G. [illegible]
[illegible]
*Dartmouth, Clifton,*
*H[illegible]* B.
[illegible]
Thomas Gurney, gent.
*Borealston* B.
H[illegible], esq.
Sir [illegible]
DORSETSHIRE.
Sir Thos. Frenke, knt.
[illegible]
*Poole* T.
[illegible]
Thos. Roberts, merch.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] B.
Sir Francis Russel, kt.
George Jefferye, esq.
[illegible] B.
[illegible]
Sir J. Hannam, knt.
*Melcombe-Regis* B.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible] B.
Sir Robert Miller, kt.
[illegible]
*Shaftsbury* B.
[illegible], esq.
John [illegible]
[illegible] B.
Sir [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Sir [illegible], kt.
Sir F. Barrington, kt.
*Colchester* B.
Robert Barker, esq.
Edward [illegible]
*M[illegible]* B.
Sir Robert Rich, knt.
Sir John [illegible]
*Harwich* B.
John [illegible], esq.
Thomas [illegible]
[illegible]
Sir Tho. Berkeley, knt.
Jn. [illegible], esq.

---

* The manuscript is in Latin and bears this title: "Nomina Militum Comitatuum, Civium [illegible] Prolocutor."

[illegible]

HUNTINGDONSHIRE

[illegible]

*Huntingdon T.*

[illegible]

Sir Hen. Helmes, knt.

[illegible]

Sir J. Scudamore, knt.

[illegible]

A. Pembridge, esq.
John Hoskins, esq.

*Lempster B.*

[illegible]

KENT.

[illegible]

Sir J. Lewson, knt.

*Canterbury C.*

[illegible]

*Rochester C.*

[illegible]

Sir T. Walsingham, kt.

*Maidstone B.*

Sir Fran. Fane, knt.

[illegible]

*Lincoln C.*

Sir T. Grantham, knt.
Sir E. Tyrwhite, knt.

[illegible]

*Great Grimsby B.*

Sir G. St. Poole, knt.
Sir Wm. Wraye, knt.

*Stanford B.*

[illegible]

Sir Edw. Cecil, knt.

[illegible]

Sir T. Beaumont, knt.
Sir Basil Brooke, knt.

[illegible]

Sir T. Howard, knt.

[illegible]

*Preston B.*

[illegible]

*Liverpool B.*

[illegible]

Sir J. Poultney, knt.

[illegible]

Sir J. Dormer, knt.

[illegible]

Sir W. Fleetwood, knt.
Sir R. Wroth, knt.

*Westminster C.*

[illegible]

*London C.*

[illegible]

Sir H. Montague, knt.
Rich. Fuller, esq.

[illegible]

Sir Thomas Somerset,

[illegible]

Sir John Herbert, knt

*Monmouth T.*

Sir R. Johnson, knt.

[illegible]

*Peterborough C.*

[illegible]

*Brackley B.*

[illegible]

*Higham Ferrars B.*

[illegible]

*Nottingham T.*

[illegible]

Sir N. Bacon, knt.

[illegible]

Sir W. Twysenden, kt.

[illegible]

*Castle-Rising B.*

Sir T. Mountjoy, knt.

[illegible]

Sir G. Selbye, knt.

[illegible]

*Morpeth B.*

Sir C. Perkins, knt.

[illegible]

*Berwick T.*

[illegible]

C. Perkinson, esq.

[illegible]

*Orford C.*

[illegible]

*Woodstock B.*

[illegible]

*Southwark B.*

[illegible]

Wm. Mathewe, gent.

*Bletchingleigh B.*

[illegible]

Sir Edw. Howard, knt.

[illegible]

Sir Edw. Frank, knt.

[illegible]

*Litchfield C.*

[illegible]

*Stafford B.*

Geo. Cradock, esq.

[illegible]

*Tamworth B.*

[illegible]

*Brid.*

[illegible]

SOUTHAMPTONSHIRE

[illegible]

*Portsmouth T.*

[illegible]

Sir W. Kingswell, kt.

[illegible]

Sir William Fortescue,

Sir Edwin Sandys, knt.

[illegible]

Tho. Brookes, gent.

*[illegible] B.*
Sir Tho. [illegible], knt.
Tho. [illegible], gent.
SUFFOLK.
Sir John Higham, kt.
Sir Rob. Drury, kt.
*Ipswich T.*
Sir H. Glenham, kt.
Sir Francis Bacon, kt.
*Dunwich B.*
Sir Tho. Smith, knt.
Peter [illegible], esq.
*Orford B.*
Sir M. Stanhope, kt.
Sir W. Cornwallis, kt.
*[illegible] B.*
Sir W. Woodhouse, kt.
Tho. [illegible], esq.
*[illegible] B.*
Sir [illegible], kt.
Tho. [illegible], gent.
*Eye B.*
Sir H. Buckingham, kt.
Sir John Kaye, knt.
SOMERSET.
Sir Fran. Hastings, kt.
Sir Edw. Phellips, kt.
*Bristol C.*
Jn. [illegible], merch.
Tho. James, merch.
*Bath C.*
Wm. Sherstone, alder.
Christ. Stone, esq.
*Welles C.*
Edw. Forcett, esq.
Jacob [illegible], esq.
*Taunton B.*
Edw. Hexte, esq.
John Bond, gent.
*Bridgewater B.*
N. Hasselmere, gent.
John [illegible], esq.
*Minehead B.*
Ambrose Purvill, gent.
Sir M. Berkeley, knt.
SUSSEX.
Sir Cha. Howard, knt.
Henry [illegible], esq.
*Chichester C.*
[illegible], esq.
Sir Jo. [illegible], knt.
*Horsham B.*
Sir John Dodridge, kt.
Sir Mich. Hixe, knt.
*Midhurst B.*
[illegible], esq.
Sir R. Weston, knt.
*Lewes B.*
Henry Nevile, esq.
[illegible], [illegible] at law.
*Shoreham B.*
Sir [illegible], kt.
Sir Hugh Beeston, kt.
*Steyning B.*
Sir Tho. Shirley, knt.
Sir Tho. [illegible], knt.

*[illegible] B.*
Sir H. Crompton, kt.
Sir Jn. Swinerton, kt.
*Arundel B.*
Tho. Preston, esq.
J[illegible]
WESTMORLAND.
Sir T. Strickland, kt.
Sir Rd. Musgrave, kt.
*Appleby B.*
Sir John Morris, kt.
Sir Wm. Bowyer, kt.
[illegible]
Sir Fr[illegible], kt.
Sir W. Vaughan, kt.
*New Sarum C.*
Giles [illegible], esq.
Ro. [illegible], gent.
*Wilton B.*
Sir Tho. Edmonds, kt.
Thomas M[illegible], esq.
*Downton B.*
Sir C. Raleigh, knt.
Wm. Stockman, gent.
*Hindon B.*
Sir Edw. Ludlowe, kt.
Tho. [illegible], esq.
*Heytesbury B.*
Sir Wm. Eyer, knt.
Walter [illegible], gent.
*Westbury.*
Sir J[illegible], knt.
Matthew [illegible], esq.
*Calne B.*
Sir Edw. Carey, knt.
John [illegible]
*Devizes B.*
Sir H. Bainton, knt.
Robert Drue, gent.
*Chippenham B.*
Jn. Hungerford, esq.
John [illegible], gent.
*Malmesbury B.*
Sir [illegible]
Sir Tho. Dallyson, kt.
*Cricklade B.*
Sir J. Hungerford, kt.
Sir Hen. Pool, knt.
*Great-Bedwyn B.*
John Rodney, esq.
Anth. Hungerford, esq.
*Ludgershal B.*
James [illegible], esq.
Hen. Ludlowe, gent.
*Old Sarum B.*
William [illegible], esq.
Edw. Leache, esq.
*Wotton-Basset B.*
Henry [illegible], esq.
Anth. [illegible], esq.
*Marlborough.*
Lawrence [illegible], esq.
Rich. Digge, esq.
WORCESTERSHIRE.
Sir Hen. Bromley, kt.
Samuel Sandys, esq.

*Worcester C.*
John Cowther, gent.
Rowland [illegible], esq.
*Droitwich B.*
[illegible], esq.
John Brace, esq.
*Evesham B.*
Sir Tho. Biggs, knt.
Edw. [illegible], esq.
*Bewdley B.*
Richard Young, esq.
WARWICKSHIRE.
Sir Edw. Grevile, knt.
Sir Rich. Verney, knt.
*Coventry C.*
Henry [illegible], esq.
Sir Jn. Harrington, kt.
*Warwick B.*
Jn. [illegible], gent.
Wm. Spicer, gent.
YORKSHIRE.
Sir Jn. Savile of Howley, kt.
Sir Rd. Gargrave, knt.
*York C.*
Robert Askwith, alderman.
Christ. Brooke, esq.
*Kingston upon Hull T.*
John [illegible], merch.
Joseph Field, merch.
*Knaresburgh B.*
Sir Hen. Slingsby, kt.
Sir William Slingsby, knt.
*Scarbrough B.*
Francis [illegible], esq.
Sir Thomas Posthumus Hobby, knt.
*Rippon B.*
Sir John Mallory, knt.
Sir John Bennet, knt.
*Richmond B.*
Talbot Bowes, esq.
Rich. Percivall, esq.
*Heden B.*
Sir Chr. Hildyard, knt.
*Burrowbrigg B.*
Sir Hen. Jenkins, knt.
Sir Tho. Vavasor, knt.
*Thursk B.*
Sir Edw. Swift, knt.
T. Whittingham, esq.
*Aldburgh B.*
Sir Edw. Sheffield, kt.
Sir Hen. Savile, knt.
*Beverley T.*
M[illegible], esq.
Wm. Gee, esq.

BARONS OF THE PORTS.
*Hastings.*
Sir Edw. Hales, knt.
James [illegible], gent.
*[illegible]*
Adam White, gent.
Thomas [illegible], gent.

*Rye.*
John Young, gent.
H[illegible], esq.
*Romney.*
Sir R. [illegible], kt.
James P[illegible], esq.
*Hieth.*
Christ. Talderby, esq.
Sir N. Knatchbull, kt.
*Sandwich.*
Sir Geo. Fane, knt.
John Griffith, esq.
*Dover.*
Sir Tho. W[illegible], knt.
George [illegible], gent.

WALES.

ANGLESEY.
Sir Rich. Bulkley, kt.
*Beaumaris B.*
Wm. Jones, esq.
BRECON.
Sir Rob. [illegible], kt.
*Brecon T.*
Sir Hen. Williams, kt.
CARDIGAN.
John Lewis, esq.
*Cardigan T.*
Wm. Bradshaw, esq.
CARMARTHEN.
Sir Rob. Maunsel, kt.
*Carmarthen T.*
Sir Walter Rice, kt.
CARNARVON.
Sir Wm. Maurice, kt.
*Carnarvon T.*
Clem. Edmondes, esq.
DENBIGH.
Peter Matton, esq.
*Denbigh T.*
Hugh [illegible], esq.
FLINT.
Roger Puleston, esq.
*Flint T.*
Roger B[illegible], esq.
GLAMORGAN.
Sir Tho. Maunsel, kt.
*Cardiff T.*
Mathew Davies, gent.
MERIONETH.
Sir Edw. Herbert, kt.
MONTGOMERY.
Sir Wm. Herbert, knt.
*Montgomery T.*
Edward [illegible], gent.
PEMBROKE.
Alan Stepneth, esq.
*Pembroke T.*
Rich. [illegible], esq.
*Haverford-West T.*
Sir John [illegible], knt.
RADNOR.
James Price, esq.
*Radnor T.*
Sir Rob. Harley, kt.

[illegible]

[illegible] as civil wars are more cruel [illegible] and that in a double form: first, by my descent [illegible] tled and united in him, so it is now reunited [illegible] houses is nothing comparable to the union of [illegible] And here I must crave your patience for a lit- [illegible] union which is made in my blood, being a mat- [illegible] united. And first, if we were to look no higher [illegible] not the double thereof, forty thousand, a double the stronger army? If a baron enricheth [illegible] motes; and that at first, kingdoms being di- [illegible] the possession) a signory apart, many of these little kingdoms are now in process of [illegible] is it not now the stronger by their union? And [illegible] a greater strength thereto? Which, though it was a great principality, was nothing com- [illegible] shall we stick upon any natural appearance, [illegible] of manners? Yea, hath he not made us all in [illegible]

[illegible] were borderers themselves on the late borders, cannot distinguish, nor know, or dis- [illegible] mountain nor other strength of nature, but [illegible] in a little world with itself, being intrenched and fortified round about with a natural, and [illegible] version from their conquests, for defending [illegible] abroad: 'What God hath conjoined then, let [illegible] all the whole island is my lawful wife; I am the head, and it is my body; I am the shepherd, and it is my flock: I hope, there- [illegible] think that I, that am a christian king under the gospel, should be a polygamist, and husband to two wives; that I being the head, should have a divided and monstrous body; or that being the shepherd of so fair a flock [illegible] nions, is less glad of this joyful union than I am; so may the frivolous objection of any that [illegible] easily answered; which can be none, except [illegible] live in a well-governed commonwealth, and [illegible] privileges of any of the kingdoms; I pray you, [illegible] another, till they were all united into one. And [illegible]

[illegible] fore Sussex, Essex, or other shires, which were [illegible] ther conquered by the sword? For even as lit- [illegible] ocean: so by the conjunction of divers little kingdoms into one, are all these private differences and questions swallowed up. And [illegible] doms, conquered by the spear of Bellona; now much greater reason have we to expect a happy [illegible] and most imperfect half of my life; and you [illegible] from the other. But in this matter I have far [illegible] great; yet seeing that in all good things a great [illegible] or long continuance: so hath it pleased Al- [illegible] present) for continuance and propagation of that undoubted right which is in my person; under whom I doubt not but it will please [illegible] staff of his blessing, make them durable; for [illegible] saith) doth Paul plant and Apollos water, if [illegible] of the ecclesiastical estate, and likewise by di- [illegible]

[illegible] of my heart in that matter. For I shall never [illegible] ing, although I found but one religion, and that which by myself is professed, publicly al- [illegible] I another sort of religion, besides a private [illegible] pists: the 3rd, which I call a sect rather than a religion, is the Puritans and Novelists; who do not so far differ from us in points of reli- [illegible] parity; being ever discontented with the pres- [illegible] But as for my course towards them, I remit it [illegible] stranger to you in blood, no more am I a [illegible] of God's truth with the milk of my nurse; yet do I here protest unto you, that I would never for such a conceit of constancy, or other pre- [illegible] all reason, and to the rule of my conscience. But I was never violent nor unreasonable in my profession: I acknowledge the Roman church [illegible] were when they crucified Christ: and as I am [illegible] profession within this kingdom have a proof [illegible]

that profession, I must divide them into two [illegible]

laics, certainly I ever thought them far more [illegible]

doubtful, and implicit kind of faith in the la- [illegible]

profess. And again, I must subdivide the same [illegible]

drunken-in liquor, upon a certain shamefaced- [illegible]

being young men, through evil education, have [illegible]

and that sort of people, I would be sorry to [illegible]

God, and the true spirit. But the other rank [illegible]

tion of novelty, or discontentment in their private humours, have changed their coats, only [illegible]

in their religion giveth a ground to me the [illegible]

But for the part of the clerics, I must directly [illegible]

sufferable to remain in this kingdom. Their [illegible]

head of all Christians, but also to have an im- [illegible]

nual practice, is the assassinates and murders of kings; thinking it no sin, but rather a mat- [illegible]

ster, their head. And in this point I have no [illegible]

tion of all things. For if they would leave, [illegible]

express word of God; so will I ever yield all reverence to antiquity in the points of eccles- [illegible]

persecutor) as thereupon, to think it lawful for [illegible]

strength in this kingdom; whereby, if not in [illegible]

as I am a friend to their persons, if they be [illegible]

conservation of their bodies and lives; so will I never cease, as far I can, to tread down their errors and wrong opinions. For I could [illegible]

whole isle, as well the part I am come from, as the part I remain in, in betraying their liberties, and reducing them to the for- [illegible]

fore I came amongst them: and, thirdly, [illegible]

which I should leave again in slavery, having [illegible]

And therefore, would I wish all good subjects that are deceived with that corruption; first, [illegible]

disconformable in religion from us, they can- [illegible]

half service, and I to want the best half of, [illegible] out instruction, is but a tyranny;' so ought

careful, vigilant, and diligent than you have

pains, nor extreme peril of their persons to divert (the devil is so busy a bishop), ye should

St. Paul, 'be careful to exhort and to instruct

yourselves up again with a new diligence in

either do, or leave undone, yet shall, with God's grace, ever press to perform all the days

making of laws at certain times, which is only at such times as this in parliament, or in the

As for the making of them, I will thus far faithfully promise unto you, that I will ever prefer

mine, thinking ever the wealth and weal of the commonwealth to be my greatest weal and wordly felicity: a point wherein a lawful king doth directly differ from a tyrant. But at this time, I am only thus far to forwarn you in that point, that you beware to seek the making of

because, 'in corruptissima republica plurimae

more profitable in a commonwealth, than to

bring in confusion, for lack of leisure wisely to deliberate before you conclude: for the

would a large time be given, but to execution a greater promptness was required. As for

ing such a number of judges, and all sorts of

cution of the same: and therefore must I now

both you and I be answerable to God, for the

or pity the misery of the meaner; ye must be

ings, that like a just balance ye may neither

courage, and sincerity: that you may discern

both in upright sincerity. And, as for my part,

God, and of this honourable audience, I never

good laws. And as I wish you that are judges

so I shall never be weary, with God's grace, to

tion; I do confess that when I have done and performed all that in this speech I have promised, 'inutilis servus sum' inutile, because

of scripture is understood, that in doing all that service which we can to God, it is but

ner, when I have done all that I can for you, I do nothing but that which I am bound to do,

trary: for I do acknowledge, that the special

a rightful king and an usurping tyrant is in

and contentment: and that I am a servant it

not the body for the head; so must a righteous [illegible] state. For even as in matter of faults, 'Quod [illegible] can justly claim thanks as proper to him for the same. And therefore I must here make a little apology for myself, in that I could not [illegible] that looked for some advancement or reward [illegible] vancement to honour, preferment to place of [illegible] of land or profit. If I had bestowed honour [illegible] because it cannot contain all. And if I had [illegible] sparing, but I may, without vaunting, affirm, [illegible] king of England did in so short a space: no, I rather crave your pardon that I have been so bountiful: for if the means of the crown be wasted, I behoved then to have recourse to [illegible] alive. For as it is true, that as I have already said, it was a whole body which did deserve [illegible] wards me. Not that I am any way in doubt, [illegible] they would have uttered the like good effects, (so general and so great were the love and [illegible] sons, I could not, without unthankfulness, but [illegible] I just occasion to advance some in honour, [illegible] for which I thought them fit, without my help. [illegible] handed; whereof the one was reasonable and honourable: but the other, I will not be [illegible] mine own infirmity. That which was just [illegible] fulness to the whole, for refreshing of particu- [illegible] do I not doubt, but experience in time coming [illegible] crete in craving; and me not to be so easily [illegible] points, for the which I called this parl.: my conclusion shall only now be to excuse myself, in case you have not found such eloquence in [illegible] looked for at my hands. I might, if I list, [illegible] continual business and distraction, that I could never have leisure to think upon what I was to speak, before I came to the place where I was to speak: and I might also alledge, that [illegible] an assembly, might likewise breed some impediment. But leaving these excuses, I will [illegible] a king, in my opinion, to use no other elo- [illegible] plainness I mean, that his speeches should [illegible] Pagan gods. And by sincerity, I understand [illegible] be in a king's whole speeches and actions: that as far as a king is in honour erected [illegible] my words.'

The King's Speech being ended, the Lord Chancellor [illegible] presented to the Commons, [illegible] and make choice of a Speaker, and present [illegible] accordingly, on the second day, [illegible]

[illegible]

stantial than formerly; therefore to take notice [illegible]

[illegible] sir John Fortescue, which must find a place in [illegible]

[illegible] admired, sovereign: As the supreme and all [illegible]

[illegible] crown, a sceptre, and a sword; commanding [illegible]

[illegible] do, and Nestor like, long may, sit; not as a [illegible] inheritor, by the sceptre; not as a step-father, by match or alliance, but as a true tender [illegible]

[illegible] expect unto us a paternal protection: the ark [illegible]

[illegible] and high court of parl.; by whose power [illegible] gated; whose justice therein is such, and so [illegible] stituted, reformed, or abrogated, but by the [illegible]

[illegible] commons proceedings: but in your highness, [illegible] affirmatively to confirm; but not to institute. [illegible]

[illegible] corporations; the other, the higher house, [illegible]

[illegible] nomination. Give me leave therefore, most [illegible] in their misled opinions, by the misguide of [illegible] judgment; and rather therein to blemish my [illegible]

[illegible] from the virtues of all and every whereof I am [illegible]

[illegible] the muses; as I remain touched with the error [illegible] dergo the weight of so heavy a burthen, under which I do already groan, and shall both faint [illegible] or by your clemency commiserate. I therefore [illegible]

[illegible] of mine own imperfections; which if they could [illegible]

[illegible] state and life, as the true subject of your gracious pleasure; desiring not longer to live, than [illegible] and pledge."—[Here he stopp'd; but being told [illegible]

[illegible] mind may frame a well-joined answer, then may I say, too much, more than too justly, [illegible] condemn my want of duty: for, although in [illegible] none in my will to do you service; for therein [illegible] yet trembling; but, in my desire to discharge the full measure of my duty; but, Pisander [illegible] imperfections, I fail in that, which I should [illegible] this kingdom; which yield more fruits of reasoning [illegible] terms of eloquence: and therefore to [illegible] renowned sovereign, in few and unfiled words, [illegible] of a head, of a body, of a life, and of a soul [illegible] of a body, of a life, and of a soul, and as, by [illegible] ness's common and positive laws; this politic [illegible]

[illegible] venteth afterclaps of danger; so the wisdom [illegible] ticular virtues and properties: as, to the head [illegible] rightly governed; 3dly, magnanimity, to repel the fury, both of foes and fortunes; 4thly, jus- [illegible] despair: to the body, first, devotion, to pray [illegible] defence of his royal dignity; 4thly, purses pre- [illegible] how us your subjects to command; 2ndly, [illegible] reign to obey; 3rdly, to instruct your highness's [illegible] ledge how to adjudge; 4thly, to teach your mi- [illegible] to discipline; for ignorance of laws brings error [illegible] serve the authority of laws from contempt; 4thly, [illegible] solute virtue; 5thly, to protect the oppressed [illegible] escape; for lenity and gentleness to such as [illegible] earth, and all earthly things, 'summum bonum.' [illegible]

[illegible]

liege and living king: for such was the virtue

[illegible]

zealous, without wavering; in her counsels wise, without levity; in her determinings deliberate, without rashness; in her resolutions

[illegible]

absolute, without cruelty; in her mercy tem-

[illegible]

den admission; 1st, trying their deserts by the

[illegible]

their own corrupt-given rewards; misliking

[illegible]

sires; but ever condemning it as an evil of

[illegible]

men in worthy places; foreknowing, they that

[illegible]

make them a ladder of any mischief: 2ndly, as a thing to herself dishonourable, unless with

[illegible]

deserts in the balance of honour: 3rdly, to her

[illegible]

place of justice, a bribing and corrupt magis-

[illegible]

fence; whose example therein, being dead, if

[illegible]

hearts true love; obeyed her with conscience, not by constraint; feared for her, never feared

[illegible]

faith; and lived to die for her in all constant loyalty. The same love, the same obe-

[illegible]

she did, and your maj. now doth, wear and

[illegible]

such a Solomon, and so heroic a root; whereof your zeal in religion, your unblemished

[illegible]

temperance in disposition, your justice in your

[illegible]

resolute, without insolency; by subjection, to

[illegible]

and obedient, without rebellion; and by law

[illegible]

lic hostility; and yet, 'inter pares,' impatient

[illegible]

rejoice and triumph in it; for that virtue is

[illegible]

nowned, a govt. never more constantly settled, a senate never more justly wise, judges never more judicially just, magistrates never more [illegible] free election than a descending right; wherein [illegible] approved their loyalty to your approved crown [illegible] precedent time did forbear the public declara- [illegible] confidently I believe, and boldly dare affirm, [illegible] your glory, and by calling her to his heavenly [illegible] pleased to protect us in our religion, to favour us in our loyalties, to cherish us in our obedi- [illegible] solute; to enemies and traitors powerful and [illegible] ears with 'multa,' since to satisfy your gracious expectation with 'multum' is denied me, [illegible] Therefore, since I retain not the virtue of the [illegible]

[illegible] your service; who desireth no longer to [illegible] shall be his pawn and pledge: who here, upon the knees of my duty, in all humility, do pre- [illegible] to mine own particular, the other two to the [illegible] vice, I have, do, or shall, through my imper- [illegible] performed, or err in that which I ought not to [illegible] same, than out of your justice therein to cen- [illegible] blemish or detraction concerning my course of [illegible] misconceived in causes of this nature.—Humbly, that as occasion shall move, I may, by your [illegible] place shall require. Fourthly, ****." What [illegible]

*Affront offered to a Member.*] The first [illegible] were returned to their own house, was, to examine into a complaint, then made, by sir [illegible] the door shut upon him; and one Bryan Tashe, a yeoman of the guard, violently repulsed sir Herbert, saying, 'Goodman Burgess you come [illegible] pardon for his fault, and receiving a reprimand [illegible] for it.

[illegible] tituled 'An act for a most joyful and just re- [illegible] said bill, and their willingness in expediting it, [illegible]

[illegible] March 26. On a motion of the lord Cecil, a [illegible] ing the public State of the Nation; and on [illegible] desired might be added another article concerning the matter of Wards: answer was returned back, by the Lords, "That they liked well the motion for a Conference, touching the last mentioned matter. But, with all, because [illegible] cern the public state; of which it was, like- [illegible] vice; and, in regard, the said matters were [illegible] they intended to do theirs. A large com- [illegible] consisting of 9 earls, 1 visc. 6 bps. and 13 [illegible] lord chief justices, 4 judges, mr. serjeant [illegible] of their house; and this is all that the Jour- [illegible] silent; for it was, indeed, a business of importance to the Liberties and Privileges of that [illegible] matter, we shall give a paragraph from this author's History of England, (v. 2, p. 168) [illegible] day. "Immediately after the opening of the parl. the Commons examining, according to [illegible] Francis Goodwin, and sir John Fortescue, for [illegible] Lords sent a message to the Commons, that there might be a conference about Goodwin's [illegible] traordinary a message, answered, They did [illegible] in writing, and delivered them at the Council- [illegible] commanded them to have a conference with [illegible] gaging in a quarrel with the king, they thought [illegible] Certainly the king had engaged in a very nice [illegible] to forfeit his right rather than occasion a quar- [illegible] to extremities; but the king found from hence, [illegible] meant to be master of the elections." Thus [illegible]

[illegible] sir John Fortescue, relative to a Return for the County of Buckingham.] The first motion [illegible] of summons directed to the sheriff of Bucks, was elected the first knt. for that shire: but [illegible] gatus: and because sir John Fortescue, upon a 2d writ, was elected, and entered in that [illegible] be examined, and sir Fra. Goodwin received [illegible] way to the motion; and for a more deliberate and judicial proceeding in a case of Privilege [illegible] to appear at the bar at 8 o'clock the next [illegible] tions for the county of Bucks, made and re- [illegible] of his own cause, *ore tenus*; wherein he was

until the house had determined what to do. In this mean time the whole Case was at large opened, and argued 'pro et contra,' by sundry

affirmative, 'That he was lawfully elected and

March 27. Sir Fra. Bacon, in reporting a

ference may continue between the 2 houses,

fore they desire, for a more clear proceeding and removing of all stumbling-blocks, that the former committees may, in a 2d conference

should from the house be a suitor to his maj.

the house: that now the judgment of sir Fra.

them. A precedent, an. 27 Eliz. cited; where

to the message from the Lords; and mr. sec.

from the house, "That they did conceive it

torney-gen. dr. Carew, dr. Hone, and mr Tyndall, delivered from the Lords, "That

the return of the sheriff of Bucks; and ac-

done; and it was resolved, "That his maj.

house, with mr. Speaker, should meet at 6 the

[illegible]

March 28. Mr. Speaker, with a great num- [illegible]

ing, with a purpose to treat and resolve what should be delivered to his maj. (being appointed [illegible]

not then thought full enough for a matter of [illegible]

Speaker's attendance on the king, a committee [illegible]

with these committees, were this day, at 8 in the morning, appointed to attend his maj. and to [illegible]

served as a member of this house, in the seve- [illegible]

35 Eliz. 8 precedents vouched. 39 Hen. VI. [illegible]

seem to be improperly inserted here, and are, [illegible]

tion of Smyth's case, 1 Eliz. and in the mar- [illegible]

supposed utlawry, 31 Eliz. against sir Francis [illegible]

tice it was the same man; and therefore [illegible]

his maj. answered, "He was loth he should [illegible]

him, but only to a mistaking of the law. For [illegible]

purpose to impeach their privilege; but since [illegible]

dismission of any member out of the house. [illegible]

Election. That in his conscience the king hath been much misinformed; and that he had [illegible] might be removed or lessened in their number. [illegible]

[illegible] time; that by this course the free election of [illegible] strued any contempt in us, but merely a main-[illegible] cestors have left us, and is just and fit for us to transfer to our posterity."

Another, for a law to be made, "That ne-[illegible] this matter: and therefore let our proceeding [illegible] faction; that is (as he conceived) according to [illegible] selves, and then to confer with the judges, not as parliament-men, but as counsellors; not as though they were to reverse our errors, but [illegible]

A 3rd, "That we ought not to contest with the king; that it is fit to have a conference: [illegible] gain; for the matters of the conference will be two, satisfaction of the king, and putting in [illegible] may be said; we are not to dispute with one that is governor of 30 legions. 'Confitendum [illegible] plainly and freely with the lords, and let them [illegible] prerogative; so is it fit that we maintain our privileges. This is a Court of Record, therefore [illegible] honour and dignity of it. If a burgess be cho-[illegible] for which he will serve, and a warrant shall be [illegible] house, to the clerk of the crown to send forth a writ for a new election for the other place left; which is a direct proof that it is a Court of Power and of Record. We have a clerk and a register; all matters that pass here are entered [illegible] leges. It is to be wished, that we had a law [illegible] law what our privileges are; and that no man [illegible] not our liberty, since we judge after the court [illegible] utlawry; therefore it had been fit we should [illegible] the material questions that will fall out in the debate of it. 1. Whether this court hath power [illegible] here? 2. Whether men utlawed may be of the house? 3. Whether a man pardoned, having not sued forth a writ of scire facias, may be [illegible] the sheriff?"

[illegible] majesty had conferred with justice; yet me-[illegible] us. We should taint ourselves with 3 great [illegible] judgment: all these have passed us. No court [illegible] term here. Every act that passeth this house [illegible] down? Shall he be a member to-day and shall [illegible] is cruelty. No part torn, but it may bleed to the ruin of the whole.—Let sir F. Goodwin [illegible] gestions. This may be called a 'quo warranto' to seize our liberties. There hath been 3 main objections.

[illegible] could shew no such writ before. Our hands [illegible] we prevented. It opens a gap to thrust us all into the petty-bag. A chancellor may call a [illegible] of sending a new writ.

[illegible] Lord Chief [illegible] the law we had nothing to do to examine re-[illegible] private customs or privileges: but we have a [illegible] judges informed the king of the law, but not of [illegible]

livered the writ to sir George Coppin: and at this time (it being about 4 in the afternoon) and before they parted, sir John Fortescue de-

Mr. Speaker remembereth the matter of con-

made; being before uncertainly and uper-

the house to entertain the latter question; and,

passage, it was urged for a rule, That a Ques-

again; but must stand as a judgment of the

"To the King's most excellent Majesty. The

"Most gracious, our dear and dread so-

than cause to pardon us: we do in all humble-

same: protesting, by the bond of our alle-

swer to your most excellent maj.; for which,

4 things, to impeach our proceedings, in re-

to us: For that all returns of writs were ex-

Our humble Answer is, That, until the 7th of

which year a statute was made, That thence-

and place where the parl. shall be holden, should have this clause, viz. "Et Electionem

of the writ be somewhat altered, yet the power

cery, to be kept there; which is warranted by

service is in parl. therefore the return examin-

made and returned, a second was, before the

lor, and thereupon another election and return made; and the Commons being attended

and rejected the second. So 23 Eliz. a burgess was returned dead, and a new chosen, the said 23d year, a burgess chosen for Hull

shire returned himself elected; the Commons

warrant to the Chancery for a new writ to

chosen burgess for two boroughs; the Com-

for a writ to chuse a new for the other borough: of which kind of precedents there are

your maj. All which together, viz. use, rea-

suggestions or sheriffs returns, send writs for

mination in parl.: for so, when fit men were

to their liking; a thing dangerous in precedents

excellent maj. our sovereign, who had di-

which in cases of * * * and motions, though not of bills (requiring 3 readings), hath been

conceived; protesting, That it was no way

highness's officers in that behalf: but if we

until after our sentence passed; and then we

though we were but part of a body, as to make

mitted for that cause; yet we received so

outlawed ought to be 5 times proclaimed to

proclaimed, or that the coroners gave judgment of outlawry against him, but a clerk

made entries, interlined with a new hand, that

[illegible]

Exigent for an outlawry; and being then paid their money, desisted there; by which we find,

[illegible]

adjudged outlawed, being a thing usual in

[illegible]

times, was never lawfully returned, nor certified by certiorari; without which we take it

[illegible]

places, serving as a council of gravity, in al-

[illegible]

sure him to be rejected as an outlaw: the par-

[illegible]

gents awarded; *** the other 7 years past to the Hustings in London: no entry made of

[illegible]

or endorsed; the party plaintiff satisfied, the

[illegible]

the 5 proclamations and coroner's judgment; and now a return made of that old exigent,

[illegible]

*Object.* 4. That we proceeded to examine the

[illegible]

Our humble Answer is, That the precedents

[illegible]

to allow the return; as, if a knight or burgess be untruly returned dead, or lunatic, yet when

[illegible]

manifest before the return. By which discreet

[illegible]

elected them.—Thus, in all humility, we have

[illegible]

ranted in our consciences, imitating prece-

[illegible]

slaps before 4 in the afternoon; who immedi-

[illegible]

sengers to the Lords, to excuse their long tarrying. And about 5 o'clock, the committee

[illegible]

aforesaid, at the Council Chamber, according

[illegible]

penned by the committee, touching sir Fran-

[illegible]

passed at the time of the said delivery: first,

[illegible]

distinction; that they offered it with testimony of their own speed and care in the business,

[illegible]

but only the bill of recognition; that they had

[illegible]

[illegible] Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible]

done at that time.

[illegible]

make any report; and 'tantum permissum,

[illegible]

so had the Chancery; and that the court that [illegible]

sheriffs return, there grew a difference. That [illegible]

during the time. Whatsoever the sheriff in- [illegible]

to be bound by a sheriff's return. That our [illegible]

there did arise a schism in the church between a pope and an anti-pope, there could be no [illegible]

Upon this Report a motion was made, [illegible] and therein to be inserted, That it was done [illegible] lose more at a parl. than we gain at a battle. [illegible]

dissention, and to preserve our liberties; and [illegible] mission; and that we had drawn upon us a [illegible] clamation of the house, was, That it was a [illegible] sir John Fortescue and sir Fra. Goodwin shall both be secluded, and a warrant for a new [illegible] solved, That a writ should issue for a new choice, and a warrant directed accordingly. A motion made, That thanks should be pre- [illegible]

cially interested, it were fit he should give tes- [illegible] his letter to mr. Speaker; which, before this [illegible] house, was read in these words: "Sir, I am [illegible]

and weighty causes, which by this time, in all likelihood, had been in very good furtherance: [illegible]

county of Buckingham; I am so far from [illegible] trarywise, I humbly desire his maj.'s direction [illegible] therance thereunto, I take my leave, and rest [illegible]

April 12. A motion was made, That mr. [illegible] afternoon, the same day. Thereupon a com- [illegible] the king, with a general warrant to all others [illegible]

of his maj.'s answer, viz. "That he related [illegible] leased to receive a representation of the [illegible] maj. answered, "That upon this 2d access, [illegible] cast upon him, for he carried as great a respect to our privileges as ever any prince did: he [illegible] that our privileges was his strength: that he [illegible]

[illegible] thing from him, for our answer was a grave, [illegible]

[illegible] be a king of such subjects, than to be a king [illegible]

[illegible] monwealth; and the last, of any thing that [illegible] our hands. 1. The union. 2. Sundry public [illegible]

[illegible] it is. That the better to bring it to pass, we [illegible] first with all care proceed in such laws as [illegible]

[illegible] therefore that in this 1st parl. we would not take [illegible]

Then the warrant for a new Election of a knight for Bucks, was read and allowed in this form: "Whereas the right hon. sir John [illegible] this present parl.: upon deliberate consultation, and for some special causes moving the [illegible]

*Act against Witchcraft.*] April 2. A bill was brought into that house, entitled, "An [illegible] into a law; and by it was enacted, "That if [illegible]

*A Conference proposed, relating to an* [illegible]

April 14, the Lord Chancellor made a motion, That as in the king's speech, both in the [illegible] greatest importance to the state; and espe-[illegible] both houses, and a large committee of Lords [illegible] was done at this first Conference is not entered in the Journals; but we are told, that on the 16th, a message was sent to the Lords, and [illegible] of the commons, "That the committee of that [illegible] house, judging this matter to be a cause of [illegible] deliberation. They therefore thought it [illegible] containing a Draught, or Form, devised by the [illegible] great work. The paper was read to the house, but not offered as a bill, only as a short draught or memorial, on which a bill might be [illegible]

---

* Notwithstanding sir Fra. Goodwin was thus removed out of the house; he was soon [illegible]

[illegible]
following particulars, which were agreed to by
[illegible]
matter, except that a bill was brought in, and passed into a law, for appointing English commissioners to treat with a select number of
[illegible]
ended in little or nothing, is too prolix and te-
[illegible]
and a Copy of the king's Original Letter to this house, on this affair, in its own peculiar
[illegible]
of it at that time.

[illegible]

"This Proposition which now I make concerning the Union, so far as now I craved to
[illegible]
a particular explanation of a part of my speech
[illegible]
world, was (as I am informed) so well accepted
[illegible]
to make this particular proposition in ** own
[illegible]
in two points: 1. That by a bill, or act, framed
[illegible]
ple's hearts, that, as it is already set down in
[illegible]
men. The 2nd point is, That although it be
[illegible]
body, under [one] head: and therefore, that
[illegible]
decided, and put to a quiet end; but all
[illegible]
it would never have proceeded of me, to have
[illegible]
toms here, as to have straightly thereby pre-
[illegible]
that, for the supply of his memory, I would
[illegible]
house, I was contented to indict it to him as it
[illegible]
opinions I will ever reverence and honour in
[illegible]
utterly scraped out, as may best agree with
[illegible]

thaire. 'Sed meliora spero.' I hoape, that and St. David's; the lords Cecil, Zouch, Mon- [illegible] citizens and merchants. These, or any 8 of the said Lords, and 20 of the said Commons, [illegible] king, and common good of both kingdoms.

[illegible] found the matter unpracticable; for the Scotch, [illegible]

*A Conference appointed for Reformation of Ecclesiastical Matters.*] April 18th, Mr. Sec- [illegible] to the whole house his maj.'s pleasure that a conference should be had, with certain of the lords the bishops, concerning a Reformation [illegible] for a better correspondence to be held betwixt [illegible] mons were willing to have such a conference with some select number of the bps.; but so [illegible] that they approved of a conference, and had [illegible] conciliate the conference, sent a message to de- [illegible] the Commons 20; which were to meet, on the [illegible]

[illegible] house. The Articles were as follow.—

*Articles to be debated on.*] "1. *Inprimis.* [illegible] an higher degree in schools; having testimony [illegible] any, to have or retain two, or more benefices, [illegible] yearly to maintain a preacher in their absence; [illegible] be allotted to make his residency in one of his [illegible] church a certain and constant minister may be [illegible] is under 20*l.* by the year, that, for the better maintenance of the vicar, or curate (being a [illegible] Also it is humbly desired, that the Lords would confer with us, touching a Petition to be pre- [illegible]

*A Petition for Dispensing in Matters indif-* [illegible] were produced: as, also, the form of a Petition for a Dispensation, with some Ministers, so [illegible]

What was done or said at this Conference [illegible]

Respite of Homage; and a repetition thereof [illegible]

[illegible] to the Lords by a message delivered by sir Edw. [illegible] concerning a certain Book, which of late, as they [illegible]

[illegible] ference with the Lords, to consider what course [illegible] tender and sensible of it as the Commons; and [illegible] sisted by those of the Commons. However, [illegible] of it.* This put the House to a stand, what [illegible] to attend the House, however, 'in die ad diem,' [illegible]

[illegible] mons, in a Conference, pushed the thing warmly against the bp; and the Lords, after some deli[illegible] that he was sorry for the same. We are told [illegible]

*The Bp. of Bristol, the Author, asks pardon for it.*] "1. I confess I have erred in presuming to deliver a private sentence, in a mat[illegible] would not do it. 4. I protest it was done out [illegible] either of the houses of parl. or any particular affection to the intended Union, which I doubt [illegible]

[illegible] ter satisfaction, they desired that a copy of the [illegible] the Journals of that House; and that the [illegible]

[illegible] was sent up by the Commons, a bill for a Sub[illegible] a 2nd time in the Lords on the 18th, when the [illegible] nimously agreed to, and a message sent to the [illegible] Commons agreed to a Conference; on which [illegible] might be by them considered of, for a relief [illegible] considerable sum, remaining to the k[illegible]

---

* [illegible] Westminster [illegible]

[illegible]

said, "That this was not a time to treat about [illegible]

[illegible] ley: and, if it was denied, to press to his [illegible]

[illegible] against the motion; on which it was resolved [illegible]

[illegible] came to a resolution, the warden was called [illegible]

[illegible] talked with the warden, his prisoner; and [illegible] his error and obstinacy; and that if the house [illegible]

[illegible] to a resolution, to send another warrant of Habeas Corpus to release their member; and [illegible]

[illegible] out of his own gracious judgment."

[illegible] highly deserving of a place in this work. It [illegible]

[illegible] us, but, tender in humble sort this farther su- [illegible]

---

* See Petyt's Jus Parl. ch. 10, p. 227. See [illegible]

knowledge, that he hath given us a king of

presence to hear, and so in other things to find

misinformations, though apparent in them-

some proceedings so much blamed in this parl.;

been constrained, as well in duty to your

been suppressed or perverted; wherein that

were worth for the security wherein we now

your goodness towards us. We contrarywise

not at that time, nor of many a day before,

most royal and renowned person, and a long-

hence, dread sovereign, a general hope was raised in the minds of all your people, that

---

* Queen Eliz. died on that day, the 24th of March, 1603.

your maj. hath been in three things: 1st. That

That we are no Court of Record, nor yet a

"Against which assertions (most gracious

sembled in parl, and in the name of the whole

kingdom; and desire that this our protestation

the king for our lands by petition; which form,

House is a Court of Record, and so ever esteemed. 5thly. That there is not the highest

it, without which the freedom of election were

"From these misinformed positions (most

trary to your maj.'s so gracious desire; by

so extream contempt, as a gaoler durst so obstinately withstand the decrees of our house;

perhaps and folly; but seeing the same God

---

* Queen Elizabeth.

[illegible] of rights, liberties, and privileges, both [illegible] had its just original; [illegible]

for the [illegible]

the whole is [illegible]

[illegible] seeing it reacheth the whole house in general, [illegible]

subjects of a king so gracious; and forasmuch [illegible]

maj.; if it might seem so fit to your maj.'s [illegible]

"And now (most gracious sovereign) these [illegible]

much for the matter, as for the manner of our proceedings) we trust will be plain; and to [illegible]

the Gentleman Usher. 2. Of the Yeomen of [illegible]

"* Assert (as it is here properly to be under- [illegible]

king's licence)" [illegible]

and further we proceeded to [illegible] extraordinary great grace and favour [illegible]

[illegible] reproachful and injurious to the great [illegible]

service; in sum, the sole persons of the higher [illegible]

your treasures are upheld and supplied; thirdly, [illegible]

advertise such a delinquent of the unseemliness [illegible]

ment thereof so freely to remit it.

[illegible]

---

* Brian Tashe, the yeoman of the guard, [illegible] repulsed several members of the lower house, [illegible] civil and contemptible terms, "Goodmen [illegible]

"For the Matter of sir F. Goodwin (see p. 993

might be at all times in a lord chancellor's

quaint your highness with our reasons therein,

ing out in your maj.'s name are returned also

cery and our court: an usual controversy be-

your maj. as to yield to a middle course pro-

words: 'It hath not been used before time, nor

ing of ourselves, and yielding in our apparent

p. 1023) our proceedings were long; our de-

tied, as that we held it not fit, in so unreasonable a time, and against so mean a subject,

both the houses in the highest degree: under-

murmurs, distraction, and sedition, we could

"Touching the causes appertaining to State

also are large, and each hath liberty to speak.

[illegible] humour, in a petition exhibited to our house, [illegible] rected to the counties from whence we came, [illegible] which both atheism, sects, and all ill life have [illegible] any fit way that may be offered; neither desire [illegible] served. Our desire hath also been, to return [illegible] state, even as into the temporal. And lastly, [illegible]

"There remains the Matters of Oppression [illegible]

[illegible] of law, and was particular; but a general, [illegible] upon a demand of a perpetual yearly revenue, [illegible] right, which is unsaleable: neither yet durst [illegible] is by law and just; how ready we should be to take that occasion and colour to supply [illegible] your gallery at Whitehall, advised us, for unjust burthens to proceed against them by bill: [illegible] able grant and direction, we prepared a pe- [illegible] treat with your highness touching a perpetual [illegible] out of the lands of your subjects, for Ward- [illegible]

[illegible] compound for, was matter of mere profit, and not of any honour at all or princely dignity: for it [illegible] should bring any renown or reputation to a [illegible] loving subjects, valiant soldiers, an hon. nobility, wise counsellors, a learned and religious clergy, and a contented and a happy people, are the true honour of a king: and contrary- [illegible]

"This Prerogative then appearing to be a [illegible] and ill-suited marriages; and lastly, with how [illegible] countries; how small a commodity now was raised to the crown in respect of that, [illegible] We fell also from hence unto a 3d degree of [illegible] lasting end; and in regard moreover of that [illegible] for ever eased of this burthen; your maj. out of your most noble and gracious disposition, [illegible] the offer of a perpetual and certain revenue, [illegible] nefit that any of your progenitors ever reaped [illegible] crave access unto your maj. But that ever it [illegible] a slavery under your maj. more than under our former princes, hath come from an untrue [illegible] been, that this burthen was just; that the re- [illegible]

"And thus, most gracious sovereign, with [illegible] maj. have we truly disclosed our secret intents, and delivered our outward actions in all [illegible] and from henceforward shall remain in great [illegible] ful expectation.

"There remaineth, dread sovereign, yet one part of our duty at this present, which faithful- [illegible] sing. Our care is, and must be, to confirm the [illegible] commons, most firmly to your maj. Herein [illegible] people. This love, this joy, let it flourish in their hearts for ever. Let no suspicion have access to their fearful thoughts, that their pri- [illegible] or that those, which with dutiful respects to [illegible] And if your maj. shall vouchsafe, at your best [illegible] cious consideration of our petition for the ease [illegible] relief by your maj.; then may you be assured to be possessed of their hearts; and, if of their [illegible] terity, serve your maj. and your most royal [illegible]

A bill had been brought into the House of Lords this session, intitled, 'an Act for the [illegible]

[illegible]

often dealt with and informed by divers mem-

[illegible] form of all kings of England, to have a Subsidy [illegible] first parl.; that as it was honourable for us to [illegible] ple's love toward us) so would it be a thing nothing prejudicial nor hurtful for them to yield unto; and that there was enow in that [illegible]

[illegible] only in this point were we careful, that, in [illegible] it should receive no public refusal; which could [illegible]

[illegible] the people, and yet our commodity never a hair [illegible] and therefore it is our express will, that ye [illegible]

[illegible] assuring them, in the word of a king, that we will be so far from taking it unkindly, their not offering it unto us at this first session of this our [illegible] taste of us offered unto them at this time, for the reasons above-mentioned; assuring ourself, that the said house will, in their own time, be [illegible] ourselves to their discreet considerations, in the due time.—*James R.*"

After the reading of this Letter, a motion [illegible] recorded in their house, for an everlasting me- [illegible] of shires may take a copy of it and publish it, [illegible]

[illegible] a law; as did also the former, for a Grant of [illegible]

[illegible] *sion.*] July 7th, the king came to the House [illegible] Commons and their Speaker were sent for; [illegible]

[illegible] Image of Man's present Estate, Pattern of the Things to come, and the true Work-mistress of Experience, the Mother of Knowledge; for therein, as in a crystal, there is not only presented unto our views the virtues, but the [illegible]

[illegible] ess of public commodity: so is ill govt the [illegible]

"The Laws, whereby the ark of this go- [illegible]

[illegible] Usages, practised and allowed with time's ap- [illegible]

[illegible] Plato and Aristotle, framing their laws ac- [illegible]

[illegible] tained these *** years, not inferior, but in [illegible]

[illegible] may [illegible] execute, yet to [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] to see, to hear, [illegible] evil. Romulus therefore refused to undergo

unto himself a hundred senators. Trajanus called his senate his father; for as the father

ought to know the law, the liberties, the cus-

state is governed; they ought not only to

or subverted; they ought also to know, what

risdiction of a king, and what is the due right and liberty of subjects; for they are the mean,

servitude, the king and his people. A coun-

transported with appetites; mortified by years, not inveigled by youth; grave in his behaviour, not light in his condition; justly wise in his

watchful tower, to the law a graceful orna-

to the people a beloved oracle; but if he be

his disposition; then becometh he to the king a regardless and watchless tower, to the law a disgraceful blemish, to the government a blind dissolute guide, and to the people a contemned

the magistrate; for in vain is the laws direc-

executed for laws, command, and advice re-

enacted, given, or advised, but when they are executed; not when they are enacted, but when they are observed; and therefore the

mild and gentle disposition, 'Sed respublica

that will dread the correction of so sheathed or rusty a weapon? 2ndly, laws are ordained as rules or lines of men's lives; but if the ma-

so leaden a rule? 3rdly, laws are established

to be just in his execution; and 3rdly, not to

the dumb magistrate: and nothing is more

the captain's labour, victory; so the well dis-

perform, then becometh he a good pilot, a provident physician, a victorious captain, and a just well-deserving magistrate; but if he be ignorant, remiss, timorous, unjust, or corrupt; then is he to the life of the law a deathful

commonwealth a devouring wolf.—A people,

than sons of men; rather monsters of nature,

condition, than professors of religion: from

king, nay most of all of you, as a most abso-

officers extorted, and your discerning consideration of our feared dangers; wherein although

ice (the one never being a true counsellor, nor the other a good subject) yet hath the same [illegible] ought, that in right, honour, or prerogative, [illegible] good: for your glory is, and must be, our ho- [illegible] rity, your content our joy; otherwise were we [illegible] king over many kingdoms; so do we, with true [illegible] subjects of such a king, than in the freedom of [illegible] all opposers and opposition: and as God let [illegible] royal and loyal a conjunction between a head [illegible] cluding to present you with a Subsidy of crowns and coin, being but a blossom of the [illegible] you; 3. Of as many zealous spirits to pray for you; 4. Of as equal proportioned hands to fight for you; 5. And with the treasure of the [illegible] to a king so absolute, wise, magnanimous, and gracious; but out of our endless loves, duties, [illegible] give end.*

There is no speech of the king, or the lord chancellor, entered, for this time, in either Journal; and no more is said in the Lords' than [illegible] mand, prorogued this parl. to the 7th of Feb. next ensuing.

[illegible] laboured hard to bring it about; yet, by the [illegible] claimed King of Great Britain, France, and [illegible] Journals of the Commons, Nov. 5, we find this entry. "This last night the Upper House [illegible] under the house, with a purpose to blow up [illegible]

The Lords' Journals tell us, "That on the [illegible] parl. to be kept in his custody till a farther [illegible] the 5th inst. the first day of this session, holden [illegible] he came there, at this time, (contrary to the custom of any of his predecessors, at the be- [illegible] rogation) on purpose to receive the Writing, which had just then been delivered in; that [illegible] terwards his maj. made an ample declaration [illegible]

---

* This Speech is taken from a book entitled, 'A Discourse of the Manner of the Dis- [illegible]

[illegible] against men may be expected; and likewise [illegible] men may escape in such a present fury. And [illegible] have less pity than men, so it is a greater horror, and more unnatural for men to deal with [illegible] unmerciful of all, is the destruction by insensi- [illegible] were enticed to invent this tragedy. For if [illegible] persons, or discontented upon occasion of any disgrace done unto them; this might have seemed to have been but a work of revenge. [illegible] any of them; so cannot they alledge so much as a pretended cause of grief: and the wretch himself, in hands, doth confess, that there [illegible] the specials of them, my sworn servant in an [illegible] their king, his posterity, their country and all; [illegible] that is in hand, cannot be moved to discover [illegible] intent. 3rdly, The discovery hereof is not a [illegible] ever did hold suspicion to be the sickness of a tyrant; so was I so far upon the other extremity, as I rather contemned all advertisements, [illegible] secretary, wherein a general, obscure adver- [illegible] this time; I did upon the instant interpret and [illegible] them, (and in another sort than I am sure any divine, or lawyer in any university would have [illegible] of blowing us up all by powder; and there- [illegible] prehended: whereas if I had apprehended or interpreted it to any other sort of danger, no worldly provision or prevention could have made us escape our utter destruction! and in that case, there was a wonderful providence [illegible] ready in his pocket; wherewith, as he con- [illegible] and in that most honourable and fittest place for a king to be in, for doing the turns most proper to his office: and the more have we all [illegible] merciful delivery. And specially I for my part, [illegible] semble you in this honourable place; and here [illegible] for our general delivery; that I may justly now say of mine enemies and yours, as David [illegible] when he was accused by the tribunes of the [illegible] them from that matter, calling them to re- [illegible] a victory against Hannibal; and therefore it [illegible] with one applause: how much more cause have [illegible] spoken more like a divine, than would seem [illegible] thank God for a divine work of his mercy; [illegible] so hellish a practice, so well, as in language [illegible] damnable an intention? And therefore may I justly end this purpose, as I did begin it with [illegible] his works. It resteth now, that I should in- [illegible] the occasion of this horrible and strange accident. As for your part, that are my faithful and loving subjects of all degrees, I know that [illegible] errant, and your tongues so ready to [illegible]

[illegible] Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] entry into this kingdom; it could not become [illegible] mer sort thereof is now, with prophesie, ceased [illegible] that belong to the office of a king: albeit, that [illegible] others; yet in a king may be thought a rea- [illegible] though I be but in a manner a new king here, [illegible] that as I can bear witness to the foresaid com- [illegible] of the one country, as of the other; so can they [illegible] else but the king's great council; which the [illegible] and well-deservers; wherein these four things are to be considered: 1st, whereof this court is composed: 2ndly, what matters are proper for it: 3rdly, to what end it is ordained. And [illegible] divided into two parts; the upper and lower [illegible] vitam of this court. The other house [illegible] and burgesses for the towns. But because the [illegible] fore a certain number is selected and chosen [illegible] than necessity shall require: for as * in corrup- [illegible] people: nor yet is it on the other side, a con- [illegible] private neighbours, or to the hurt of the whole [illegible] tion that the private meaning of them tendeth [illegible] for a general impost upon them for filling the [illegible] ple: it is no place then for particular men to [illegible] country being well settled in their hearts, will [illegible] ful king to give him your best advices, in the [illegible] that nature, which I have already told, whereon [illegible]

---

[illegible]

[illegible]

their escape; and we are told by Wilson, the

[illegible]

a prisoner there for many years after.

[illegible]

pected;' as for the inferior sort, they were

[illegible]

were fit to be ordained for these offenders.

[illegible]

England in that matter; and being informed

[illegible]

therein."

The Commons were no less anxious: for on

[illegible]

house in mind, "That Richard II. built a

[illegible]

sat when offenders were judged. This tended

[illegible]

Wingfield moved for "a form of punishment equal to the greatness of the fact. He said,

[illegible]

moved, That a short act might be made for

[illegible]

motions; and said, "That the common law

[illegible]

court might add a confirmation of it."—Mr

[illegible]

raighment; and that, afterwards, a law might

[illegible]

being respited."—The Speaker said, "That

[illegible]

them given at the bar; for the rest a contr-

[illegible]

tioning for stay of judgment; and observed, "That there was no precedent when one com-

[illegible]

might be stayed after trial? It was resolved in

[illegible]

Commons framed, read, and passed a bill, and

[illegible]

entitled, 'An Act for appointing a Thanksgiv-

[illegible]

the happy preservation of his maj. and the

[illegible]

priests; had framed and passed the said bill,

[illegible]

ever going into a committee upon it. And

[illegible]

in that committee: and then presented a short

[illegible]

informed that the Commons were upon a bill

[illegible]

to bring it up to their house, they sent a message to them, to desire a Conference. This

[illegible]

ings of the committees of both houses were

[illegible]

two new acts, one entitled 'An Act for

[illegible]

and the other called, 'An Act to prevent and

[illegible]

*[illegible] to Parliament.*] [illegible]

[illegible]

a Supply to be granted this session; by a mes-

at last a bill was passed by the Commons, and

by the Lords, it was committed; but, on a

thus a long debate ensued; and the question

mer having been rejected? It was carried in the negative; and a memorandum was entered, by order of the Lords, as a general direc-

10th. The business of a Supply was moved

their Journals, may be thus connected. "He

at great charge to sustain it: for, though we have 'pacem externam et internam;' yet the

present maj. into this kingdom, with that of the

the household; with the largesses or rewards,

obliged to lighten this burden; as Moses said,

whatever the offer was from his subjects, the king would say 'sufficit' to it; and therefore

ately appointed to draw up a bill for a Supply."

Berkley; and, afterwards by sir Edw. Mon-

greatness of the givers; and that it should be

were to be paid at Easter, and a Subsidy at

maj.'s reign. That of a weak, feeble and

Christendom. That we owed 'animam deo, corpus regi,' who was 'non Subsidium tantum

him 'fidus depositorius.' Sir Wm. Strowd,

for a Supply; the last urged that some consi-

Sir Fra. Hastings said, "That they ought to

not hereditary; and we ought to provide before-

rum,' to give; and that 'qui cito dat, bis dat.'"

for granting a Supply, by several other members; in which there were only two, sir Geo.

in all things: 'Malus miles qui imperatorem

Upon the whole a grand Committee was re-

for a Supply, and whether it should be for

---

and prince's entrance, 10,000l.; the late queen's funeral, 20,000l.; coronation of the king and

40,000l.; expences in Ireland for four years,

“ [illegible] in speech, and votes amongst them: ‘in eodem sensu;’ alike thanks for both. A di- [illegible] that house or in the commonwealth; and, lastly, desired that a committee might be [illegible]

[illegible] en, in all respects, as is fit; yet, to remedy [illegible] that a bill might be framed for that purpose.” [illegible] drawing a bill concerning the said matter of [illegible]

[illegible] in *Ecclesiastical Matters.*] April 5. A mes- [illegible] “ That although the Lords were willing to [illegible] to such a conference, or not? The farther re- [illegible]

April 12. An Answer was sent to the Com- [illegible] “ That the Lords, having [illegible]

[illegible] from the Lower House, “ That they gave [illegible]

[illegible] message from the king to this effect; “ That his maj. having received knowledge of the [illegible] of which he would ever retain a grateful remembrance.”

[illegible] Multiplicity of Commissions, by the bishops of [illegible] was not intended or expected that they should be informed whether the Lords would join [illegible]

We are left in the dark as to what was done or [illegible] bated the four points; and the whole result [illegible]

[illegible]

done about them.

[illegible]

er, clerk, and serjeant. A thing, adds the [illegible]

[illegible]

money might be paid in such time that his [illegible]

[illegible] made in two years.

[illegible]

preceeding session of parl. : his highness began [illegible]

[illegible]

and said : " That all propositions, made in parl. [illegible]

both sorts ; both concerning Matters of Govern- [illegible]

[illegible]

to be reformed ; or, if they were lawful, and [illegible]

venient for a parl. to present any, but ap- [illegible]

were more popular, than profitable, either for [illegible]

[illegible]

curse.—But for his part, he wondered, how [illegible]

so far as the Borders ; and professed, that all [illegible]

he said, he would make one admonition unto [illegible]

ter into a double consideration of themselves ; one, as they were subjects in general ; another, [illegible]

and therefore admonished them, to beware, [illegible]

tum ; and if that any such plebeian tribunes [illegible]

error, they would correct them for it ; and judge [illegible]

judged ; and that the whole body receive not a wound by one ill member thereof.—But the [illegible]

he had so small a time of respiration, to consider it ; but that gold did not need to be gilded, [illegible]

of his Desire : 3rdly, the principal Heads of his Desire : and lastly, the End and Effect, the [illegible]

jection is, that there is no necessity of an Union [illegible]

break into flaws and into cracks, as a contract [illegible]

was necessary, not 'ad esse,' but 'ad bene [illegible]

continuance of this union and amity [illegible]

[illegible] of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] strument might be sent down to the other house: which was done accordingly; with this [illegible]

[illegible] till 3 days after; when they acquainted their [illegible]

[illegible] Commons sent a message [illegible] the Lords, "Com- [illegible] held this matter to be very great and weighty, so much, as to concern the conjunction of two [illegible]

[illegible] this effect; "That their Lord- [illegible]

[illegible] but a Mess [illegible] expectatio [illegible]

[illegible] their lordships [illegible] n capacity [illegible]

[illegible] answer; importing, "That they [illegible]

[illegible] Points, as they conceived, in the Instrument [illegible] that they [illegible] of the wh [illegible]

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] Wherein, if their lordships are to treat again [illegible] mean to proceed, they will be ready to attend [illegible]

[illegible] Lords returned an Answer, by messengers of their own, to this import. "That as the strength of both houses consisted in nothing [illegible] awered whereof there may arise the least mis- [illegible] were only a *lapsus linguæ* in his own person, to which any man may be subject: but, being spoken at that time, and by a person qualified [illegible] for if it had been otherwise taken than the [illegible] used that freedom which is necessary from one [illegible] the Commons Court of Parliament; because their whole house, without the Lords, can make no court of judicature. But now, as to [illegible] meant to use so much freedom; their lord- [illegible] of Naturalisation. Therefore, they thought [illegible] amongst themselves any particular delibera- [illegible]

[illegible] in point of law or [illegible] some measure conferred of the whole; accord- [illegible] matter; lest, when the Lords expect a confer- [illegible] which conference there can be no difficulty, [illegible] conclusion; and no man's thought can be so [illegible] on the 7th of March, at 2 in the afternoon."

[illegible] in the Journals of March 5th but thus, viz. [illegible] earls and 8 barons. These sub-committees, [illegible] sooner to a conclusion than the larger; but [illegible] way towards an agreement. On the contrary, [illegible] strangely prevaricated with them; for that [illegible] and purpose to deliver their opinions openly, [illegible] mons in hearing and not speaking to the mat- [illegible] conference: especially considering that, instead of a free and open debate between them, their lordships had met with such a distinction, [illegible] exact formalities; the whole house, upon the [illegible] solved to make this farther Proposition: That if the Commons would send a Committee, au- [illegible]

[illegible]

Points left untreated of." Answer, "That [illegible]

[illegible]

house, intituled, 'an act for the utter Aboli- [illegible]

[illegible]

gone through the bill; but finding some causes [illegible]

[illegible]

*Debate in the Commons on the Point of Na-* [illegible]

[illegible] will instruct us about it. But the Journals of [illegible]

[illegible] as the nature of the thing will admit. Besides [illegible]

[illegible] morandums were read, containing the ground- [illegible]

last session. These we shall omit, and con- [illegible]

[illegible] pute against a general Naturalization; he argued, "That God had made people fit for every country; some for a cold, some for a [illegible]

[illegible] with one hedge to divide them; the one pasture bare, the other fertile and good. A wise [illegible]

[illegible] sure; otherwise they will rush in in multitudes, [illegible]

[illegible] you will find many of our own, very worthy [illegible]

[illegible] these 3 years. Our English merchants adven- [illegible]

[illegible] force. He added, that the care of a sovereign prince is, that his subjects live under him, 'ho- [illegible] try is miserable, where the great men are ex- [illegible]

[illegible] &c. The other a bare common, without pro- [illegible]

[illegible] cannot make a single village in one, to be par- [illegible]

[illegible] Charta, is not to act against law. A Protection granted by the king for 3 years was not good; for one he may. If king Philip of Spain [illegible]

[illegible]

said, 'Go thou to the right hand, and I will

[illegible]

and Mr. *Moore;* the main points of whose ar-

[illegible]

were 'una et alia respublica;' Scotland, 'ali-

[illegible]

membered, that the king said in a speech, re-

[illegible]

think the law to be one way, not to declare it another. Lastly, if we naturalize them, it is

[illegible]

preface I will use none, but put myself upon

[illegible]

tomed beyond my deservings; neither will I

[illegible]

but now at the first declare myself, that I mean

[illegible]

wherein, nevertheless, I have a request to make

[illegible]

pose I have in hand than all that I shall say

[illegible]

made, Parmenio said unto him, 'I would accept these offers, were I as Alexander;' he turned it upon him again, 'So would I (saith

[illegible]

a private profession, if an English merchant,

[illegible]

should say, "Surely I would proceed no farther

[illegible]

And the like may be said of a gentleman in

[illegible]

cient; or of a lawyer, be he never so wise in

[illegible]

for when a question is 'de vero,' it is simple,

[illegible]

proceed to this naturalization. Thirdly, an en-

[illegible]

nerality, it is necessary for me, before I pro-

[illegible]

these, Mr. Speaker, that I will only handle at

[illegible]

two for a committee, because they receive more

[illegible]

of this naturalization a surcharge of people

---

* See Bacon's Works, Vol. III. p. [illegible]

[illegible] subjects of this realm. A grave objection, mr. [illegible] virgins, 'ne forte non sufficiat vobis et nobis,' [illegible] ad sinistram, &c.' But, certainly, I should never have brought that example on that side; [illegible] war of the other, for his rescue and recovery. [illegible] ble similitudes, of a tree that will thrive the better if it be removed into the more fruitful [illegible] it is set in the better ground, can fasten upon it, and take nutriment from it; and a sheep, [illegible] what should let him to graze and feed? But there belongeth more, I take it, to a family or [illegible] nation to another. For if, mr. Speaker, they [illegible] I think no man doubteth, mr. Speaker, but his maj's first coming in was the greatest [illegible] that nation. Now I would fain understand, in these 4 years space, and in the fulness and [illegible] for I do assure myself, that, more than some [illegible]

[illegible] inferior persons, that have a dependence upon [illegible] survey should be made, would be of a number extremely small: I report me to all your pro- [illegible] bable. Now, mr. Speaker, as I said, 'Si in [illegible] that you will tell me of a multitude of families [illegible] shall I tell you, mr. Speaker, what I think? [illegible] mitting of a plebeian council; which whilst it [illegible] many years, as I am persuaded, rather a mat- [illegible] to this main inconvenience pretended, of sur- [illegible] England is not yet peopled to the full: for cer- [illegible] tered by the poll; neither can I see, that this [illegible]

[illegible] with people; and whosoever shall compare [illegible] been far better peopled in former times; it may be, in the heptarchy, or otherwise: for [illegible] state, the greater the population, 'pro rata.' [illegible] desolate and decayed boroughs. Again, mr. [illegible] countries and not the maritime, which need to fear surcharge of the people; for all sea pro- [illegible] carriage by sea, and merchandising? Wherein [illegible] sea, as well as by land; which still is an in- [illegible] the ages of the world had, I think, so fair [illegible] call unto us for our colonies and plantations. [illegible]

The 3d answer, mr. Speaker, which I give, is this: I demand what is the worst effect that [illegible] than some honourable war for the enlargement [illegible] valorous and warlike nation, I know not whether I should term an inconvenience or no; for the saying is most true, though in another [illegible] spoken indeed of the patience of an exiled [illegible] warlike nation. And certainly, mr. Speaker, I hope I may speak it without offence, that if [illegible]

[illegible] great deal for private persons than for parlia- [illegible] several; nay more, that it is declared by the [illegible] this objection likewise, mr. Speaker, I allow to be a weighty objection, and worthy to be well [illegible] shall offer is this; it is true, for my own part, mr. Speaker, that I wish the Scottish nation governed by our laws; for I hold our laws [illegible] and I desire therein your attention, that according to true reason of estate, naturalization is in order first and precedent to union of laws; in degree a less matter than union of laws; and in nature separable, not inseparable from union of laws: for naturalization doth but take out the marks of a foreigner, [illegible] tion; but union of laws doth take away dis- [illegible] mass or lump, without any vacuum or separation? Do we not likewise see in the state of [illegible] guages and lineages there is one communion [illegible] and general; for the laws are rather 'figura [illegible] perfection than bonds of entireness: and there- [illegible] that in the kingdom of Ireland, all our statute [illegible] ralization; neither need any man doubt but they are 'alteri nos,' other ourselves, for to

in labour industrious, in courage valiant, in

thing indeed incident to all martial people,

manner. But for this objection, mr. Speaker,

conquests abroad, but to solid strength at home;

conveniences of the commixture of a more

for it. But a more full answer to this objec-

the degree of the 'post-nati,' that men grown

younger brothers; so as we stand upon 'quidam,' not 'quantum,' being but a little differ-

aliens as the rest. A point that I mean not

fore me; and because I do desire in this case

of law, contrary to form of pleading in law,

law. For reason of law, when I meditate of it, methinks the wisdom of the common laws

of persons, in an excellent proportion. The

woman: marry at the king's suit, the case may

sing or state that is a friend. Unto such a person the law doth impart a greater benefit and protection, that is, concerning things per-

chattels, contracts, and the like, but not con-any ancestor paramount; for the law thinks not good to [illegible] the same degree with a [illegible] because he was once an alien, and so might have been an enemy: and 'nemo [illegible]' [illegible] cannot be so settled by any benefit, as when from their nativity they are [illegible] and [illegible]. And the third degree, which is the perfect degree, is, when such a person as never was enemy, nor could have been at any time past, nor can be enemy in time to come; and therefore the law gives unto him the full benefit of Naturalization. Now, mr. Speaker, if these be the true steps and paces of the law, [illegible] is born under the king's obedience never could 'in aliquo puncto temporis' be an enemy, a rebel he might be, but no enemy; and therefore in reason of law is naturalized. Nay, contrariwise, he is bound 'jure [illegible]' [illegible] defend [illegible] England against all invaders or rebels; and therefore, as he is obliged to the protection of arms, and that perpetually and universally, so he is to have the perpetual and universal benefit and protection of laws, which is Naturalization. For form of pleading, it is true that hath been said, that if a man would plead another to be an alien, he must [illegible] set forth negatively, and [illegible], that he was born out of the obedience of our sovereign lord the king, but affirmatively, under the obedience of a foreign king or state in particular, which can never be done in this case. As for authority, I will not press it; ye know all what hath been [illegible] by the king's [illegible]. And for example [illegible] parcels of the duchy of Normandy; in the subjects of [illegible] English when it was a parcel of the crown of France. But as I said, I am not [illegible] to enter into an argument of law, but [illegible] myself [illegible] point of conveniency; so as for my part I hold all 'post-nati' naturalized 'ipso jure;' but yet I am far from opinion, that it should be a thing superfluous to have it done by parl.; chiefly in respect of that true principle of estate, 'principium actionis [illegible]' [illegible]. It will lift up a sign to all the world of our love towards them, and good correspondence with them. And these are, mr. Speaker, the material objections which have been made on the other side, whereunto you have heard my answers, weigh them in your wisdoms, and so I conclude [illegible] general part. Now, mr. Speaker, according as I promised, I must fill the other balance, in expressing unto you the inconvenience which we shall incur, if we shall not proceed to this Naturalization; wherein that inconvenience, which of all others, [illegible] by itself, if there were none other, doth exceedingly move me, and may move you, is a position of estate, collected out of the records of time, which is this, that wheresoever several kingdoms or estates have been united in sovereignty, if that union hath not been fortified and bound in with a further union, and namely, that which is now in question, of Naturalization, this hath [illegible] seen, that [illegible] time or other they have broken again, upon all occasions apt to revolt and [illegible] the former separation. Of this assertion the first example which I will set before you, is of that memorable union which was between the Romans and the Latins, which continued from the battle at the lake of Regillus, for many years, unto the consulships. At what time there began, about this very point of Naturalization, that war which was called [illegible], being the most bloody and [illegible] war that ever the Roman state endured; wherein, after a number of battles and infinite sieges and surprises of towns, the Romans in the end prevailed and mastered the Latins; but as soon as ever they had the honour of the war, looking back into what perdition and confusion they were near to have come, they presently naturalized them all. [illegible] speak of a Naturalization in Blood; there was a naturalization indeed in blood. Let me set before you again the example of Sparta, and the rest of Peloponnesus their associates. The state of Sparta was a nice and jealous state in the point of imparting Naturalization to their confederates. But what was the issue of it? After they had held them in a kind of society and amity for divers years, upon the first occasion given, which was no more than the surprise of the castle of Thebes, by certain desperate conspirators in the habit of maskers, there ensued immediately a general revolt and defection of their associates, which was the ruin of their state never afterwards to be recovered. Of later times let me lead your consideration to behold the like events in the kingdom of Arragon, which kingdom was united with Castile and the rest of Spain, in the persons of Ferdinando and Isabella, and so continued many years; but yet so as it stood a kingdom severed and divided from the rest of the body of Spain in privileges, and directly in this point of Naturalization, or capacity of inheritance. What came of it? Thus much, that now of fresh memory, not past twelve years since, only upon the [illegible] of a condemned man out of the grate of a prison towards the street, that cried 'fueros,' which is as much as, liberties or privileges, there was raised a dangerous rebellion; which was suppressed with great difficulty with an army royal. After which victory nevertheless, to shun farther inconvenience, their privileges were disannulled, and they were united with the rest of Spain. Upon so small a spark, notwithstanding so long a continuance, were they ready to break and sever again. The like may be said of the states of Florence and Pisa, which city of Pisa being united unto Florence, but not endowed with the benefit of Naturalization, upon the first sight of [illegible] assistance, by the expedition of Charles the 8th of France into Italy, did revolt, though it [illegible] since again reunited and incorporated. The same effect we see in the most barbarous go-

[illegible] effect of nature; for it was thought a fit policy [illegible] three provinces of Transylvania, Wallachia, and Moldavia, which were as the very nurses [illegible] sions, to the end they might be the less wasted, only under Waywoods as vassals and ho- [illegible] of the Turkish empire; which policy we by late experience proved unfortunate, as ap- [illegible] mond, prince of Transylvania, a leader very famous for a time; which revolt is not yet fully recovered. Whereas we seldom or ne- [illegible] cians say, 'opposita juxta se posita magis elucescunt:' let us take a view, and we shall find [illegible] is to say, Guienne, Provence, Normandy, Bri- [illegible] kingdoms of Spain, which are mutually natu- [illegible] once united; so as we now scarce know whether the heptarchy were a true story or a fable. And therefore, mr. Speaker, when I re- [illegible] vation to avoid a relapse into a separation; [illegible] the old bishop, which, upon a public disputa- [illegible] man; but at last, with much ado, he got to be heard; and when he came to speak, in- [illegible] witty and subtle arguments, I say, that I do [illegible] yet in the time of [illegible] [illegible] careless mind, 'maneat nostros ea cura ne- [illegible] to be tried by the sharpest sword: sure I am, [illegible] me as the most weighty: neither do there want [illegible] journed to so long a day as this that I have spoken of: for I leave it to your wisdom to [illegible] whether you do not think, in case, [illegible] or alienation, or unkindness, I do not say [illegible] to be spoken of, and may do better a great deal in your minds than in my mouth, or in [illegible] fore, mr. Speaker, I come now to the third [illegible] Naturalization: the benefits may appear to be [illegible] both these had as it were their several postern [illegible] and Spain had Ireland; for these were the two accesses which did comfort and encourage [illegible] of these two kingdoms, if that it shall be now made constant and permanent; that of Ireland is cut off likewise by the convenient situ- [illegible] closed by means of [illegible]

[illegible] the kingdoms here on earth have a resemblance [illegible] is apt to grow and spread; and such do I take [illegible] For mr. Speaker, was it not, think you, a true [illegible] him a great quantity of gold that he had ga- [illegible] his expectation, "Why, sir, if another come [illegible] of all your gold." Neither is the authority of [illegible] proverb of state, taken first from a speech of [illegible] them founded in poverty. Persia, a country barren and poor, in respect of the Medes, [illegible] pastoral beginnings. The Turks, a band of Sarmatian Scythes, that in a vagabond manner [illegible] is yet called Turcomania; out of which, after [illegible] descent or expedition upon the Roman em- [illegible] prey, and be gone again; but planted themselves in a number of rich and fruitful pro- [illegible] their names remain to this day; witness Lombardy, Catalonia, a name compounded of Goth and Alan, Andalusia, a name corrupted [illegible] late years, which are bred in a barren and mountainous country, is not to be forgotten, [illegible]

[illegible] to rule, yet of ancient time served many ages; first under Carthage, then under Rome, after [illegible] to dream of a monarchy in the west, according to that device, 'Video solem orientem in oc- [illegible] island of Britain, seated and manned as it is, and that hath, I make no question, the best [illegible] the world, shall think of nothing but reckon- [illegible] cannot tell what. Mr. Speaker, I have, I take it, gone through the parts which I propounded to myself, wherein if any man shall [illegible] own particular, I would have him know that I [illegible] cern it were much alike for my private fortune to rest a tacebo, as to sing a placebo in this [illegible] tain of my heart. 'Credidi propter quod locutus sum;' I believed, therefore I spake. So [illegible] yours; God direct it for the best."

[illegible]

---

* He was elected upon the vacancy occasi- [illegible]

[illegible] a dispute arose, whether all at once or separately, this knight, with a loud voice, and not [illegible] ring in this with the opinion of several others. "But the house," say the Commons' Journals, [illegible]

[illegible] merally; he, afterwards, entered into a hse- [illegible]

[illegible] 'let us not join murderers, thieves, and the ro- [illegible]

[illegible] after, &c.' The house, we are informed, were [illegible]

[illegible] of the house; in that the speech was not inter- [illegible]

[illegible] 'leves loquuntur curæ, ingentes stupent;' and [illegible] Solomon's counsel was, 'not to give an answer;' [illegible] 'mustum silentium,' which then was found in [illegible]

[illegible] The prisoner being set to the bar, laboured to [illegible]

[illegible] Tower was first named, and also a dismission [illegible] arose about this last affair; at length being [illegible]

[illegible] hold it fit that any particulars should be named, [illegible]

[illegible] of the shire for Bucks, and a writ issued out for a new choice." Accordingly his warrant for commitment, and a new writ, were made [illegible]

Journals [illegible]

[illegible] in the Tower, he sent a letter to a relation of his, a member of the same house, complaining [illegible] confinement; and begged of him to intercede [illegible]

[illegible] there might grow a good effect. That the [illegible] first, and that the silence of the house might have bred some ill conceit; but his maj. is far [illegible]

[illegible] might be any interruption to the business in [illegible]

[illegible] it pleaseth him so well, that he again returns [illegible]

[illegible] it to the same judgment for mercy; and, if [illegible]

[illegible] heard, a motion ensued, That sir Christopher [illegible] again, which was not assented to; but it was [illegible] and a warrant was directed to the lieut. of the [illegible] fore that took place, the King called both [illegible] W[illegible] [illegible] audiences, and spake [illegible]

"[illegible] both Houses [illegible] house, and you knights and burgesses of the lower house: All men, at the beginning of a feast, bring forth good wine first, and after [illegible] gave at the feast at Cana in Galilee, where Christ [illegible] water [illegible] am to speak unto you, I must follow that go[illegible] posed at the end of the banquet; since I am [illegible] speak, the matter whereof I mean to speak, it fits better to utter matter rather than words; [illegible] am to speak to you; the gravity of you the au[illegible] most commendable; but, on the contrary, in all [illegible] fewest words [illegible] unto; like the garment of a chaste woman, [illegible] natural beauty, which is properly her own; other deckings are [illegible] And besides this conveniency, I am forced hereunto by necessity, my place calling me to action, and not leaving me to the liberty of contemplation; having always my [illegible] care of you [illegible] are at [illegible] speeches. And therefore the matter, which I deliver you confusedly, as in a sack, I leave it to you, when you [illegible] have better leisure than I can have, to rank them in order, every [illegible] own place. This much by way of Preface; but I proceed to the Matter: whereof I might say, with St. Paul, I could speak [illegible] tongues as you [illegible] but I had rather speak three words to edification, than talk a day without understanding. In vain (saith the psalmist) doth the builder [illegible] of the watchman wake [illegible] Lord give his blessing [illegible] in the New Testament, St. Paul [illegible] that he may plant, Apollos may water; but it [illegible] For myself, I protest unto you all, when I first propounded the Union, I then thought there could have been no question [illegible] searching out, as it were, the very bowels of [illegible] inclination, in these few years past, as you may peradventure have in a longer time hereafter [illegible] among you. But here, I pray you now, mistake me not [illegible] I would have you to resolve, in an hour's time, that which will take a month's advisement; [illegible] ought to be *luce clarius*: and I hope you of the Lower House have the proof [illegible] clearness, by a bill sent you down from the Upper House [illegible] few hours; wherein may very well appear unto you the care I have [illegible] good security of their possessions for [illegible] to come. And [illegible] I do freely confess, you had reason to advise at leisure upon so great a cause; for great matters do ever require great deliberation, before they be well concluded. 'Deliberandum est diu, quod statuendum est semel.' [illegible] must proceed [illegible] but the execution of a sentence upon the resolution would be speedy. If you will go on [illegible] though you go with leaden feet, so you make still some progress, and that there be no lett, nor needless delay; and do not 'nodum in scirpo quaerere.' I am ever for the medium in every thing. Between foolish rashness and extreme length, there is a middle way. Search all that is reasonable; but omit that, which is idle, curious, and unnecessary, otherwise there can never be a resolution or end in any good work. And now from the General I will descend to the Particulars; and will [illegible] for the care of your [illegible] by opening unto you, 1st, what I crave; 2dly, [illegible] modities will ensue to both the kingdoms by [illegible]

For the first, what I crave; I protest before [illegible] people, before whom it were a shame to lye, that I claim nothing, but with acknowledg- [illegible] ple. I desire a perfect Union of Laws and Persons, and such a Naturalizing, as may [illegible] in England. And for Scotland, I avow such [illegible] friendship: that as there is over both but *unus rex*; so there may be in both but *unus grex*, [illegible] one a greater, the other a less; a richer, and a [illegible] the lesser to the commodities thereof; than [illegible] to be husband of two wives; whereof Christ [illegible] things; for I will discover my thoughts plainly unto you: I study clearness, not eloquence; [illegible] parent glass, for you all to see through, that [illegible] speak of a perfect Union, I mean not confu- [illegible] Scotland those particular privileges, that may [illegible] many particular Customs, in particular shires [illegible] Common Law of the kingdom: for every par- [illegible] are, as it were, naturally most fit for that people: but I mean of such a general Union [illegible] they may all be governed by one law: for I [illegible] I am able to prove it, that the grounds of the [illegible] law in the world, either civil or municipal, and the fittest for this people. [illegible]

law would be clear, and full; so the obscurity [illegible] new questions, hath enforced the judges to [illegible] cedents; wherein, I hope, lawyers themselves [illegible] uncertainty; and I am sure all the rest of [illegible] and uncertainty, although a just judge may do [illegible] do wrong; and then are all honest men, that succeed him, tied, in a manner, to his unjust [illegible] your laws be looked into: for I desire not the [illegible] ing laws in all time to come: for although [illegible] have a certain law, with some spots in it, nor [illegible] law; since, as the proverb is, 'it is less harm to suffer an inconvenience, than a mischief.' [illegible] land is to be united with you under them: for [illegible] is not possible to be done, without a fit prepa- [illegible] provide the timber; and, as Christ himself [illegible] will first provide the materials; nor a wise [illegible] great works must have their preparation; and [illegible] was my end, in causing the instrument of [illegible] the ending of such a work? The Union is as [illegible] to bring them, at the first, to shake hands, and, as it were, kiss other, and lie under one [illegible]

[illegible] such a final agreement. Every honest man desireth a perfect Union; but they that say so, [illegible] have *mel in ore, fel in corde.* If after your so long [illegible] desire; whereby the nation should be taxed, and the king disgraced? And what an ill pre[illegible] itself? But this, I am glad, was but the fault of one; and one is no number: yet have your neighbours of Scotland this advantage of you, [illegible] shall, as long as I am king) in parl. or any [illegible] be the husband, they the wife; you conquerors, [illegible] and that, as it were, but in a posting or hunting [illegible] of such a change of so ancient a monarchy into [illegible] and, that you may be the more upright judges, [illegible] tion is it which I crave? Only such, as, by the [illegible] more is intended. There is a conceit entertained, and a double jealousy possesseth many, wherein I am mis-judged; 1st, that this Union [illegible] berality to the Scottishmen, more than the [illegible] ed: to you shall be left the sweat, and labour, [illegible] truth, judge you; and that, not by my word, [illegible] without exceptions? Do I not offer to bind [illegible] equal good of both nations? I could then have [illegible] poral: but herein I did voluntarily offer, by [illegible] idlely of transporting of trees out of a barren ground into a better; and of lean cattle out [illegible]

[illegible] think, I know England hath more people; Scotland more waste ground; so that there is [illegible] justice, if I be partial to either side, let my [illegible] your king. I appeal to yourselves, if in favour or justice I have been partial: nay, my inten[illegible] I had most power. If hitherto I have done [illegible] me, that much less I will do it, when a law is to restrain me. I owe no more to the Scottishmen than to the English: I was born there, [illegible] hands, I have already reasonably rewarded, [illegible] for whom I mean extraordinary to strain my[illegible] closed. To both I owe justice, and protection; which, with God's grace, I shall ever [illegible] told you of it heretofore: my three first years were to [them] as a Christmas: I could not [illegible] the Hamper and Petty-Bag, for the Great [illegible] English, when I came first, of whom I was received with joy, and came as in a hunting [illegible] said, if I had not, in some measure, dealt [illegible] and been so familiar to me. I have [illegible] the Scottish nation, you all know; and the longer I live, the less cause have I to be ac-

extraordinary favour towards them. for, since

offered unto you; and that it is not yet

of Naturalization; all you agree, that they

you make? But for the 'post-nati,' your own

between the 'ante' and the 'post-nati' of each kingdom; which caused me to publish a proclamation, that the 'post-nati' were naturalized 'ipso facto' by the Accession to this crown. I do not deny, but judges may err.

to swear to all their reasons; I only urge, as

neither pressing you to judge, nor to be

here in so far as may tend to the weal of both nations; so would I have you, on the other part, to beware to disgrace, either my procla-

may procure less reverence to the Judges, can-

that most moves me. for as, I have yet heard, that there cannot but be a difference between the 'ante-nati' and the 'post-nati,'

be respected; for if you would have a perfect and perpetual Union, that cannot be in the

age after age; which, wanting a difference,

in the case of the 'post-nati,' which are to

the contrary, there will then arise [illegible]

of such, as would have the 'ante-nati' preferred;

sue for it hereafter, I doubt not but the [illegible]

[illegible] that such [illegible] in ore, fel in corde,' as I said before; carrying [illegible], but indeed a contrary resolution in their [illegible] yourselves, I will with indifferency grant what [illegible] land. I am, as I have often said, born and sworn king over both kingdoms: only thus far let me intreat you, in debating the point at [illegible] the [illegible] these kingdoms, they are great and evident; peace, plenty, love, free intercourse, and com[illegible] kings, that have sent their ambassadors to [illegible] if I were [illegible] and with what comfort do yourselves behold Irish, Scottish, Welch, and English, divers in [illegible] all strangers that repair hither? Those con[illegible], which [are] the borders of the two kingdoms; where heretofore much blood was [illegible], and many of your ancestors [illegible] their lives; yea, that lay waste and desolate, and were habitations but for runagates; are now become the navel or umbilick of both [illegible] and riches: their churches begin to be plant[illegible] neither robbing nor spoiling; and where there [illegible] parts but bloodshed, oppressions, complaints, [illegible] ably under his own fig-tree; and all their for[illegible] prayers to God for their king, under whom they [illegible] England. If, after all this, there shall be a [illegible] the Scots are a populous nation; they shall be harboured in our nest; they shall be planted and flourish in our good soil; they shall eat our commons bare, and make us lean. These [illegible] for, set apart conscience and honour (which if I should set apart indeed, I had rather wish [illegible] reason or good policy, that I will prefer those which perhaps I shall never see, or but by post, for a month, before those with whom I [illegible] dwell? Can they [illegible] overcome you with swarms of people [illegible] the [illegible] knows, they are not [illegible] as you are; and although they have had the [illegible] ed; yet were they ever but upon the defensive part, and may in a part thank their hills and [illegible] make incursions among you? And for my part, when I have two nations under my govt. can you imagine, I will respect the lesser, and neglect the greater? Would I not think it a [illegible] London, Southwark, Westminster, [illegible] not a man be more careful to quench the fire taken in his nearest neighbour's house, than if a whole town were a-fire afar from him? You know that I am careful to preserve the woods and game throughout all England, nay, through all [illegible] I would be more offended with any disorder in the forest of Waltham, for stealing of a stag [illegible] and in a manner joineth with my garden, than with cutting of timber, or stealing of a deer, [illegible] or the bishoprick. Think you, that I will prefer them that be absent, less powerful, and [illegible] to do me good [illegible] and where I desire to plant my posterity? If I might, by any such favours, raise myself to a greatness, it might be probable: all I cannot draw; and to lose a whole state here, to please a few there, were madness. I need speak no [illegible] a wit, it is not likely; and to doubt of my intention in this, were more than devilish. For mine own part, I offer more than I receive; and conveniency I prefer before law, in this point. For three parts, wherein I might hurt this nation, by partiality to the Scots, you [illegible] er: for either in Disposition of Rents, or what[illegible] in calling them to the parl.; it doth all fully [illegible] tishmen can receive either benefit or preferment by the Union; and wherein, for the care I have of this people, I am content to bind [illegible]

[illegible] in they receive least benefit of any: for in [illegible] they can obtain nothing but [illegible] buy by their purse, or acquire by the self-same [illegible] Civil Law, wherein I am a little better versed, [illegible] tions, should bear a great sway, it being the Law of Nations; I will maintain two princi- [illegible] out of the text itself, in many places, and also [illegible] preters of that law: the one, that it is a spe- [illegible] make aliens citizens, and 'donare civitate:' [illegible] selves do doubt, that in this case of the 'post- [illegible] positive law is resolute, 'rex est judex;' for [illegible] ple for maintaining of this law in the persons [illegible] longeth to a king; although in this case I press [illegible] it may be, a merchant or two of Bristol or Yar- [illegible] pack; but if the empire gain, and become the greater, it is no matter. You see one corpora- [illegible] sing from Scotland, they are three: 1st, that [illegible] to the Union: next, the Union is incompatible between two such nations: 3rdly, that the gain [illegible] ception of the ancient fundamental laws of that [illegible] might attain to the substance; and yet you [illegible] the Union. This is a direct contradiction 'in [illegible]

[illegible] ticulars, it is an old school point, 'ejus est ex- [illegible] pret their laws, nor they yours: I, that made [illegible] that word; I will not only deliver it unto you, [illegible] hereafter, when I handle the Objection of the Difference of the Laws; for they intend there- [illegible] ed, and their kings descent maintained, and [illegible] which hath been a kingdom, to which I de- [illegible] it, as you do, of their Common Law: for they [illegible] so confounded, as, for want either of mag- [illegible] confusion, as to become like a naked province, [illegible] hope you mean not, I should set garrisons [illegible] which are seldom found succeedingly all wise and honest men. This I must say for Scotland, and may truly vaunt it; here I sit, and [illegible] and by a clerk of the council I govern Scot- [illegible] against the Union; it is true indeed, I protest, [illegible] sought it, either in private, or the state by let- [illegible] rate that business; but on the other part, they [illegible] and just desires. I know there are many bigots amongst them, I mean a number of sedi- [illegible]

clusion; avoid all delays; cut off all vain questions; that your king may have his law- [illegible] ye need never doubt of my inclination: for I [illegible] mise; nor promise any thing, which I will not swear; what I swear, I will sign; and what I sign, I shall, with God's grace, ever perform."

[illegible] Houses again, on the 2d of May, to clear up those points to them which admitted of a double meaning. Accordingly, the king delivered [illegible]

"My lords and you gentlemen of the lower [illegible] sower, to sow his seed in good ground, where there is hope, it may yield fruit. Since I last spake unto you, I have heard, by common re- [illegible] hope you continue in the same liking still; and I wish, my hope may not be deceived; that [illegible] hearts; whereby what I spake may be mistaken, [illegible] which I may misjudge them, but that they will [illegible] House, there hath been no word spoken of the matter since your last meeting. I come not [illegible] for your going on. I shall do but the part of a [illegible] plications and expositions of my Speech, I was desirous to explain myself unto you; for (as I [illegible] cujus est condere.' I have not hindered* any speech; for it is not my manner, neither have I time to do it; only, for order-sake, I will con- [illegible] be as a fire to consume and burn up the hay [illegible] gold and silver. I understand, that some have [illegible] and proposition of a perfect Union. I have not studied (as I said) to give a full answer to [illegible] I propounded ever, and so I crave at your hands an absolute and full Union, but not a perfect [illegible] paration, which is made: and, because I spake [illegible] it is most true, I ever wished such an Union, as there might be 'unus rex, unus grex, una lex.' These men, that thus interpret, mark them well; and you shall find, that they pro- [illegible] 'probate Spirites;' and see, if they give you not guilded pills; whether they have not 'mel in ore, fel in corde.' Something must be done, you all confess; the devil himself cannot deny it: then what preparation can you have, or [illegible] a surgeon should let blood on the contrary side, [illegible] Union, when yourselves have, in the beginning, propounded it, have enacted it, that commis- [illegible] for your part, being met, have deliberately [illegible] now, forsooth, you would have a Commission. I will never grant a commission: It shall never have my consent, or allowance.—I remember [illegible] house: the king propounded something which came into the house; one in the house said, [illegible] good, so as it were according to law: I pray [illegible] granted: it is no more imperfect, as now it is projected, than a child that is born without a beard. It is already a perfect Union in me, the head. If you wanted a head, that is me, your king over you all; or if you were of your- [illegible] were imperfect; but it is now perfect in my [illegible] ripen and work.—When a child is in the mo- [illegible] perfect child, yet it is no man; it must gather strength and perfection by time: even so is [illegible] fect in me; that is, it is an Union in my [illegible] and title; yet but 'in embrione' perfect. [illegible]

---

* Sic Orig.

[illegible] brought to light; but to make it a perfect [illegible] have time and means; and if it be not at the [illegible]

when I first craved an Union, my desire was to have a perfect Union: then this whole body drew back; said, It could not be dispatched [illegible] cedents of the like; as ***; and when I would have had a more full and liberal Commission, [illegible] you have a perfect Union, but by this preparation? By bills, by committee, by argument: and yet, I say (using our Saviour's [illegible]

[illegible] to make of half a land one intire; to add to [illegible] into blessings; to turn blood and rapine into [illegible] this is the center? But I confess it is good to [illegible] 'procul a numine, procul a fulmine.' But [illegible]

[illegible] harm, I will make two offers: one, I will keep my seat *alternatim*, in the several countries; I will stay one year in Scotland, and another [illegible] kingdoms: the other is, I will keep my court nearer Scotland, at York; at some place there- [illegible] alike 'procul a fulmine:' and I protest, I will [illegible] good; and if I shall not see this Union likely to go forward, I will do it howsoever. Observe [illegible] whether they offer you not gilded pills. I fear [illegible] honest, if they be examined and ripped up: [illegible] cannot tell what to answer; because neither I [illegible]

[illegible] security, or I cannot: if I can, why do you not accept it? If I cannot, then must you leave all [illegible] which your own folly hath brought you unto, because you did not prevent it in time, when [illegible] them now but a little, because we must keep them in appetite: for you say, 'Turpius ejici- [illegible] precise conditions. 'Res non est integra.' The Union and bargain is already made; no- [illegible] ed a perfect Union; but I am sure they ever [illegible] strument. Now shall I come to some other [illegible] laws is a donative, a great grace and favour; [illegible] hostile laws away, [illegible] a cold effect; prejudging the good disposition [illegible] legiance. I know not their meaning, except [illegible] for which I know no answer, but that I shall [illegible] with them. I looked for no such fruits at your hands; such personal discourses and speeches, which, of all other, I looked you should avoid, [illegible] bly. I am your king: I am placed to govern you, and shall answer for your errors: I am a [illegible] and affections, as other men: I pray you, do [illegible]

*The E. of Salisbury lays before Parl. the*

[illegible]

form their Lordships, " First, by making a

[illegible]

and other occasions of expence; and some ne-

[illegible]

tions. Lastly, he made a motion that a Mes-

[illegible]

Lower House, for a friendly Conference there-

[illegible]

day, importing, " That because some things

[illegible]

prove a parl. of consolation. Therefore they desired a Conference, for consideration

[illegible]

and a Conference, with time and place, was

[illegible]

done at the first Conference. There is a long

[illegible]

Feb. 21. The Commons sent a message to

[illegible]

26th, the lord treasurer made a Report to the

[illegible]

a motion, proposed by the committee of the

[illegible]

course might be taken concerning Wardships

[illegible]

on the Supply was, a division of the house on the question, Whether it should be put off for

[illegible]

king's wants cheerfully: time enough for retribution afterwards. That the Supply might

[illegible]

give somewhat." On the whole, a Resolution was taken, on a message from the Lords, to send an answer to this purpose; " That they

[illegible]

shall hear from their lordships about them,

[illegible]

ference."

*The Commons complain of Dr. Cowel's Book*

[illegible]

Feb. 27th. The Commons sent a Message to

[illegible]

a conference for that purpose." The Lords returned for answer, " That they were willing

[illegible]

cherish a mutual correspondence between

[illegible]

therefore appointed time and place for a Con-

[illegible]

forms us, " That the Book, here mentioned, [illegible] fore it. At the same time, declaring his approbation of a book, lately writ by dr. Cowel [illegible] they should have their lessons to learn over [illegible]

[illegible] relating to Tenures and Wardships. "That [illegible] to grant it; as on further deliberation, he shall [illegible] sired their lordships to appoint a meeting of [illegible] Answer touching the matter of Support and [illegible]

The very next day a message was sent from [illegible] Supply and Support. "That the Commons [illegible] maj.'s wants, and a due regard to relieve them. But they could not conceive, as they [illegible] sider of a fit resolution and proceed therein in due time. That, as to the other point of Support, they hold this matter to be most consi[illegible] word King; 3. On the word Parliament; 4. [illegible] Lords, "That his maj. had taken notice of [illegible] was; but it may be supposed to finish the [illegible]

*Proceeding in relation to Tenures, &c.*] [illegible] lordship observed, "That the committee of the Commons insisted chiefly on 3 particular [illegible] meet. And it would be most proper to treat [illegible] not consent to, but trusted to the chancellor's

---

* Wilson in Kennet, vol. II. p. 681.

ference; and how far the committee of the
Tenures, to this effect: "First, his lordship

answer. But, that this was a suit for a valuable

[illegible]

predecessors, and farther than that [illegible]

*The Lord Treasurer acquaints the Lords* [illegible]

[illegible] necessity of such a free conference. [illegible]

[illegible]

departed; and an injunction was laid on the

[illegible]

a conference as is desired." After this, it was resolved that a message should be sent to the Lower House to desire a Conference with their

[illegible]

informed their lordships, "That the Commons

[illegible]

son; and had thought good to propose unto

[illegible]

maj. 1. That Proclamation be made forthwith,

[illegible]

places where they are by law confined; and

[illegible]

upon a proper method to do it."

[illegible]

shew them the difference between a free Con-

[illegible]

in mind of their first offer of 100,000l. per an-

[illegible]

matter in the debate, as well as the treasurer.

[illegible]

maj.'s Answer to it, 'That he took very grace-

[illegible]

love; and will, with all convenient speed, con-

[illegible]

after, a proclamation came out, commanding

[illegible]

attend in their robes at Whitehall; in order

[illegible]

one above another, fit and convenient to receive

[illegible]

Wales and Earl of Chester; and a patent there-

[illegible] tained a clause commanding all bps. justices of [illegible] and also all others of [illegible] the lords present were sworn by 6 of the privy [illegible]

June 18th. A Message was sent by the Commons [illegible] now desired a free conference with their lordships [illegible] House in 3 points, viz. "1. What more the [illegible] retribution? 2. That the Lords would deliver [illegible] mons, the king was to be consulted about it [illegible] hasty in giving an Answer to a matter of that [illegible] leave in them an implicit trust to treat of whatever [illegible] that from him [illegible] conference, to consider that they are all Peers [illegible]

[illegible] and cure of the service and be 'pares in onere,' also."

*Further Proceedings* [illegible]

[illegible] in these words:—" *Mem.* 'quod die Martis [illegible] then also present; where, after his maj. had [illegible] larly, in a long and exact speech, the nature [illegible] taken, and by divers conferences, first had [illegible] pleased, in a second Speech, to remember that [illegible] distinctly, to read; which accordingly was [illegible] hath received no knowledge of any abuse of [illegible] hath been [illegible] expedition.—*Grievance.* " Imposition upon

of licences; and for the profit it was but an

that it might be done by law, it was warranted

and especially since it seemed to breed a jea-

good terms with his part; and, though small

court till near 5 years after this period.

" That himself, and some other lords, not as

his hand, which was also to be imparted to

" James R. Right trusty and well-beloved

cannot judge of a king's heart may feed them-

July 16, 1610." Superscribed, " To our right

imparted to the other house, it produced more

serve to have it pass into an act

Committee of the Lower House a Memorial,

[illegible]

July 23rd. The lord treasurer read to the Lords a draught of a Memorial, penned by his lordship, according to their last order; [illegible] And it was ordered, that both the Memorials [illegible] and, after hearing a speech from the Speaker [illegible] was pleased to make a short speech to both [illegible] fect:—"He first told them, That the time was so far spent, that it was a sufficient excuse for him to speak without preamble; therefore he [illegible] the breaking up of this session, give them An- [illegible]

[illegible] 10th of Oct. next ensuing.

[illegible]

"Touching the execution of the laws of this [illegible] our late Proclamation; as also in our late [illegible] answer in that behalf.—There hath never been [illegible] hath allowed such ministers to preach in it as [illegible] discipline settled in it, and maintained by it; [illegible] do yield a fresh example, who have and do [illegible] nevertheless, as in our own princely judgment [illegible] deprived and silenced ministers, in regard of [illegible] although they be in the same degree offenders by our laws; so we shall be pleased, when we know the numbers, the names, and qualities of [illegible] wisdom we shall hold most fit and convenient [illegible] though never any Christian king had in greater [illegible] where the neglect of the Cure is joined there- [illegible] that we should in this, more than in any other cases, abridge any of our loving subjects of that which they have in express words granted [illegible] we might lawfully in this case so do, yet we should not hold it convenient, until some far- [illegible] for godly ministers and learned preachers; and that with some difference in proportion an- [illegible] lified to enjoy two Benefices, with Cure, will be greatly diminished, if such as have power to [illegible] for that cause to abate our's; besides, we will [illegible] of our displeasure, that such ministers as ei- [illegible] Benefices, with Cure, shall carefully observe the 41st and 47th Constitutions, confirmed by us, An. 1603, whereby it is provided, that [illegible] (where he doth not reside) maintain a preacher, lawfully allowed, that is able sufficiently to teach and instruct the people in his absence; and in case the bishop, upon complaint made [illegible] their hands, or shall not have provided for the [illegible] ers in their absence, upon information given [illegible] much we tender a reformation in such cases.— [illegible] Court, in the beginning of our reign, and upon some other complaints, our Clergy, by our direction, made a Constitution with a condition [illegible] original cause was of no great weight, and of private interest, so as there might be a law [illegible] cordingly they caused a bill to be drawn for

[illegible]

jects, and take it to heart as a matter of great

with least charge and expence; and for those 4 countries for which suit is now made to have

we conceive it to be a matter of very great im-

found; to the end there might, in a manner,

last Instructions; holding it both just and con-

which cannot be separated; always professing

general, that as we are and ought to be slow

“ March 26, 1610. *Memorial concerning the*

“ *Demands in Matters of Tenures, &c.*—The

“ *Concerning the person, viz.*—Grand Ser-

dinary, with the respite of them; both these

“ *Concerning the possession, viz.*—Wardships

uter Seisin to cease. Livery Ouster le main,

them clausit extremum, Mandamus, quæ plura

cealed Wards ‘de futuro,’ all Instructions, all Performance of what tends to Knights Service;

of common persons, viz. All Wards now in to double their rent upon a relief to be paid.

and such Services; these all to remain. And

space of one whole year, without interruption,

shall be extinguished; and such possessor or

successors; and against his patentees, and all

some grants in fee-farm: and any Body Po-

joyed the lands, tenements, or hereditaments

guished; the composition for the same to be

lease, and discharge all old debts, due to him

[illegible]

forfeiture." In like manner, in all attainders of [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] nures."

[illegible]

"Whereas the knights, citizens, and bur- [illegible] Committees of this House, a Memorial by [illegible]

[illegible] of there is this clause inserted, viz. 'that the [illegible]

[illegible] they were agreed in the substance; but only [illegible]

[illegible] dys, to retain liberty, 'addendo, minuendo, et [illegible]

[illegible] liver a clear Answer; that is to say, concern- [illegible]

[illegible] these two qualities; one that it should be a [illegible]

[illegible] nour and revenue of the Crown than others [illegible]

[illegible] these words; 'addendo, minuendo, et inter- [illegible]

[illegible] end of the last session; and, by the Demand [illegible] in this last session, had bartered long for [illegible]

*The Great Contract relating to Tenures, &c.*

[illegible] and other things; in the state that affair was [illegible] Their lordships agreed to send a Message to [illegible]

[illegible] by the Co[illegible] [illegible] the lord chancellor [illegible]

[illegible] thereof might be by way of interlocution; to [illegible] the Lords to sit as in a committee; which was [illegible]

After a short adjournment, the House of [illegible] Commons, a letter dated Oct. 27th in these [illegible]

“Sir, I am, by order of the Commons House of parliament, directed to repair unto you, and to desire of you a true Copy of his [illegible] subject, presented the last session of parl. as [illegible] order is, that you are to subscribe your hand [illegible]

[illegible] himself he had no power or authority to make forth, or deliver Copies of that nature; but, [illegible]

[illegible] sired should be sent, authentickly, to the [illegible]

[illegible] ruption, impediment, or delay; it was agreed [illegible]

“Upon receipt of your letter, I have this [illegible] accordingly. I rest your assured loving friend, [illegible]

[illegible] or used as a precedent; but, that in all cases [illegible]

[illegible] the Lords to the Commons had not the wished [illegible] again between the two houses, about the Grand [illegible]

[illegible] humour with one another; but, since the Jour-[illegible]

[illegible] seasoned with 7 years knowledge in his pra-[illegible]

[illegible] teries too high for them, being Arcana Imperii, [illegible] sions, in 6 years time, dissolved the parl. by

[illegible] as members of this parl.; because his

evere was, 'That the harte of kings weare

mone I used, wherein I presented myselfe

but as I then sayd of the nature of a mirrore,

may saye, deffyled my mirrore; I canne saye

as I shall answere it to Almighty God, that

my purety like the mettle of golde in my

I muste divide into 3 parts and branches,

sores; and for my zeal in private, not to vaunt
of it, for avoydinge vayne glorye, yet I hope

the lawe; and in some places when presented,

that as a lieutenante of myne in one contreye

that I desire to make any newe or more rigo-

[illegible]

[illegible] perhaps, to be amended. For I will meete [illegible]

[illegible] complaynte of my subjectes, and I will dely- [illegible]

[illegible] and all aspersiones and rumores of discon- [illegible]

[illegible] tente to your king, and accorded. But I shall [illegible]

[illegible] in a sounde oppynyone with the kinge as [illegible]

For undertakers, I proteste, I nevere was so [illegible]

[illegible] patchinge a parleamente, I knowe none of [illegible]

[illegible] this gives me the lye. I did proseede with a [illegible]

[illegible] me, that as I intended gratyously to them, [illegible]

[illegible] bulas, rejice genealogias: if anye bringe dis- [illegible]

[illegible] kinge and people; that I maye rise with desyre [illegible]

[illegible] pered men: if anye man preche anye other [illegible]

[illegible] quence as a guildene sepulchere. This I have [illegible]

[illegible] proceede of grace, I have put them into [illegible]

[illegible] matter was resumed: it appearing to be a business of great importance, and 'vexata ques- [illegible]

[illegible] that the lord chief justice, and chief baron, [illegible]

[illegible] tion occasioned a warm debate amongst the [illegible]

[illegible] motion; and the difference not being likely to be [illegible]

[illegible] the question: "Whether the Judges should de- [illegible]

[illegible] positions, before a further consideration be had [illegible]

[illegible] affirmative; and the judges desiring to withdraw a little into a private room to advise by [illegible]

[illegible] Lord Chief Justice, in a grave and eloquent [illegible]

[illegible] time, giving his opinion in the case, for [illegible]

[illegible] it, as their judgments led them. But, to put [illegible] cellor to this effect: "Whether this house [illegible] them a hearing touching the point of Impo[illegible] answering "not content," it passed in the ne[illegible] sent to the Lower house." "Whereas the [illegible] House of parl. did desire of the Lords a conference concerning Impositions; to which their [illegible] messengers of their own; their lordships do [illegible] hold a loving and mutual correspondence with [illegible] a grave and serious consideration, as well of [illegible] Crown.' The other, 'An act for Repeal of a branch of a statute, 34 Hen. VIII. entituled, 'An act for certain Ordinances in the king's [illegible] chanc. observed to the house, "That these [illegible] concessions of the king had no effect on the [illegible] and, on May 28, a Message was sent up to [illegible] in these words [illegible] ing a conference with their lordships about Im[illegible]

[illegible] the Lords from a conference so desired, as [illegible] ing, or the same words, viz. 'That the matter, [illegible] is a 'noli me tangere;' in conferring, also, that the taking the oaths of allegiance and supremacy is an impediment; so, as whoso had [illegible] into conference of the said matter. Affirming further, That it did strike, not at a branch, [illegible] ral crown; and that he doubted least in such a conference, as was desired, there would, [illegible] and his subjects.' That of such scandal their [illegible] tisfaction for so great a wrong done to the [illegible] chanc. Whether he had in writing the Message so delivered, as aforesaid? Answered, he [illegible] "That they had taken notice of the message, and will take the same into further conside[illegible] this, a short Memorandum is entered on the [illegible] day, or not? To which the gent. usher, with [illegible] order, the abp. of Canterbury produced a copy of one, ready drawn, for that purpose, which [illegible] L[illegible], having received from the Commons a Complaint against the bp. of Lincoln, have [illegible]

[illegible]

case being different, he being a member of the [illegible]

[illegible] Owen argued, "That no attorney was ever [illegible]

[illegible] them to a cloud gilded by the rays of the sun; [illegible]

"That those privy-counsellors who had got [illegible]

*Debate on the Motion for a Supply.*] April 12. Mr. Secretary *Herbert* moved for a Supply. He said, "that if he was but a private [illegible] lousy. But, as a sec. of state he urged it not [illegible] we are under. He took them to be ill mem- [illegible] viam,' by calling a parl. 'Nemo tenetur suam [illegible] our country, never in better equipage; yet, in [illegible] was not so much a thorn in our foot, but a [illegible] leave it, or what trouble and danger to reco- [illegible] awakened Tyrone; who is now treating with [illegible]

[illegible] cluded, that a cheerful and speedy contribu- [illegible]

Mr. *Chancellor of the Exchequer* said, "That [illegible] many months before money came in. He of- [illegible] any member privately; and the assurance for [illegible] He therefore moved for a sub-committee to be appointed for this business."

[illegible] tended to one of these three ends; either in- [illegible] of these 3 kinds; since the first had been al- [illegible] Want. That in times of peace it was proper [illegible]

[illegible]

lord chancellor and the 2 abps. 16 other bps. [illegible]

[illegible] suing session.

[illegible]

---

* See R[illegible] History [illegible]

† R[illegible] Patent Acts, [illegible] XVII. p. 2[illegible]0

[illegible] to [illegible] when we [illegible] [illegible] countries, of good experience and of great in- [illegible] well foresee how all effects the bad choise of [illegible] their private protections; or with young and [illegible] ture for so grave a councell; or with men of [illegible] ring needless questions; but we wish all our [illegible]

*List of the House of Commons, returned to* [illegible]

Hertfordshire.
Sir B. St. John,
[illegible]
*Bedford.*
Sir Alex. St. John,
Rich. Taylor, esq.
[illegible]
Sir Francis [illegible],
Sir Wm. Fleetwood.
[illegible]
Sir [illegible] Denton,
Rich. Oliver, esq.
[illegible]
Rich. Lovelace, esq.
[illegible], esq.
[illegible]
Sir John Dormer,
Henry Bulstrode, esq.
[illegible]
Sir Rich. [illegible],
Sir [illegible] Knollys.
[illegible]
Sir Chas. Howard,
Sir Robert Bennet.
*Reading.*
Sir Anthony Barker,
John Saunders, esq.

[illegible]
Sir Geo. [illegible],
Sam. [illegible], esq.
[illegible]
Sir R. [illegible],
[illegible]
B. [illegible], esq.
John [illegible], esq.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Sir Edw. Cooke,
[illegible], esq.
[illegible]
Edw. Salter, esq.
Geo. [illegible], esq.
[illegible]
Sir [illegible],
[illegible], esq.
[illegible]
Sir John Trevor,
Jas. Bagge, jun. gent.
[illegible]
Sir [illegible],
[illegible], esq.
[illegible]
Sir Thos. Trevor,
Sir Thos. Smith.
[illegible]
Sir [illegible],
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible], esq.
[illegible]
Sir R. [illegible],
John Hampden, esq.
[illegible]
Sir John Walter,
Sir [illegible].
[illegible]
Robt. Jermin, esq.
Sir Francis Crane.
[illegible]
Thos. Mallet, esq.
Wm. H[illegible], esq.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
*St. Ives.*
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
John [illegible],
[illegible] gent.
*St. Germain's.*
Sir Rich. Buller,
[illegible]
*St. Mitchell.*
Rich. Carewe, esq.
[illegible]
[illegible]
Sir Edw. Barrett,
Sir R[illegible].
*St. Maw's.*
Edw. Writtington, esq.

Wm. [illegible]
[illegible]
J[illegible],
Sir Hen. Rolles.
[illegible]
[illegible]
Sir Hen. Curwen.
[illegible]
Sir Hen. Fane,
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
*Cambridge.*
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Sir Wm. Brereton,
[illegible]
[illegible]
E. Whitby, esq. rec.
J. Radcliff, alderman.
[illegible]
W[illegible]
[illegible]
*Derby.*
Tim. Leeving, rec. ib.
Edw. Leeche, esq.
[illegible]
Sir Edw. Seymour, bt.
John Drake, esq.
*Exeter.*
John Prowse, esq.
[illegible], esq.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
J. Delbridge, merch.
P. Dodderidge, merch.
[illegible]
J. Glanvile, esq. rec. ib.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Wm. [illegible]
R. Matthewe, merch.
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Sir Wm. Stroude,
[illegible]
[illegible]
Sir John Strangeways,
Sir Thos. Trenchard.

*Pool*
Sir Walter Earle,
[illegible]

*[illegible] Regis.*
[illegible]

Sir Wm. Pitt,
[illegible]
Sir Thos. Hammond.
[illegible]

*Colchester.*
[illegible]
Edw. Grimston, esq.
[illegible]

*York.*
[illegible]
Wm. Conyers, gent.
[illegible]

*Richmond.*
[illegible]
Wm. Bowes, esq.

*Pontefract.*
[illegible]
Sir Edwin Sandys, jun.
[illegible]
Sir Christopher Hyld-
[illegible]
Tho. Nicholas, esq
[illegible]
Sir Rob. Bevill,
Sir Rob. Payne.
[illegible]
Sir Hen. St. John.
[illegible]

*St. Alban's.*
Sir Tho. Richardson,
[illegible]

*Canterbury.*
[illegible]
H. Clerck, esq. rec. ib.
[illegible]
Sir Fras. Vane,
Sir Fras. Barnham

*[illegible]*
James Palmer, esq.
[illegible]

*Stamford.*
Sir Rich. Cecill,
[illegible]
Sir Clement Cotterill
[illegible]

*Leicester.*
[illegible]
of the duchy,
[illegible]
Geo. Garret, esq
Roger Downes, esq.

*Clitheroe.*
Sir Tho. Walmesley,
[illegible]
Sir Gilbert Jerrard, bt.
[illegible]
Sir Tho. Lowe,
[illegible]
R. Bateman, merchant,
[illegible]

MONMOUTH.
[illegible]

NORTHAMPTONSHIRE.
[illegible]
created a peer,
[illegible]

*Higham Ferrers.*
Sir Cha. Mountague.
[illegible]
Sir Geo. Chaworth.
[illegible]

*Castle Rising.*
[illegible]

NORTHUMBERLAND.
[illegible]
Sir Hen. Anderson,
[illegible]
Rob. Brandling, esq.
[illegible]

*Oxford University.*
[illegible]

[illegible] Printed image digitised by the [illegible] Southampton Library Digitisation [illegible]

Sir John Danvers,
[illegible]

*Woodstock.*
Sir James Whitlock,
[illegible]

Sir Nicholas Carew.
[illegible]

*Ryegate.*
Sir Tho. Glenham,
Rob. Lewis, esq.

*Guilford.*
[illegible]

Sir Wm. Bowyer,
[illegible]

*Litchfield*
[illegible]

John Ferrers.
[illegible]

Sir Rob. Vernon,
[illegible]

Sir John Heyward,
[illegible]

*Ludlow.*
[illegible]

Fra. Nichols, esq
[illegible]

SOUTHAMPTON.
[illegible]
Sir John Jephson.
[illegible]
Sir Rich. Titchborne,
W. Savage, esq. rec. ib.
[illegible]

*Yarmouth.*
[illegible]
Sir Rich. Norton,
[illegible]
Sir Wm. Uvedale
[illegible]
Sir Rich. Gifford,
[illegible]
Sir Wm. Harrington,
Sir Tho. Barrington.
[illegible]
Sir Rob. Oxenbridge
[illegible]
Sir Rob. Crane,
Tho. Clenche, esq.
[illegible]
Cha. Glemham, esq
[illegible]
Edw. Osborne, esq.
[illegible]

*Bury St. Edmund's*
[illegible]
Sir John Crompton
[illegible]

*Bristol.*
[illegible]
John Guy, ald. ib.
[illegible]

SUSSEX.
[illegible]
Rich. Amhurst, esq.
[illegible]
After his being made
[illegible]
Sir Arthur Ingram,
[illegible]

[illegible]

*Downton.*
[illegible]

*Calne.*
[illegible]
Sir Henry Ley,
[illegible]

*Chippenham.*
[illegible]
Rich. Harrison, esq.
[illegible]
Rich. Digges, esq.
[illegible]
household
[illegible]

*Co[illegible]*
S[illegible]
[illegible]s.
*B[illegible]*
Sir C[illegible]
Jo[illegible]
*B[illegible]*
[illegible]
*H[illegible]*
S[illegible] esq.
Ja[illegible] esq.
*H[illegible]*
Sir Th[illegible]
Ed[illegible] esq.
*R[illegible]*
Emanuel [illegible] esq.
John A[illegible] esq.
*R[illegible]*
Sir Per[illegible]d.
[illegible]
h[illegible] esq.
*H[illegible]*
Sir Pe[illegible]
R[illegible] LL.D.
*D[illegible]*
Sir H[illegible]
Sir R[illegible]
*N[illegible]*
Sir L[illegible]
J[illegible] B[illegible] knt.
[illegible]

WALES.

*A[illegible]*
R[illegible] esq.
*[illegible]*
S[illegible] esq.
*[illegible]*
Sir [illegible]
*B[illegible]*
Sir W[illegible]

*CARDIGAN.*
Sir R[illegible]
*C[illegible]*
W[illegible] esq.
[illegible]
Sir [illegible]
*[illegible]*
Hen[illegible] esq.
*[illegible]*
John [illegible] esq.
*C[illegible]*
Nich[illegible] knight
*D[illegible]*
Sir J[illegible], jun.
*F[illegible]*
Hugh Mo[illegible], esq.
*F[illegible]*
Sir Roger Mostyn
*F[illegible]*
Wm. R[illegible], esq.
*Gl[illegible]*
Wm. P[illegible] esq.
*C[illegible]*
Wm. He[illegible], esq.
*M[illegible]*
Wm. S[illegible] esq.
*[illegible]*
James W[illegible] esq.
*P[illegible]*
Lewis P[illegible] knt.
*H[illegible]*
[illegible]
*M[illegible]*
Sir W[illegible]
*M[illegible]*
F[illegible] esq.
*[illegible]*
James [illegible] esq.
*[illegible]*
Charles [illegible] knt.

*[illegible]* On [illegible] the [illegible] have [illegible] the [illegible] Speech [illegible] The [illegible] J[illegible] W[illegible] [illegible] the [illegible] speech [illegible] so great a [illegible] and [illegible] sustained [illegible] for [illegible] F[illegible] it [illegible] M[illegible] and [illegible] correspond[illegible] e[illegible] with the Latin Abstract in the Journals.—

"[illegible] spe[illegible] and [illegible] the [illegible] care [illegible] this [illegible] own person [illegible] there have been sessions of parl[illegible] before this [illegible] the means [illegible] Lower H[illegible] o[illegible] t[illegible] in regard [illegible] to make perfection, so [illegible] pleased God [illegible] [illegible] a body the [illegible] 3 [illegible] the [illegible] [illegible] Parl[illegible] about [illegible] to re[illegible] a body [illegible] and [illegible] I have [illegible] I have [illegible] W[illegible] the P[illegible] have [illegible] great [illegible] It [illegible] next [illegible] the C[illegible] and [illegible] part of [illegible] K[illegible] for the [illegible] are called [illegible] to give him your [illegible] There is [illegible] the House of Commons [illegible] the present estate of the country, and [illegible] king [illegible] their advice, [illegible] being most [illegible] it, and also pet[illegible] to [illegible] and re[illegible]. Ye are the [illegible] of [illegible] also to him, to supply his [illegible] and [illegible] of [illegible]. Here [illegible] are to [illegible] to supply his wants, and [illegible] and [illegible] and peace, and this is that I boldly say, and am not

[illegible]

[illegible] away crowns. Next, I was not a fit judge be[illegible] he said to Moses, 'who made thee a judge [illegible] that they should judge whether I were a king or not.—Lastly, because I had been a med[illegible] unproper; and yet I left not off, so far as nature compelled me, to admit his good. I permitted a Voluntary Contribution to preserve the Palatinate, which came to a great sum; for that purpose I borrowed also 75,000l. of [illegible] tribution: and I am now to take care for a [illegible] will leave no travel untried to obtain a happy peace; but I thought good to be armed against [illegible] with a sword in my hand. Now I shall labour to preserve the rest; wherein I declare, that [illegible] blood also, but I will get it for him: and this [illegible] trust your cares; and I think if a man could see all your hearts in one face, it would testify [illegible] could; and if they prove unjust, I will not spare [illegible] gone this 8 or 9 years; but I think the fault [illegible] hath been the ill govt. of those whom I have trusted under me: for Bounty, I will not make every day a Christmas; and yet it may be I [illegible] is not the errand: deal with me as I deserve at your hands; I will leave nothing undone that becomes a just king, if you deal with me accordingly. I know this parl. hath been of [illegible] coming, when I know not the state of this [illegible] may be there was a misleading, and a misun[illegible] name which in my nature I abhor; which caused a dissolution; now you have the advantage, that I call you out of my free motion, [illegible]

I hope I want not good subjects; and I assure [illegible]

"May it please your maj.; I am struck with [illegible] your speech. It is a saying of Solomon, somewhat dark, but apt, 'That the words of the [illegible] through and through; first into the memory, [illegible] in a chancellor to be silent, when such a king [illegible] of his mind, as for me to speak. Only, sir, [illegible] and lower house briefly in two words: 'nosce teipsum.' I would have the parl. know itself; 1st, in a modest carriage to so gracious a so[illegible] may be as good in the conclusion; that it may be generative, begetting others hereafter. [illegible] ble custom, to elect one to be your common mouth or Speaker; for which purpose you are [illegible] or having concluded, the [illegible]

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] declared [illegible] the Lords had consider[illegible] [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] by hearing the rest of the lords, but the right [illegible] acknowledgment [illegible] committed in his [illegible]. Afterwards the lord [illegible] to the Prince, and then, in presence of his highness and many of the lords standing by, the aforesaid two lords were reconciled. The lord chancellor being returned to his place, openly reported this matter to the house; and added, that if either of the said lords so reconciled, should at any time hereafter, do, or offer to the other, any wrong, contrary to this reconcilement, the party so offending would be deemed guilty of an high offence to the prince and contempt of the house.

[illegible] 29. A Message was sent from the Lords to the Commons, [illegible]

[illegible] we shall now relate what passed in the House of Commons during this time.

*[illegible] Commons [illegible] Papists.*] [illegible] said, "I [illegible] [illegible] moved [illegible] but not [illegible] that extravagant speeches [illegible] should be passed [illegible]. For there were many [illegible] of Jesuits and Se[illegible] [illegible] Moved to petition the king to [illegible] the laws in execution against them." [illegible] be appointed to search the vaults and cellars under the parliament house, twice a week. Their numbers here daily might prove dangerous, and their malice like to be the principal cause of the ruin of the king of Bohemia. Their making bonfires and rejoicing [illegible]. But hoped that the king yet remained the Lord's Anointed, and that he would be again established; and be the means to ruin the Papists. That they that eat their God would eat us, &c." These and many such expressions were thrown out against the Papists. And it was at last agreed for a Conference with the Lords to join with them in a Petition to the king to put the laws in force against them.

*Debate on the Supply.*] Mr. Secretary

a Supply, in these his urgent necessities, and

subjects; except the Benevolence, none in 10

household, navy, ordnance, Ireland, &c. The

only, but to kingdom also; for they are relatives

just causes, had hitherto been neutral for Bo-

of no delay, one day's neglect may overthrow it.

ed all but Heydelberg and 2 or 3 other places; Bohemia defeated; all the confederate princes

been referred to a Council of War who have

nary embassage was ready; but the best treaty was with sword in hand.—That all Christendom

Countries, Sweden and Poland; the Turk had

time of Solyman; which was to be ready by

sores; the king had promised a gracious hear-

of it, betrayeth his country for which he is trusted. Lastly, he moved for a com-

Sir *Wm. Cope* spoke next. "He professed

held a year ago; but now it was sitting to look

nate, and for the king's other wants; but a Committee was not fit now for any of them. That he expected a committee of the whole house would sit every afternoon; to consider

on. This to be done by a general committee;

Sir *John Davys.* "I expected not thi motion, this day; but I think it fit, since it is now moved. All men run together to quench a fire; which is our case. Though we are not so here; yet the Palatinate is on fire; Religion is on fire; and all other countries on fire. Though

them; commissions, levying, paying in, &c.

sion for a Supply, since the Conquest. I shall mention 4 other causes. 1. For Recovery of

Ed. I. 3. For the recovery of France. 4. For saving of Ireland; but, the recovery of the Pa-

Jerusalem, there was a perpetual war, for 100

Pope's commands and imposture; which was

cursed, but, his end, to usurp their temporal

for it. This was a noble work, and better than the French did; who left their king here, seve-

then in question, as it is now.—So for the wars in France; the title was just, and though reco-

at all. But, the Palatinate otherwise; this is

6 Subsidies and 12 fifteenths given here. Yet,

endured Spanish tyranny. Therefore, I move for giving this very day; and no doubt, God

Sir *George Moore* said, "That since diverse

Proclamation before parl.; and since, by the king's own mouth, We live under laws made by ourselves; other nations are governed by [illegible] matters of a parl.; Grievances and Supply the [illegible] pointed, to consider of both; but no speech [illegible]

Sir *James Perrot*. "If we differ with our [illegible] no precedency. That there was a Procla- [illegible] was, also, a restraint put on petitioning in religious matters. Moved for a Petition to the [illegible] pass of the prerogative: even, for the Palati- [illegible] State. A committee may form such a Petition, [illegible] against conference with the Lords; 'Frustra [illegible] He truly honoured all the Lords in general; [illegible] dice. Moved for a committee to consider [illegible]

The *Master of the Rolls*. "I commend [illegible] be. I hope that none will abuse this liberty of [illegible] dom; all who have spoken have done it to one end; every one hath a special interest in [illegible] lief is thought necessary by all; the question [illegible] speedily, it will do no good; necessary delays, [illegible] it be received. I agree that Supply and Griev- [illegible] aty is a law, against which there is no reason- [illegible] king hath more desire to redress our Griev- [illegible]

Sir *Edward Coke*. "Virtus silere in con- [illegible] [illegible] tholics; it was a grievance complained of the [illegible] saints were not executed; I would have all those Grievances, 8 Jac. reviewed, of which that was one; if any new increased to take [illegible] God then, and in 1588, delivered us for reli- [illegible] cern the whole kingdom; which, like a circle [illegible] not our liberties, by petitioning for liberty to treat of Grievances, &c. No proclamation can [illegible] a proclamation comes against this; the law is [illegible] Stannary court; but was fined after the parl. [illegible] Thereupon, a law ensued, for freedom of speech [illegible] Grievances may be set down; those that are nought in radice, or tractu temporis, first. The [illegible] the subject; therefore the king can be no beggar. And, if all the corn be brought to the right mill, I will venture my whole estate, that the king's will defray his ordinary charges. [illegible] question was put, Whether a Petition to the [illegible] should be referred to a committee of the whole house? And it was resolved to go upon them [illegible]

[illegible] Mr. *Glanvile* saith, that there is a general [illegible] Scarcity of Money; which is a business worthy [illegible] it best to consider, 1. Whether there be such [illegible] there is a want and scarcity of Coin, because of the general complaint of all men; for that [illegible] the want of money are divers; more than, he doubteth, can be found out, or will be revealed. Some say, there is too much coin carried [illegible]

bath.

Sir *Tho. Hoby.* Sheppard said, that, if a

Sir *Jeremy Horsey.* That in 35 Eliz. there

and proceedeth 'per importunitatem impe-

[illegible]

hath divers prerogatives, as 'nullum tempus,'

[illegible]

keepers.

[illegible] our gold is; which was raised; and so was [illegible]

[illegible] surplusage.—6. The French merchants for [illegible]

[illegible] for 3l. a piece; and they that sell them will [illegible]

[illegible] but tobacco; nay, that will not pay for all the [illegible] 120,000l. for tobacco every year. There is [illegible] own country wines are sold; and yet we per- [illegible]

[illegible] Money; and 'felix qui potuit rerum cognos- [illegible] the Dutchmen's money is a great cause of this [illegible]

[illegible] seas.

[illegible] doth not export above 30,000l.; and that the [illegible]

Sir *Edw. Coke.* The year that I was sheriff [illegible] so low a rate, of that it doth in foreign countries (and foreign coin being prohibited here) [illegible] shall bring in money here shall lose 8 per cent.

It was then ordered, "That a Committee [illegible]

Feb. 27. In a Committee on the above bu- [illegible]

Sir *Edw. Coke.* That 10,000l. per ann. was [illegible]

Sir *Edw. Sandys.* There are 3 principal [illegible]

[illegible] out of Spain, is, for that we have our return in tobacco; which, if we would bring out of [illegible] worth 2 years since but 4s. the pound, and it [illegible] last year for 8s. That it will be a double pro- [illegible] return for our merchandize in tobacco, but in [illegible] cause that there is a greater Scarcity of Money than there then was. Another cause is, [illegible] termitted custom and the like: and that the [illegible]

Mr. *Guy.* There is not now so much lead [illegible] is imposed on it is so great. At a monastery [illegible] standard for money, is as well the cause that [illegible]

[illegible] dia Co.

Mr. *Secretary.* There may not be a prohi- [illegible] from them: for that, by the Treaty with Spain, [illegible] kingdoms, and their merchants, or others, for [illegible] theirs: nay, it would be happy for this king- [illegible] therefore desire a present message to the [illegible] grosseth to himself what should be free for all [illegible] doors, and keeps none but a shepherd and his [illegible] mittee of Grievances is of opinion, that a mes- [illegible]

[illegible] sent the reader with a narrative of the proceedings against sir Giles Moupesson, a member of parl. a Projector, and a great Dealer and [illegible]

[illegible]

March 3. A Message from the Lower [illegible] Commons had entered into a due considera- [illegible] a Conference about them; leaving the time, [illegible] house; the time and place, March 5th. at 2 in the afternoon, in the Painted Chamber. Sir [illegible] mons, as above; and that their lordships would give their best aid and assistance for finding out [illegible] to explain his message a little further; and de- [illegible] vided for a conference so soon: but that his meaning was, That if their lordships would be [illegible] would prepare the business so as it might give [illegible] suspend the time, till the Commons were ready for the Conference.

[illegible] quaint them, "That they had appointed a [illegible] the first, to confer with a number of the Com- [illegible] for and apprehend the said sir Giles, if he should [illegible]

him, to take care that all officers of the customs [illegible] to make the like search for this extraordinary [illegible] desired that a more private search might be made for the offender. Accordingly, a war- [illegible] Speaker; and the lord chamberlain, the earls [illegible] been deceived and abused by this offender, sir [illegible] matter of cavil, and that he desired only a legal trial by due course of law.

[illegible] said sir Giles standeth charged; which they had [illegible] to give further direction, about delivering them [illegible] with.

*Motion for an Academy for Youth of Qua-* [illegible] ingham, moved, "That since the Education of Youth, especially of Quality and Worth, is a matter of great consequence; therefore to provide that such persons, in their tender [illegible] and tender age: and for a free and voluntary [illegible]

[illegible]

then, how to be maintained, and to what kind [illegible]

[illegible]

in certain papers sealed up, also, a trunk and a [illegible]

[illegible]

of the Commons in all its points; and will give [illegible]

[illegible]

Giles, to have a Patent to reform abuses in divers innkeepers, and a warrant to compound [illegible]

[illegible]

several judges, for the point of law; and to de- [illegible]

[illegible]

vised the same to be returned into his maj.'s [illegible]

tute divers persons to manage it; but that this [illegible]

[illegible]

others, pro tempore; that the authority grant- [illegible]

the subject; and, lastly, that much imposture [illegible]

*Order to prevent Lords from speaking in* [illegible]

[illegible] the house, "That, at the said Conference

[illegible] the Commons [illegible]

[illegible]

Spencer and agreed to, "That no Lords of this house are to be called Great Lords, be- [illegible]

[illegible]

to desire a conference, and after a long stay, [illegible]

their house to meet them at 9 in the morning.

[illegible]

conceived it a privilege, belonging unto them, to protest only upon their honours, and not to [illegible]

[illegible]

which they thought the prejudice of [illegible]

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

had invaded, to their disadvantage; by en- [illegible] errand to him; and therefore besought him [illegible] said, "That he understood it so, but de- [illegible] their degree, a far greater charge. Adding, [illegible]

March 19. The names of the committee [illegible] the earl of Arundele, "That the whole house [illegible] bate, it was concluded and agreed to, That the [illegible] said Lords of the committee; and should take [illegible]

[illegible] house; he told them, That their proceedings [illegible] and all the Lords. And the lord of Bucks, [illegible] this effect: he first said, "That the king was both passive and active in these affairs: passive [illegible] who would seek for their punishment."

[illegible] viz. "That whereas, at a meeting for a confer- [illegible] only all letters-patent and other writings, but [illegible] enter into dispute, or to give any verbal inter- [illegible] rity for the same: they do now humbly im- [illegible] ships shall appoint; and they will come pre- [illegible]

"The Lords have considered of this their re- [illegible]

"That as every man ought to have a high [illegible] loved error, nor will contemn order; and [illegible]

[illegible] grants of Monopolies for Gold and Silver- [illegible] e nature have been questioned in former [illegible] lord to grant the like, much more for a king [illegible] swallowed up thereby: that it was contrary to [illegible] their care in these 3 points, viz. 1. Not to [illegible] preserve the king's honour; 3. To restore the [illegible] bill should be read, until the business of sir [illegible]

*Proceedings relative to the Grievances.*] [illegible] Thread, was read. The lord chancellor open- [illegible] conceived to be five: 1st, the Patents, which [illegible] of these points to begin; and that it might be [illegible] whole house should be a committee, ad libitum; [illegible] as a peer. It was moved by the lord Spencer, [illegible]

[illegible] the patentees and their agents; and, as there [illegible] because the Lower House could not, nor did [illegible] on oath, therefore that the witnesses might [illegible] pointed for the 3 Committees, with the order of the times for sitting. [illegible] knt.; sir Fran. Goodwin, knt.; John Drake, esq; and Rd. Weston, esq. A message was [illegible] for answer, "That as it was a matter of great [illegible] teth here is as a judge, and hath a vote nega- [illegible] ing it, and can testify in it; but, if their know- [illegible] served with a subpœna ad testificandum in time [illegible] wherein we desire them to join with us, than [illegible]

[illegible] Lords, and so hinder our proceedings in the great business we have in hand: that we may [illegible]

Sir *Edw. Coke.* That for a member of this house to be examined on oath in a business [illegible] desired: that we were best to answer, that we [illegible] that there is no necessity in it, because the [illegible] to answer by word without oath to affirm what [illegible]

The *Chancellor of the Dutchy.* That, if we will not have a member of this house to be [illegible] cellor, which is principally testified by two [illegible] the delivery of the corruption and bribes, that [illegible] worthy to sit as members in this house.

Mr. *Alford* holdeth it a preposterous thing to be called as witnesses in a business, where we [illegible]

March 17. A Message from the Lower House, by sir E. Coke, and others, intimating, "That [illegible] the Grievances complained against that wretch[illegible] to be sworn; and therefore that house will not [illegible] aforesaid 5 members desiring a day's respite to [illegible]

March 19. A Memorandum is entered, That [illegible] the Lord Chancellor, a commission was awarded to sir James Ley, knt. and bart. lord chief [illegible]

The same day a Message was sent from the [illegible] "That [illegible] that house have sent up to the Lords a bill of Subsidies; which, as it passed that house with [illegible] the king a Supply.

[illegible] that house, and, at last put to two questions, [illegible] engrossed, or not? which last was carried for [illegible] mentioned. We cannot omit, that a Message [illegible] bill. "That he returned them thanks for their [illegible] ing him their hearts and all."—When this bill for granting two entire Subsidies, by the temporality, was read a first time by the Lords, [illegible] of the act, which declares, "That since it is not usual to grant a Subsidy at the beginning of a parl. they desire it may not be drawn into a precedent, nor be prejudicial hereafter, as [illegible] or otherwise, for the speedy levying of the [illegible]

[illegible] brought by Sir Rob. Philips, and others, "That, [illegible] found Abuses in certain eminent persons; for the which they desire a Conference, that such [illegible] well pleased to accept of the Conference required; the committee to be of their whole [illegible] Chamber.

[illegible] the Conference; and, being to make the Report, told the lords that he desired respite till [illegible] day concludes with a Memorandum, That [illegible] this matter, at that time.

[illegible]

to look back a little into the Journals of the [illegible] against so renowned a man, as sir Francis Bu- [illegible] lips made a Report from the Committee, ap- [illegible] parts; the person against whom; the matter; [illegible] a man excellently well endowed with all parts [illegible] nature of the evidence to prove it; but, as this [illegible] left the time of cessation to that house: that his maj. named Tuesday, the 10th of April, if they thought proper; but this of their own choice."—His majesty taking notice of the [illegible] "That he was very sorry a person so much advanced by him, and sitting in so high a place, [illegible] would, if it be thought fitting here, grant a [illegible] tioned, and hoped he would be cleared; but, [illegible] fully taken by the Commons; but, the matter [illegible] ed; the place he holds magnified, from whence bounty, justice, and mercy were to be distri- [illegible] intrusted; whither all great Causes were drawn, [illegible]

[illegible] nent place; of which two Cases were alleged, [illegible] lord chanc. 100l. which he delivered to his [illegible] chancellor. The proceedings in this business [illegible] letters, and delivered them to the lord chanc.; but could n[illegible] chancellor told him, that 'if he importuned [illegible] Hastings related it long since to sir Geo. Montague. 2. The lord chanc. fearing this would [illegible] thereof; which was not voluntary, but urged. [illegible] mised redress for the wrongs done to him." 5. [illegible] being a suit depending in chancery, between [illegible] former presented his lordship, a little after he [illegible] of 50l. and above: and afterwards he delivered to sir George Hastings and sir Rd. Young, 400l. [illegible] Rd. Young presented it; and his lordship took [illegible] only enriched him, but had laid a tye upon his [illegible] ings, and one Merefill, a scrivener, thus far, That he took up 700l. for mr. Egerton; who then told him that a great part of it was to be given to the lord chanc.; and that mr. Egerton afterwards told him that the 400l. in gold [illegible] a bishop's character was touched in this affair; [illegible] to the lord chancellor: his lordship first de- [illegible] stand to the said award, and a new bill was [illegible] assigned unto sir Rowland Egerton; and he o put the same in suit in his lordship's name. The bishop of Landaff, as a friend unto Edw [illegible] to procure a stay of the decree upon that [illegible] persons; and a recognizance of 10,000l. was [illegible] performance thereof. The bishop's share of [illegible] be decreed to mr. Egerton, and out of that the money to be levied; and, if this matter was [illegible] herein; but his lordship denied to meddle in [illegible] failed in that also: so that the good they intended for mr. Egerton was not effected; and [illegible]

The treasurer also declared, "That the [illegible] concerns a person of so great eminency, it [illegible] his lordship had written a letter to the house; [illegible]

*Lord Bacon's Letter to the Lords.*] "To [illegible] it is no feigning nor fainting, but sickness both [illegible] am not far from heaven, whereof I feel the first fruits: and, because, whether I live or die, I [illegible] my mind at this time, in great part off from [illegible] Answer in a higher court; your lordships would [illegible] For I shall not, by the grace of God, trick up [illegible] I may be allowed to except to the witnesses [illegible] muster of them, especially, against a Judge that makes 2000 decrees and orders in a year, (not [illegible] I may answer them according to the rules of [illegible] and favours; I pray God to bless your councils and persons. And so I rest, your ldps. humble [illegible]

Accusation of Brocage, in a Bribe intended to the lord chancellor, in mr. Egerton's cause. [illegible] grieved; a man weak and mad with affliction; [illegible] denied it; at last the party himself requested him, at whose tears he yielded thus far; that [illegible] ledge unto him a recognizance of 6000l. it was [illegible] to be enrolled; he was only trusted with it for [illegible] were to be [illegible]

[illegible]

sit as a committee, whereupon the lord chief

[illegible]

tice returned to his seat as Speaker; and it

[illegible]

the Commons, declaring, "That the Lords,

[illegible]

Commons have made use of 3 letters, written

[illegible]

bers of that house, if cause shall require, upon

[illegible]

cordingly. As for the general request, That

[illegible]

message was sent to him to this effect: "That

[illegible]

ing to the right rule of justice; and they should

[illegible]

Lords, "That he returned them humble

[illegible]

cause, and well-wishes to him of success. The

[illegible]

n vour dire, &c. after which he delivered a Pe-

[illegible]

to Chancery; 'cujusquidem tenor sequitur in hæc verba.'

[illegible]

*chancellor Bacon.*] "To the rt. hon. the Lords

[illegible]

Egerton, and his heirs; which said convey-

[illegible]

ment in writing, under his hand and seal, hav-

[illegible]

ity of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] the lord Ellesmere, late lord cha[illegible] [illegible] Heywood-Barnes, being a great part of your [illegible] nefit of a subject to recover his ancient inhe[illegible] oner, by the chancellor, saying, 'Your peti[illegible] e upon him to do your petitioner justice [illegible] l an obligation to his lordship [illegible] 10,000 marks, to stand to his lordship' [illegible] petitioner was, divers times, sent for by Tho[illegible] that is to say, 1000l. for his lordship, [illegible] sir Rowland, who should sue for the same in [illegible] [illegible] any other hath to his use, concerning your [illegible] eth any estate in the lands, to the end your [illegible]

After this Petition was read, mr. Egerton af[illegible]

March 21. At the request of mr. Egerton, [illegible] his Cause, and many more witnesses offering [illegible] the Lord Chancellor, 3 several committees of the Lords were appointed, with a judge, or an eminent counsel, to attend each, to take Exa[illegible] be urged to accuse himself.—A Message was brought from the Commons by sir Thos. Edmonds, and others, "That the Commons ac[illegible] At the same time he added, "That they had sent to their lordships a bill against Relators, [illegible] was read a first time, notwithstanding the [illegible]

March 21, P. M. Sixteen more witnesses [illegible] take much time, it was agreed that the com[illegible] [illegible] and the d[illegible] on which they were

[illegible]

consisted, he said, of two points, the one mat-[illegible] year."

[illegible]
mittee appointed to enquire into the Griev-
[illegible]
made subject to a base of fee 5s.; and, in
[illegible]
only tried two suits. Lastly, his lordship deli-
[illegible]
delay the time, but their lordships were not to
[illegible]
in the execution thereof, that the authority
[illegible]
ceed all kinds of warrants; of which there are
[illegible]
razed; and the other hath a date by a new
[illegible]
That several houses were violently broke up
[illegible]
Silver-Thread they sold, and to whom. That sir Giles confessed divers of these wrongs, and
[illegible]
of Gold and Silver-Thread was much sophisticated, since the grant of the sole manufacture
[illegible]
obtained a commission to himself, to call all officers before him; by virtue whereof he fetch-
[illegible]
warrants, and the abuses in the execution, are
[illegible]
but as private gentlemen and friends, gave their
[illegible]
down in the said declaration; and, for their
[illegible]

1. Process used by George Geldard, sir Giles
[illegible]
man as his agents: Geldard to be Commis-
[illegible]
man gave the evidence to the Jury, and, though
[illegible]
in their book an Advowson and a Rectory at 4d. per ann.; and lands, called Pease Marsh, at 10s. a year; which was affirmed by sir Geo. Moore, the tenant to it, to contain 700 acres, and to be better worth than 300l. a year. That
[illegible]
his book; whereby, his vexing the subject, to fill the same, might continue 7 years. Lastly,
[illegible]
and moved the house, "That care might be
[illegible]

[illegible] the king and commonwealth; and to new pa- [illegible] thought fit. He shewed further, "that the [illegible] consider how the multitude of others in the [illegible] during his life, but to provide for the future; [illegible] Concealments was first granted to the said sir Giles. It was ill fore-seen, that a man of his [illegible] taze out for his own profit; but, at that time, [illegible] value at small rates; which, when his lordship [illegible] first allow of. That, thereupon, the said sir Giles, in the hearing of his lordship, delivered [illegible]

"That, although the Proofs given before the [illegible] his agents, for their misdemeanors, were good and manifold, yet, their lordships will hear the [illegible] That a collection be made of all the proofs, concerning sir Giles only; which being read [illegible] fight is an eviction in law: and for that the expectation thereof is great as well as the [illegible]

A debate arising, in what manner to pro- [illegible] made a motion, "That by the ancient Orders [illegible] the Lords; and many foul abuses proved [illegible] committed for a contempt against them, and [illegible] chancellor, a message was sent from the Lords [illegible] Subsidy bills: also, to acquaint them, that the [illegible] cure a Conference with them, about the safe [illegible] them of that house; and that they come pre- [illegible] in." Answer returned, "That the Commons [illegible] Subsidies annexed to it. Which commission [illegible]

[illegible] from all parts of the country: I will be never a whit the slower to do my part for the execu- [illegible] cular corporation that is a member of it: and [illegible] not to derogate or infringe any of the liberties or privileges of this house, but rather to for- [illegible] as I have done, and will ever be ready to do. [illegible] I think, I will afterwards freely leave the judg- [illegible] fore: and I pray you be not jealous, that I will [illegible] govt. can warrant, I will allow. For I acknow- [illegible] you, neither can I give you any greater assu- [illegible] land. This I profess, and take comfort in, [illegible] house of yours, I have always found it respec- [illegible] it will be accounted a happiness for you, that [illegible] then remember that he was once a member of your house; and so be bound to maintain all [illegible] at this time talks so much of Bribes, I have [illegible]

[illegible] ther formality will leave you time for proceed- [illegible] freely with me, in giving me, as a free gift, two [illegible] ed by me; and since I cannot yet retribute by a general pardon, which hath by form usually [illegible] I can do (which I can forbear no longer) is to [illegible] ing the Alehouses, I would have to be left to [illegible] for it was a kind of false coin. I have already freed the persons that were in prison: I will [illegible] instead of a pardon. All these three I will [illegible] you against Informers: I desire you, my lords, [illegible] For I remember, that since the beginning of [illegible] —And now I confess, that when I looked be- [illegible] the midst of them, I found them all bitten [illegible]

[illegible]

long debate, the lords agreed upon a Judgment against sir Giles: the earl of Arundel [illegible] against him hereafter, if more matter, or matter of a higher nature, was found out.—Accordingly a Message was sent from the Lords to [illegible] morning." Answer returned, "That they [illegible] time the lord treasurer reported, "That, ac- [illegible] words; adding, "That the Lords had taken the right way to catch a king, by speaking to [illegible]

The *Lord Chief Justice*, as Speaker of the house of peers, answered: "Mr. Speaker, the [illegible] plaints brought unto them against sir Giles [illegible] ships received several instructions from them; and, thereupon, proceeding by examination of [illegible] hereafter, their lordships will proceed against [illegible] lords against the said sir Giles is, And, the Lords [illegible] children; the ceremonies of degradation to be [illegible] court, whensoever he shall be taken. 2. That he shall stand perpetually in the degree of a [illegible] posses. 3. That his testimony be received in no [illegible]

[illegible] Westminster. 7. That the king's majesty shall [illegible] a sermon day throughout all England, especi- [illegible] town to resort unto it." Ordered further, and decreed, "That in all future parliaments, the [illegible] March, 'in perpetuam rei memoriam.' [illegible]

[illegible] Chamber, for the conference; before the Lords [illegible] tion from the house. "To make a short re- [illegible] sson; and that, out of his grace and favour [illegible] nt, perpetual banishment. That the lords [illegible] gainst Mompesson, should be drawn up by [illegible]

Then the Lords sent a message to the Commons [illegible] happiness in their departure and return, [illegible]

[illegible]

take examinations in the Lord Chancellor's [illegible]

[illegible] Bacon and sir Edw. Villiers.] April 17. The [illegible]

[illegible]

he was a member of the lower house, his [illegible]

[illegible]

The [illegible] at arms, after [illegible]

[illegible]

but to prove it to be no monopoly; he denied

[illegible]

colour a monopoly; he did it in duty to the

[illegible]

take bonds, and signed a docquet, shewing his

[illegible]

city thereupon; whereas the recorder was not acquainted with it. *Resp.* He utterly denied

[illegible]

recorder to acquaint the city; but denied that

[illegible]

many signed by him, he confesses it; but, till

[illegible]

lordships favour. Adding, that if ever he de-

[illegible]

patent than by any other; and, as he takes it,

[illegible]

said, "That he thought himself happy in these mists of his maj.'s disfavour, that he was pleased

[illegible]

have a particular of his charge in writing, and time to answer the same; that he might have

[illegible]

and to his house, to search his papers; for that

[illegible]

his actions for 4, 5, and 7 years of his serving

[illegible]

make his further answer; which was more than

[illegible]

was made for it accordingly.

[illegible]

a speech to them to this effect: He first made a short repetition of the speech, used by him,

[illegible]

unto him, on Friday last, viz. "That, at that time, he made a recantation unto them of his

[illegible]

ending of a parl. But that the Commons did

[illegible]

as occasion shall require. His maj. did put

[illegible]

parl. which were these: To relieve his wants

[illegible]

years; and for the relief of the torn estate of

[illegible]

his maj. told them that he had more cause to

[illegible]

cured a short truce and did hope to get a ge-

[illegible]

country again; but was to be at great charges

[illegible]

sidies may be granted at the next session; lest when the same are given, his maj. might dis-

[illegible]

time the important business now intended cannot be finished: his maj. protested before God,

[illegible]

of all informers; and, amongst other good laws

[illegible]

a reformation of abuses by Informers, and

[illegible]

Grievances, his maj. commended those for public grievances; protesting, that he would pre-

[illegible]

[illegible] ty of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] punished, so a libel against his maj. in open [illegible]

[illegible] complained of and redressed; which are, That [illegible]

[illegible] this session; and added, That when he had [illegible]

[illegible] The king said, That it seemed strange to him, that sir Henry should be examined upon any [illegible] Thread; for his maj. did not conceive that any [illegible]

[illegible] mato against a multitude of Innkeepers; and [illegible]

[illegible] sir Henry, before he questioned him; and said [illegible]

[illegible] signed a pardon for murder also.—That sir [illegible]

[illegible] inconvenient. Hereupon his maj. intended to [illegible]

the said sir Henry, with many deprecations, [illegible]

[illegible] from him: yet, at last, he made a good sub-[illegible]

[illegible] message from the Commons to this effect: first, "That the Commons desire a re-conference [illegible]

[illegible] Bennet, knt. late a member of their house, but now expelled by them for the same; that they desire a conference also about him." Agreed [illegible]

[illegible] the whole house, "That h. r. h. the prince [illegible]

April 24, p. m. His royal highness signified to [illegible]

[illegible] presently read, in haec verba:

[illegible] ment in the Upper House assembled. The [illegible]

"May it please your lordships, I shall hum-[illegible]

[illegible] tion of that which I shall now write: for words [illegible]

[illegible] I hope, obtained of your lordships) as a protection, to all that I shall say, I shall go on; but with a very strange entrance, as may seem to your lordships, at first: for, in the midst of a state of as great affliction as, I think, a mortal [illegible]

The next, That after this example, it is like that judges will fly from any thing in the likeness of corruption (though it were at a great distance) as from a serpent; which tends to the purging of the courts of justice, and re- [illegible] and wrought, I take no small comfort. But to [illegible] and his lieutenant: I do understand there hath [illegible] fication; and therefore I have chosen one only [illegible] mission and Confession which I shall now make unto your lordships, I hope I may say, and justify with Job, in these words, 'I have not [illegible] tion which I will use.—It rests, therefore, that without fig-leaves I do ingenuously confess and acknowledge, that having understood the par- [illegible] and memory: I find matter sufficient and full, [illegible] me. Neither will I trouble your lordships by singling those particulars which I think might [illegible] nullibus una?' Neither will I prompt your [illegible] dits of the witnesses. Neither will I represent to your lordships, how far a defence might, in divers [illegible] cumstances; but only leave these things to [illegible] ships as judges, I shall say a few words unto [illegible] nary course of courts, or precedents, in points [illegible] which I shall move, might be contrary to your [illegible] a reformation) I should not seek it. But herein I beseech your lordships to give me leave to [illegible] his general: not many years after, the like se- [illegible]

[illegible] senate, spread: whereupon Livy maketh this [illegible] is a great downfall, and may serve, I hope, in [illegible] your house; and never such a prince, whose [illegible] will your lordships forget, that there are 'Vitia temporis,' as well as 'vitia hominis;' and the [illegible] first cast in: and, for my part, I wish it may [illegible] me, as a member of your own body: and one [illegible] ving affections, which, I hope, was not a lightning [illegible]

This Submission being read by the clerk, and [illegible] the house adjourned, 'ad libitum,' for the bet- [illegible] sent to him in writing; was much debated.

Submission, for 3 causes: 1. His lordship con-

it is, is afterwards extenuated in the said Submission; and therefore the lords have sent him

“ I. In the cause between sir Rowland

the lord chancellor received 500l. on the

George Hastings, Ralph Merefeild, and Tris-

Hody and Hody, he received a dozen of buttons of the value of 50l. a fortnight after the

of sir Tho. Perient and John Churchill; who speaks of a greater value by the report of

bond, at one time; and the like sum at ano-

ause, likewise, he had in the same cause 100l. for sir John Lenthal's part: proved by Rd. Scott and Edw. Sherburne.—XI. In a cause

chanc. said it and wrote his letter; on which

lordship decreed Compton to pay Huxley the

from Aubrey 100l.: proved by the depositions

In a cause between Reynell and Peacock, the

diamond ring worth 5 or 600l.: proved by John

the chancellor received of Barker 700l.: proved

There being a reference from his maj. to his lordship, of a business between the grocers and

grocers 200l.: proved by sir Tho. Middleton,

---

* Sir Thomas Coventry, so appointed upon

[illegible]

April 25, p. m. Mr. Baron Denham and [illegible]

[illegible] required his lordship's Answer; who said he [illegible]

The lord chief justice received a letter from the lord chancellor, directed to sir James Ley, [illegible]

[illegible] "That the lord chancellor's Answer was not [illegible] own mouth." Upon this a long debate arose, [illegible] to be sent to this effect, "That their lordships, [illegible] stand upon his defence?"—*Answer.* "That the [illegible] Corruption: to make a particular confession [illegible] submission: but he humbly craves liberty, that [illegible]

[illegible] fore them."—A Petition from sir John Bennett [illegible] and ordered, "That whereas sir John had presented a Petition, setting forth that he was kept a close prisoner, &c. their lordships would [illegible] this security; to give into this court the names [illegible]

[illegible] kept a court, made officers and divers unwar- [illegible]

Sir F. Mitchell being called to the bar, was [illegible] denied and others confessed; and then having leave to speak for himself, he made a discourse [illegible] and Silver-Thread; and that he misliked the [illegible] person told him, weekly, that he had a com- [illegible]

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible]

in their robes, and give sentence against sir Mitchell, in the afternoon; and Fowlis w[illegible]

[illegible]

of the patent of Gold and Silver-Thread; but

[illegible]

threaten these silk-men; but adds, he hath

[illegible]

The lieutenant of the Tower was called on to

[illegible]

sworn to this; and besides it was ordered, That the Earls of Dorset and Warwick, the bp. of Bangor, the lords Hunsden, Walden, and Grey

[illegible]

that his maj. in a late speech in this house, had said, "That the objections of the writs of quo

[illegible]

satisfaction of the reasons thereof. A committee was therefore appointed to wait on his

[illegible]

admit them to his presence; and to inform him,

[illegible]

cers of the crown-office; and how few were le-

[illegible]

appearance at the bar."

*The Lord Chancellor Bacon's Confession.*]

[illegible]

chancellor baron a paper-roll, sealed un-

[illegible]

"Upon advised consideration of the charge,

[illegible]

guilty of Corruption, and do renounce all de-

[illegible]

of your lordships. The particulars I confess

[illegible]

head of the charge against him; but as that

[illegible]

recognizances in 10,000 marks a piece: that

[illegible]

after, the sums mentioned in the charge were

[illegible]

have the award confirmed; and a decree was

[illegible]

ceived the 400l. mentioned in this article, of Egerton; but, as he remembered, it was for

[illegible]

Tho. Monk 100 pieces; but it was long after [illegible] suitors, with furniture for his house.—VIII. As [illegible] value of 800l. of sir John Kenneday; a cabi- [illegible]

[illegible] Vanlore; but looked upon it as a debt, and [illegible]

[illegible] article, of Compton; but looked upon it as a [illegible]

[illegible] —XVII. He confessed his receiving 200l. of [illegible] nature; but thinks this was before any suit be- [illegible] to be worth 5 or 600l. it was not of near that value; though, he confessed, it was too much for a new-year's-gift: he also confessed his re- [illegible] the seal, as a present, and that he afterwards [illegible]

[illegible] Henry Russel 3 or 400l. about a month [illegible]

[illegible] with taking of the French merchants 1000l. to [illegible]

[illegible] vent a suit, propounding such a price as the vintners might gain 6l. a ton; and the king [illegible] a day or two, restrain some of those that were the most stiff, in a messenger's hands; and af- [illegible]

[illegible] —"This Declaration I have [illegible] unto your lordships with a sincere mind; [illegible]

[illegible] have declared them, there is a great deal of corruption and neglect; for which I am hear- [illegible]

[illegible] For extenuation, I will use none concerning [illegible] estate. I never was noted for an avaritious man, and the apostle says, that 'covetousness is the root of all evil.' I hope also that y[illegible]

[illegible] none that are not almost two years old; whereas those that have a habit of cor- [illegible]

[illegible] precedent degrees of amendment, to my present penitency; and, as for my estate, it is so [illegible] satisfy my debts.—And so, fearing I h[illegible]

[illegible]

"FRAN. ST. ALBAN, Canc."

[illegible] "My lords, it is my act, my hand, and my heart, I beseech your lordships to be merciful [illegible] this; which his highness readily condescended to; and the former committee of lords were [illegible]

[illegible] ness reported to the house, "That, according [illegible]

*Further Proceedings against Sir H. Yelverton.* [illegible] the charging sir Henry, in this house, with [illegible] chief justice read the charge, which was made [illegible]

May 2. A new commission from the king [illegible] chief justice of the king's bench, to supply the [illegible] a message to their lordships of a double nature; [illegible] a Signification of what was to be done.—As to [illegible] the lord chamberlain, and the earl of Arundel, [illegible] and delivered the same to his maj., who, by [illegible] effect, he was so far from extenuating or ex- [illegible] jesty's pleasure is, that himself will be the [illegible] ham, since he had besought his maj. that it [illegible] wholly to their lordships.

[illegible] had referred it back to him: wherefore a mo- [illegible] That a committee of the whole house should attend his maj. at his pleasure; and that the [illegible] him: "Whereas it has pleased your maj. in a [illegible] justice upon sir Henry Yelverton, in a matter concerning your own honour; since which time [illegible] resolution; otherwise, this change may strike [illegible] tender and zealous, in our dutiful affections, [illegible]

[illegible] Chancellor to morrow morning; therefore the [illegible] summon him to appear at the bar by 9 o'clock, [illegible]

*The Judgment against the lord Chancellor Bacon.*] May 3. The officers sent to summon [illegible] but found him sick in bed: that notwithstand-

[illegible]

[illegible] in examining of witnesses,

giving judgment upon him, and entering it as [illegible] of judicature; and yet, so to proceed, as that [illegible] having sufficient proof of his speaking the words [illegible] ments ensued on what punishment to inflict upon him; and, amongst the rest, sir Edwin Sandys said, "That the house ought to be well [illegible] in a great part of the christian world: that the [illegible] religion, and consequently, to the state. There [illegible] who was much praised by all her enemies* [illegible] proceeding: was it not for the great business [illegible] but his offence in tongue; for that would [illegible] slander; therefore to punish him with as much [illegible] Commons agreed on a sentence, which the [illegible] two princes; saying in this manner, 'I have heard, that Prague is taken; and Goodman [illegible] their heels, and run away; and, as I have [illegible] most despiteful and scornful manner, with a [illegible]

[illegible] those two princes; and that at other times he [illegible] a part of himself, who is head of the parl. did [illegible] thereof did question him; and thereupon so far [illegible] place there, called Bolton's Ward; and shall [illegible] the pillory, from 9 until 11 of the clock, in the [illegible] inscription, in capital letters, of these words; 'For false, malicious, and despiteful Speeches, against the King's Daughter, and her Husband; [illegible] horse, without a saddle, with his face back- [illegible] him, a fine of 1000l."

[illegible] the matter, the lords sent a message, in writing, [illegible] ing, that, "the Lords, during all this parl [illegible] houses: that their lordships have an earnest [illegible] happy continuance of it to the end; with a full resolution of all possible endeavours, on [illegible] having heard of a censure lately passed in that [illegible]

---

[illegible] as a committee, will attend your lordships at [illegible]

May 5. p. m. After consulting a precedent [illegible] 1 Hen. IV, which proved, That the Commons were not judges in parl.; but that judicature [illegible] whole house went, as a committee, into the [illegible] house was resumed; when it was agreed, that [illegible]

[illegible] his maj.'s answer was, "The lords knowing they enjoy their honours from him, and under [illegible] der of his honour for that cause; therefore he [illegible]

[illegible] "That the house of commons is a court of re- [illegible]

[illegible] house be a court of record; nor whether the oath by them alledged to be ministred, in a [illegible] house, or by a master in chancery, then one [illegible]

[illegible] selves? But the question is, Whether that house [illegible] a member of their house, and for a matter [illegible] to pray a re-conference about the same; and, [illegible] matters concerning their own house."

[illegible] is so dear unto him as his honour; yet, as be- [illegible] copy of the first charge upon him; and his [illegible]

May 8. p. m. The house being to meet the [illegible] liberties and privileges; and whereas their lord- [illegible] ference in their defence thereof: yet being de- [illegible] mons would agree to a sub-committee, to end [illegible] Southampton were appointed for that purpose: [illegible] come a precedent to wrong the privileges of [illegible]

[illegible] ference held yesterday between the [illegible]

[illegible] tenced Floyde; but they leave him to the Lords [illegible] between them.—A Protestation was immedi- [illegible]

"That the proceedings lately passed in the [illegible] lawful rights or privileges of either house: but [illegible] as before." This protestation is also entered in the Journals of the Commons, without [illegible]

[illegible] lord treasurer delivered a representation of sir H[illegible] king; with his maj.'s pleasure signified that it [illegible]

"Sir Henry Yelverton, in Michaelmas Term [illegible] breach of trust, in the unwarrantable passing of a charter to the city of London; tending to the disherison of his maj. both in matter of kingly power and high prerogative, and also, in matter of revenues and profits of the [illegible] The sentence consisted of these 3 parts: 1. Imprisonment in the Tower. 2. A fine of 4000l. 3. A declaration of disability and unfitness to [illegible]

[illegible] d[illegible], as he takes it, for that patent.—April 30. [illegible] follows: "I cannot but present myself this [illegible] ness of any faults; yet, I had rather have died th[illegible] much as a scratch from me. I, that in none [illegible] they (sir Edw. Villiers and sir G. Mompesson) [illegible] was ever at his maj.'s ha[illegible] ready, upon eve[illegible]

[illegible] fear of a servant, not to offend so gracious a [illegible] [illegible]; and, in this, with the sight almost of my [illegible] the quiet of the people, I am yet drawn in [illegible]

I received a message from mr. Emerson, sent me by sir Giles, that I would run myself upon the rocks, and that I should not hold my place [illegible] himself, and, like a herald at arms, told me [illegible] from my lord of Buckingham, that I should not hold my place a month if I did not conform [illegible] could I but startle at this message? I saw here [illegible] a great assuming of power to himself, to [illegible] saw myself cast upon two main rocks; either, [illegible] had set me on, or else, to endanger myself by [illegible]y-blow and to hazard my fortune.—I hum[illegible] means of living thus assaulted; for now it was [illegible] to this, whether I would obey his maj. [illegible]r my lord, if sir Giles spoke true. Yet, I re[illegible] the message, in part, made good; for all the [illegible] of my lord's worthies; that I returned hi[illegible] the loss of a suit to come to me; my [illegible] pe[illegible]ts.—Howbeit, I dare say, if my lord of [illegible] and displacing officers about a king, he would [illegible] Inns, in the patent of Alehouses, in the Irish [illegible]ration of his place in the court of Wards, have been my overthrow. For these I suffer at this [illegible] [illegible]ar, as I take it, but as I know, for my opposition to his lordship) above 20,000l. I know well that I suffer unjustly, in my restraint, for [illegible] I sought no riches but his grace."

[illegible] minutes of sir Henry Ye[illegible] to [illegible] bar, where serjeant Crew and mr. Attorney General opened the charge against him; and [illegible] Sir Henry, having leave, explained himself [illegible] the afternoon.

[illegible] came on again; when the question being put, [illegible] being far spent in settling this affair, the lieut. [illegible] sir Henry, at 9 the next morning.

[illegible] sir Henry Yelverton; the Memorial of which is entered in these words: "Whereas, on the [illegible] to his maj. viz. for drawing without warrant a [illegible] by the court of Star-Chamber to be a person [illegible] General; and was further adjudged to be im[illegible] Hosteries; and being required to make An[illegible] if ever he deserved well of his maj. it was of [illegible] more abused by it than by any other; and that [illegible] to the bar, the said sir H. made a long and [illegible] as touching the said patents; and in his an[illegible] throw, unto his opposition against that patent [illegible] the said sir H. in his Answer uttered several other words of scandal; which, though directly [illegible] words reached his maj. and fastened a scandal upon his highness, in tolerating and giving any [illegible] quis: glancing, and, in a sort, resembling them [illegible] the same; but the day being far spent, their lordships did forbear to proceed to a sentence [illegible] for his speeches uttered in this court, which do [illegible] at the bar, either in the king's presence, or, in [illegible] maj. in honour; and the prisoner being with[illegible] marq. of Buckingham, lord high admiral; and [illegible] ney general. And, whereas, the greatest mat[illegible] a message which the said sir H. did affirm was [illegible]

[illegible] message: and the said sir H. having leave to [illegible] and, being fully agreed about it, the lord mar- [illegible]

[illegible] sir Henry's fine, and h. r. h. the prince offered [illegible] him by the Commons; nor does it appear that [illegible] set at liberty; reconciled to the marquis; and was esteemed, says Rushworth, 'a man valde [illegible] pleas. He was author of The Reports; his ta- [illegible]

A message was sent from the Commons to [illegible] other witnesses. Wherefore the Commons de- [illegible] *Answer.* The Lords have been busied with many matters of great importance; but they [illegible]

[illegible] against him; and moved the house that mr. [illegible]

[illegible] nations. Accordingly, the deposition of 6 per- [illegible] pened to the king's daughter and her children. [illegible] affection unto them. 3. For speaking basely [illegible]

[illegible] the Attorney said, "That Floyde relating [illegible] daughter and her children; he the said Pen- [illegible] deemed her from captivity: he the said Floyde replied, I am sorry thou art such a fool; and [illegible]

[illegible] the 3rd, mr. Attorney shewed, "That the said [illegible] and Goodwife Palsgrave;' calling him 'that [illegible] lated a stage-play of the princess, running away with two children, the one under one arm and [illegible] taken; and the said Cole answering, "That is [illegible] now we may freely speak it, I, or any noble- [illegible] Bohemia."—Here mr. Attorney opened "that point of the ancient oath of allegiance; of [illegible] such case, the said Floyde, being a lawyer, could [illegible]

[illegible] words, 'Goodman Palsgrave and Goodwife Palsgrave?' To which he answered, 'I spoke [illegible] down in the deposition.' 'Did you speak those [illegible] replied. 'It was but a folly for him to deny [illegible] the prince and princess Palatine? he answered 'I remember it not.'

The prisoner being withdrawn, though the [illegible] and Floyde's Answers, yet, for order sake, it was put to the question, 'Whether Edw. Floyde be so guilty of the offences of which he [illegible] sured?' It was agreed by all, *nem. diss.* But one [illegible] gentleman: this was also put to the question, [illegible] bar, when the Attorney General praying judg[illegible] his forehead. 3. To be whipt at a cart's tail, [illegible] pillory there for two hours. 4. That he shall [illegible] tence quickly executed; and the paper to be on his head was to contain these words: "For [illegible] and princess Palatine, the king's only daughter, [illegible] every part of this Sentence was executed on Floyde; but the Lords Journals assure us, That some days after on a motion from the [illegible] flicted upon Edw. Floyde, be suspended and [illegible] executed according to the former order. It [illegible] that judgment thereupon be not then given, but [illegible]

*[illegible] Parliament.*] May 28. The Lord Treasurer de[illegible] for these causes: "1. The season of the year, [illegible] people, may breed infection. 2. The use that [illegible] the profits of his maj.'s revenues are, as it were [illegible] ment keeps a kind of being in parl. 2. Whereas [illegible] same state they now are. 3. It will keep many laws in continuance which will end with the [illegible] pardon is not yet prepared; which he intends [illegible] hibited, his majesty cannot, in so short a time, [illegible] gracious to his subjects; so his maj. cherisheth [illegible] will send a Commission for the adjournment of [illegible]

[illegible] is proved, may have a bill of review, if the [illegible] reported and delivered into the house; and [illegible]

Sir *G. Moore* saith, that the first reason of calling of a parl. was to redress mischiefs and grievances; and, since we want time to redress the mischiefs, he would we should forthwith take [illegible]

[illegible] might be a short bill or clause, that the sessions [illegible] ing of such bills.

[illegible] to have thereby ended; but those judges said, [illegible] dents.

Sir *Warwick Heale* saith, that there is a precedent in sir Tho. Sherley's Case, that a bill [illegible]

Sir *E. Sandys* would have all those bills, that are [illegible]

[illegible] any thing put to the question of all these motions [illegible]

Sir *Rob. Crane* would have us petition his ma[illegible] term, that we might pass some bills, and not return without some fruit of our labours into the country; which will otherwise with a heavy [illegible] committee.

Mr. *Crew* saith, that since it pleased the king to [illegible] sire a present Conference with the Lords, that they and we might join in a petition to the [illegible]

Mr. *H*[illegible] termine: that in this king's time, in sir Thos. [illegible] such a clause might pass, and the sessions not [illegible] Lords for a Conference, and desire them to join with us in a petition to this effect.

[illegible] in one day, for it is here to be read but once; [illegible] strictions: that the bill for repeal and conti[illegible] be also soon ready: that we, at a conference [illegible] petition to the king, that we might continue [illegible] this term there is but little business to be dispatched; for usually this term is but to settle [illegible]

[illegible] take 3 things into our consideration; 1st, his [illegible] these he would have us do something: that he [illegible] success of this parl.; but now we shall be [illegible] be worse welcome than we were after the last [illegible]

[illegible] thing: I wish that it had then given something, [illegible] go to, he would not go into his country with [illegible] shall be a mock and scorn to the country.— [illegible]

"That the whole vote of the house is, that, it [illegible] with the Lords about this; even to be humble [illegible] special bills; to the comfort of his subjects." A message was sent to the Lords to this effect.

[illegible] and a prorogation: that for the general Par[illegible] brought nothing to perfection: that there were [illegible] prorogation the same parliament men are to [illegible] in a Petition to the king for further time. He [illegible] the midst of business, should break up the sessions.

[illegible] ed a Conference and thereby a Petition to be made to his maj. for a longer continuance of [illegible] therefore, "That though he is willing to [illegible] unto him by parl. yet, a petition of this nature cannot be pleasing unto him; it seeming to be [illegible] parl. than to prorogue it; and therefore his [illegible] judges, Whether the royal assent by commis[illegible] ment or prorogation of the parl. His pleasure [illegible] rest he will advise of afterwards. Lastly, that [illegible]

The prince moved the house, "That the [illegible] to desire a Conference, presently, with the other house: which being agreed to, and the Lords [illegible] ing, at 9 o'clock.

[illegible] every man cried out "rise! rise!" and that [illegible]

Mr. *Delbridge*, a Devonshire merchant, saith [illegible] cometh an honest man; and therefore profess[illegible] from the king, doth dislike him for his parti[illegible]

[illegible] let them rest.

[illegible] culously defend them: that trade is decayed [illegible]

[illegible] lor and the lord Haddington, as he thinks; but [illegible]

[illegible] he agreed with dr. Field for the recognizance, [illegible]

[illegible] suit. He was to pay the money to dr. Field and Davenport; but how much each should [illegible]

[illegible] zance; when, after many delays, and a year's [illegible]

[illegible] of Durham* stood up, and, in a speech, re- [illegible]

[illegible] rose up and said, "That dr. Field, the now [illegible]

[illegible] this purpose: viz. "Whereas the house of com- [illegible]

[illegible] judgment in that cause, the Lords having taken [illegible]

[illegible] were informed by examinations taken in their [illegible]

[illegible] lordships."—Then the question was put, Whe- [illegible]

[illegible] Thus ended this Affair, of which, there is not [illegible]

[illegible] guilty of much Bribery and Corruption; of [illegible]

---

[*] Richard Neile, who had himself been [illegible]

[†] The circumstance took place when dr. Field was only a private clergyman; nor does [illegible]

[illegible]

ministrator's accompts, sir John had 100l. to

[illegible]

Whorwood, a younger son, and a daughter offered to prove a will. Tho. Whorwood, the

[illegible]

father's will; a caveat being entered, he sent

[illegible]

Kelvert promised but paid not: Proved by

[illegible]

administration; for 50l. paid sir John and 5l.

[illegible]

have had a cause heard in chancery, which concerned that estate: Proved by Wm. Bass,

[illegible]

two kinsmen of the intestate, agreed with Sam-

[illegible]

had, besides, a piece of plate, which cost 4l.

[illegible]

Francis Winscomb pretended a will. Sir John

[illegible]

50l. more, 8 months after; and 25s. for in-

[illegible]

it was ordered that he be brought there again

[illegible]

Cause of sir John Bennet; and the Attorney

[illegible]

tration of her husband's goods; wherein she

[illegible]

contract, sir John pressing to have more.

[illegible]

am.—He took of Wm. Auchmore, for the

[illegible]

more, 15l. Proved by Rd. Williamson: and of

[illegible]

for his favours in proving a nuncupative will of

[illegible]

ality, nor so much as a superscription of the

[illegible]

making a report into the court of chancery. [illegible]

sessed of a personal estate of 11,240l. 2s. 7d. [illegible]

proved in common form; and, for sentence, [illegible]

law. Mr. Tighe, brother to the said doctor, [illegible]

paper for gold. Upon this, administration of [illegible]

dr. Bancroft; and Lyster said, that a halting [illegible]

liamson.—Mary Hawley, 6 years ago, died in- [illegible]

[illegible] tury, during the minority of his children, sir [illegible]

said Kenbury. Proved by Tho. Gear.— [illegible]

effects unto Peter Scarlet, until the said Peter [illegible]

spoke as follows:—"I come in all humility, to [illegible]

at this time, I hope you will excuse me, as being surprized with such a tempest of afflic- [illegible]

thro' the compass of 19 years, the whole time [illegible]

seech your lordships to give me some time, not [illegible]

I humbly desire to have a copy of my charge, [illegible]

fess, after I have had time to consider thereof. Those whereof I am otherwise accused, as of many, I desire, as by the law of nations I ought, [illegible]

exhibited, to use cross interrogatories, to [illegible]

council allowed me. Lastly, I humbly beg at your lordships hands, even for justice sake, [illegible]

man as I am accused for. I am the first eccle- [illegible]

uses, amounting to a great sum, I will engage [illegible]

not above 200l. per annum, ever since I was judge; whereof, if I cannot give a good account, I will beg my bread all my life."

[illegible] into their consideration these requests; and, [illegible]

pleased to grant the same, thus far, viz. "1. [illegible]

parl. to make his defence. 2. Council to advise with only; but no council here in court to defend his cause. 3. Liberty to examine wit- [illegible]

[illegible] University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible]

in court, with such sureties as the court shall

[illegible]

of her money, left with him as a deposit; and

[illegible]

of Oxford, which I intended to have done,

[illegible]

misfortunes happened. As for my bail; I am in debt and disgrace, and doubt whether I can procure bail to enter into so great a sum. I

[illegible]

giving us leave to touch businesses of a high na-

[illegible]

ment; which judgment is better far than ma-

[illegible]

fame and scandal our religion; for corruption

[illegible]

things. 1. Of our Religion at home; and, for

[illegible]

formation, the Papists were never more impu-

[illegible]

For the honour of the king's children: this

[illegible]

ing that business to a good end; for now we see, there is a labour to bring all Christian Re-

[illegible]

commonwealth: which if we consider in its

[illegible]

dered in 2 things: 1. What we shall presently

[illegible]

thereof as he list: for the 2nd, that we should

[illegible]

bills they have in their hands with speed, that [illegible]

[illegible]

where the people are of our religion, can be [illegible]

[illegible]

king's children.

[illegible]

that his maj.'s message is so taken: that it [illegible]

[illegible]

doth call it and appoint the beginning of it.

[illegible]

a right understanding of each other, and cursed [illegible]

Secretary, all the house cried Amen! and then [illegible]

thing in this short time.

Dr. *Gooch* saith, that it is discovered, that [illegible]

rupted; and is not the time yet come that we [illegible]

says, he can trade no more: the artisan says, [illegible]

There were a people brought out of a great [illegible]

[illegible]

as it began, very well, and give a remedy to our grievances. He saith, the commonwealth [illegible]

[illegible]

and appointment, and we have received a mes- [illegible]

sireth, that we should prepare a bill, that our [illegible]

[illegible]

never saw any prince more favourable; and [illegible]

[illegible]

albeit we were never less able to give it. We [illegible]

that he never knew, after so long a sitting, an adjournment, but still a sessions, nor subsidies given without a general pardon; and is sorry they must now be severed: that there are pas- [illegible]

[illegible]

cess in it: but we have sat here these 18 weeks, [illegible] yet are we no nearer a good success than we were at first: that we have given two free Sub- [illegible] indeed. W[illegible]

[illegible]

the kingdom; beseech him, that he will be [illegible]

[illegible]

in a good case at our return, when it shall please his maj. to call us.

[illegible] is divided into 3 sorts of speakers, free, silent, [illegible]

[illegible] house; for, at first sitting, while the king's ear was open to us, there was a good harmony be- [illegible] hearts of this house.

It was on this motion resolved, that a message shall go to the Lords, to desire a free [illegible] pointed a meeting for the free conference, and [illegible] of both houses, and the time at 4 this after- [illegible]

May 30, p. m. Sir *Nath. Rich* saith, that it [illegible] us any thing, and that his maj.'s ears are stop- [illegible] are well pleased to give over; wherefore he [illegible] sented to the Lords, that the king may know it. [illegible] for all the inhabitants there have, and are ready to leave them. As for bills, he would not have us present to his maj. a few bills; for [illegible] bring forth a mouse. As for Grievances, he [illegible] have no Grievances to be presented, but only [illegible]

[illegible] would have us go on with them; but he would [illegible] go with us to the king, to represent the lament- [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] may, for they are not to be taken as a retribu- [illegible]

Sir *Ed. Sackville* would have us pass those [illegible] a discontent, we shall repeat it; for that may [illegible] after the recess.

[illegible] by a longer stay: that time will manifest, that [illegible]

[illegible] but they expected (it being a free conference, [illegible] ships will send us a note, how the state of the [illegible]

May 31. Mr. [illegible] sions; so as, if this be but an adjournment, [illegible] sessions: and, if it be now a sessions, then all [illegible]

[illegible] of [illegible]

regni sui attainted of high treason, but as soon [illegible]

the ground: that in 1 H. VII. bills did pass the [illegible]

sented some bills to take away the same: and, if the bill against Monopolies and that against [illegible]

an adjournment rather than a sessions.

[illegible] cannot, in so short time, prepare the Griev[illegible]

[illegible] a question in 1 Jac. but then it was resolved [illegible]

itself: that in 27 Eliz. there was a commi[illegible] then adjourn itself, on notice by a message from the Lords: that the commission of adjourn[illegible]

selves and their servants: that in a year book [illegible]

royal assent was a sessions: that in 1 and 2 of [illegible]

sessions: that there cannot be a royal assent [illegible]

royal assent, that this shall be a sessions or prorogation of parl.; but, if he say no such thing [illegible]

to enable the subject the better to live: the [illegible]

between man and man. These things are the most weighty causes of the parl.; and he wish[illegible]

adjournment, there hath a commission used to [illegible]

Speaker; whom he would not have use such [illegible]

Sir *D. Digges* saith, that it is true, that it [illegible]

no bills to be passed at this adjournment; and he thinketh it will better content the country, [illegible]

goeth home with a sorrowful mind; but not with a repining sorrow, but a sorrow that in all [illegible]

Sir *Edw. Coke* saith, it is a maxim in law, that every court must adjourn itself; and, if [illegible] then the adjournment is not good; but the [illegible] commission to adjourn alone is not good; but, [illegible]

on both sides.

[illegible]

it is: that trade is as great as ever it was, but I have been at.

[illegible]

have begun. [illegible] pardon.

[illegible] was the other's opinion, that it would be for the king's honour not to pass bills. He wish- [illegible]

[illegible] Conference with the Commons, yesterday; [illegible] journment of the parl. "Three things at the [illegible] 3. Their desire to have finished them: with an enumeration of a mass of business which they [illegible] desired to know how bills rest with us, that we [illegible] pass; and that we may advise together what [illegible] bills, but also such other matters as they have now in hand."—The Lords then sent a message [illegible] had passed, and specially recommended it to be expedited with all possible haste in their house. This was a bill of a very extraordinary nature; [illegible] in the sequel.

May 31, p. m. The Lords then considered that they were to meet the Commons, at a Con- [illegible] propositions, to give them no answer at that [illegible] be so adjourned, as that each house may have [illegible]

*Prorogation.*] A motion was made, that the [illegible]

adjournment of a parl. by the king, and an ad- [illegible] and privileges, were ordered to search the re- [illegible]

June 1, Mr. Attorney General read di- [illegible] shewed also, that a parl. being adjourned by [illegible] commission, and brought into parl. were or- [illegible] declaration.

[illegible] in that cessation: but it is otherwise, when we [illegible] there was a difference of an adjournment [illegible] alone do adjourn the parl. then it is a deter- [illegible] be by a record, it is an end of the sessions; but, if it be but by a remembrance, it is otherwise: but it is ordinary, that there is a commission [illegible]

[illegible]

breed a great question, whether the sessions determine or no; and his opinion is, that it [illegible]

[illegible] time of recess, when there was an adjournment [illegible]

Mr. *Mallet* saith, that in 4 Ed IV. there [illegible] term; and thereon the judges did adjourn the term: and it hath ever been the use of all [illegible]

[illegible] took notice, "That upon Monday last he sent a message to them, and another to the Commons, declaring his royal pleasure for the [illegible]

[illegible] ment of the king's power to call, adjourn, and [illegible] commons in a petition to his maj. as they desired, for a non-adjournment at this time: also for leaving the form of the adjournment unto him; and for expediting the bill which [illegible]

[illegible] ment, discussed in that house yesterday, and [illegible] *statu quo prius* until the next sitting; but that then no committees were to meet: but if the [illegible]

[illegible] are to be heard in that house; but yet the privileges and liberties of the Lords were to be [illegible]

[illegible] writs of Supersedeas and Certiorari: but his maj. first demanding the opinions of the judges, [illegible]

[illegible] so return?' his maj. put the Lords in mind of [illegible]

[illegible] ten days longer; but now he would not yield to their request: yet, if the Lords thought that a [illegible] be now in the house, he will grant it."

[illegible] taking it into consideration, they thought fit to [illegible] sent a message to them to desire a free con- [illegible]

[illegible] some bills, and so to make a session."

[illegible] maj.'s free grant of a choice, whether the [illegible] continued for a fortnight longer, and then prorogued; The Commons having considered [illegible]

[illegible] form whereof they leave to him; because they [illegible]

[illegible] three Petitions; first, for matters of trade, that [illegible]

[illegible] committee of 12 lords to join with a committee [illegible]

[illegible]

June 2. In the Commons. Sir *Walt. Earle* [illegible] by question in the house, for the words which [illegible]

[illegible] town, for which he serveth: that he taketh [illegible] a monopoly is procured upon false suggestions. [illegible] with words, for we had to deal with a wise and [illegible] his maj.'s govt.; saying, that, amongst all the [illegible] his maj. in the govt. of the kingdom, whereof [illegible] being put, it was resolved that sir E. Sandys is [illegible] not above 14 or 15 days; but, after an adjournment [illegible] committee appointed to sit during the adjournment [illegible] adjournment, or no; and, whether there were accordingly a report of the labours of that [illegible]

[illegible] man and a good subject to say: and therefore [illegible] trading: that his father did long since set on [illegible] house, which hath 3 principal ends. 1. To [illegible] merchants. 3. That it shall be hurtful to no [illegible] 7 years; for now every merchant comes here [illegible] and go live in the country; or else give [illegible] spectacle: for there are abundance of vaults in that town; and there was a very good haven, [illegible] customs at a mediation of 7 years; for this was [illegible] his customs, than now he hath; for now the [illegible]

[illegible] be a great ease, that they may send up their [illegible]

[illegible] cause it consisteth of many heads, that the [illegible]

[illegible] D. Digges is a worthy motion; for freedom of [illegible]

[illegible] tomers, and customers sinners; for they [illegible]

[illegible] matter concerning monopolies; whereby he [illegible]

[illegible] "That yesterday, in the afternoon, the com- [illegible] from the Commons, attended his maj.; where [illegible] sented unto him the 3 Petitions, recommended [illegible] monitions to expedite good laws; and that [illegible]

[illegible] his maj. would also advise with his council, [illegible] rity. And the king, as general bishop of the [illegible]

"That at their return into the country, they [illegible]

[illegible] was adjourned for so long a time, as now it was intended to be; they could not satisfy [illegible] nuance of their privileges during all the time [illegible] shops delivered their opinions. "That the lords [illegible]

After several other orders were finished, h. [illegible] he state as they now are, until the next meeting."

*The Commons' Declaration for the Recovery* [illegible]

And, least the slackness shown in it should be [illegible] draw up a Declaration of their sentiments in [illegible]

Sir *James Perrott* who said, "That since the [illegible]

mover humbly beseecheth the house, that in the cause of religion (which is God's cause) [illegible]

make a public protestation and Declaration, [illegible]

on our return to parl. (being thereto required [illegible]

claration being here made, he would that the [illegible]

foreign princes, concerning this cause: or at [illegible]

tained with much joy and a general consent [illegible]

make such a declaration; viz. because that [illegible]

the king hath his sword drawn; for the whole [illegible]

march,' [illegible]

gion, nor of the wrong done to the count [illegible]

and a general consent of the whole house, and [illegible]

they could hold them, as a visible testimony [illegible]

Then there grew a little question, whether we [illegible]

Palatinate: but it was resolved, after a little [illegible]

which done, the house selected a committee [illegible]

in writing, that it might be entered and remain registered with the clerk of the parl. house.

[illegible]

When the committee had drawn up the Declaration, it being reported and publicly read [illegible]

"The Commons assembled in parl. taking [illegible]

threatened, but also with one heart and voice [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] That when the Lord Keeper had [illegible]

[illegible] the representative community of the [illegible]

[illegible] p. 1291.) This I made bold to annalize a little, [illegible] four circumstances in the same; to which I ap- [illegible] his maj.'s directions; as, I hope, my lords here [illegible] of treaty. I declared, from him, that all this was done; I wish I could have said as profi- [illegible] over-much lingered and delayed. I shewed from the king, that no more it was; and pro- [illegible] maj. was petitioned, upon the non proficiency [illegible] the king, that this petition was likewise granted; [illegible] I touched upon an heroical act of his maj. which I called a Pattern for this assembly; and [illegible] nate; the which had otherwise been dissolved before this parl. could be assembled. I noted that, without this, their resolution had been lost: and so will all this be still without their [illegible] some men not to be so punctual; and shewed [illegible] sion. For, in matters of this nature, as I noted out of a good author, 'quæ legitimum,' &c. [illegible] redents, That all, &c. and all cunning and ma- [illegible] soundly, really, &c.—In the last place, I came [illegible] his maj. limits, at this time, to some 7 or 8 [illegible] sented your lordships the natural bird, as it came from the nest, without so much as a fea- ther of my own invention: for this is no speech [illegible] long as he was represented by such a son: a [illegible] Spirit to be present and president in this as- [illegible] Spain, &c.] The Lord Digby also made a short [illegible]

In the delivery of the message I had from the king, I presented these 3 considerations; 1. his [illegible] what Redress was fittest. I begun with his [illegible] ditions as his majesty should think fit. His [illegible] Albertus, to propose a Reconciliation; and sent [illegible] command over the Spanish army; in regard the emperor had all his greatness, saving a few [illegible] unto a reconciliation, in favour of his maj. and, [illegible] archduke.—Sir Edw. Villiers and I returned into England about the same time; I bringing [illegible] was ready for a general treaty, which his maj. [illegible] touching the reconciliation; and I was em- [illegible] tions which I was to make to the emperor [illegible]

---

* This paragraph and the next are [illegible]

[illegible] University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] grave's submission. But the emperor referred the conclusion of this business unto a diet.—Then I made a 2d proposition, viz. That war [illegible]

[illegible] After this the emperor hastening the Diet, the [illegible]

[illegible] swer to the propositions, which I received, think- [illegible]

[illegible] of Bavaria and the Infanta, for a cessation from arms: and that himself had granted a promise, [illegible]

[illegible] the duke of Bavaria: 1. in regard of the empe- [illegible]

[illegible] sent of the said duke; which happened because [illegible]

[illegible] Bavaria. 2. in regard the said duke had a great [illegible]

[illegible] Rensorpe, and Budmnus.—I coming to count [illegible]

[illegible] tor. The duke of Bavaria, in his letters to me, [illegible]

[illegible] for a truce, for the wars were at an end; in that [illegible]

[illegible] had agreed. And here, I noted, That this au- [illegible]

was the emperor's mind also; whereupon I ob- [illegible]

[illegible] present state of the Palatinate, I shewed, That count Mansfield was come down into the lower part with 16,000 men, and sir Horace Vere had about 5000; all these having endured the hard- [illegible]

[illegible] which must have been spent in raising, arming, [illegible] into that place.—I said further, That the people [illegible] and rapine under the Spanish army; and that [illegible]

[illegible] soldiers, thro' want, should be driven to fall to spoil those of the Palatinate, and breed a liking in them to the Spanish government. I noted [illegible] consist of men, which fought for their country, wives, or children, but for money; which they [illegible] the count, for want of pay, should take a dis- [illegible] off to the emperor, and then all were lost.—I [illegible] state of all Christendom; the power of the em- [illegible] ing of Spain: that the forces of the princes of the Union were disbanded; and that the Catholic League did continue to hold firm.—I observed how bravely sir Horace Vere and capt. Bo- [illegible] Palatinate; and that, by the wisdom and va- [illegible] the enemy, being a place of small strength; Manheim, a very strong town; Frankendale, [illegible]

Touching what redress was fittest, I concluded, That it was proper to cherish and keep up that army which is already there, which must be with supplies of money; and that more forces must [illegible]

[illegible] Princes of the Union. This I recommended [illegible]

[illegible] about the Palatinate, That the business, now in hand, required a great and a speedy Supply, [illegible] his own; and his lordship doubted not but that [illegible]

[illegible] make his maj. in love with the parliaments."

[illegible] bills; which, with some other matters of less [illegible] plaints and redressing matters of privileges, [illegible]

[illegible] letter, sent him from sir Edwin; whereby he signified, that he received a discharge from the [illegible]

Nov. 22. Mr. *Alford* saith, that the king [illegible] none should meddle or talk of state business; and yet hath again commanded, by the three lords, that we should not meddle but with the business of the Palatinate; that this is a precedent wherein we are warily to proceed; for hereafter the king may else say, we shall med[illegible] with other things, and so we lose the Privilege [illegible] hasten to dispatch the business of the house; [illegible] for the good of the [illegible] Hen. VII.'s time one Terrill, a member of this [illegible] ting or serving again in this house. We are taxed to be cunning and malicious, but he [illegible] gave, without precedent, a free gift of two Sub[illegible]

[illegible] clamation, to speak of state business; and yet [illegible] which is state business; thereby taxing his [illegible]

[illegible]

Sir *D. Digges* saith, that he hath served the [illegible] sitteth about the Chair, that it hath ever been [illegible] so likewise of this parl. It is well known, that sir Ed. Sandys hath suffered; which if he knew [illegible] house: but, since there is a day prefixed for [illegible] conscience.

[illegible] letter to mr. Speaker may be read again; for, [illegible] was a member of this house; and, for aught [illegible] the Privileges of this house; but we have ever [illegible] questioned for matter of state; but howsoever [illegible] there is a murmur abroad, that he was com[illegible] or no.

Mr. Secretary *Calvert* saith, that, though he [illegible] cateth; and some say, they are not yet satisfied that sir Edwin was not committed for par[illegible] entered.

[illegible] with a great deal of difficulty, and desireth that [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] have 1,500,000l. in bank here; the usurers of [illegible] ployment here, to be compelled by a law to go and live in the country; and, though many say their wives draw them hither, yet laws will rule [illegible] He would have us consider, what will discharge the charge of a war; and, as we should provide for that, [illegible] home, whether we want provision: 'Parva [illegible].' He [illegible] would have us give as much for a present Supply [illegible] as, if he be 10l. he should pay 10l. fully. For [illegible] war. Only he desireth, that we may have first safety at home; that we be not here supplanted by those of a contrary religion whose hearts are at the king of Spain's service; and they think they ought to be so, because he is the protector of their superstition and religion.

[illegible] would have us consider of 2 things. 1. What [illegible] He would have us bestow such a sum on the king, as will suffice for the present supply of the [illegible] thing else till this be effected.

[illegible] up, and that he will speak with a royal heart to [illegible] king's children: that the propositions now on foot are, 1. For a present supply for the Pa[illegible] is needful, the other necessary: that the states [illegible] now fight against us with a victorious sword. Those who are for us may be those of our re[illegible] against the Spaniard will put them in mind of [illegible] up by a civil war, so as there is no hope of help thence. It is true, that the king hath carried the affairs of the Palatinate wisely, and [illegible] treated of peace, they have still gone on with [illegible] of Spain is our friend, but every one knoweth, [illegible] but a petit prince. He would have us consider, first, the honour of this kingdom; for he [illegible] is angry with us for not keeping the crown of [illegible] cil have wrought no good effects at all; so as [illegible] that all those papists, who are here amongst us, [illegible] grown insolent; they call us already the pro[illegible] are grown to such a head here, may not turn [illegible] grant any Subsidy; but first to proceed with [illegible]

Sir *Edw. Giles* would have us make a tho[illegible] ourselves. He saith, there was a Jesuit lately taken in the West Country, and is now at [illegible] Jesuits here in England at this time; and his [illegible] He would therefore have a course first taken to [illegible] these dangerous [illegible] papists; and that afterwards we should con- [illegible] good by treaty, and would therefore have us [illegible] hath hitherto done much for us; but we must not look for that help from him still, if we be [illegible]

Mr. Sec. *Calvert* would have us remember, [illegible] want of a Supply; but, how or in what manner they did it, he will not mention. But, if [illegible] reunited, and the king of Denmark and other [illegible] selves for the assistance of the Palatinate; for [illegible] forbear in that action: that the friendship [illegible] rest is; and he would not have our king to [illegible] the delaying of a Supply any longer, if we do it our supply will come too late. It is said, [illegible] but they, who shall speak to defer a supply, seek to keep it longer in the scabbard.

[illegible] Declaration, that our hearts are ready to [illegible] if we do nothing, it will be a scandal to our [illegible] what we shall give; and would have us do it [illegible] dissent from a present given. We have heard [illegible] tick decayed, we may think it a difficult matter to proceed in a war. He would have us [illegible] the Spaniard; and against him, as he con- [illegible] is no halting between two religions, and there- [illegible] not now, we would give at our next meeting

Nov. 27. Mr. *Wylde* saith, that it was a [illegible]

only on the defensive, and permitted his ene- [illegible] mise of the Spaniard: those who are of that [illegible] latinate; but would have us let the king know, [illegible]

Mr. [illegible] saith [illegible] whether he (having made so many fair pro- [illegible] the emperor. He would not, that we should, by our discord, add grief to the common and [illegible]

Mr. *Neale* acknowledgeth his disability to speak of the great business in hand, and will [illegible] speeches of those who have debated well here- [illegible] he got it: ‘Dolus an virtus quis in hoste re- [illegible] more forward and willing to give than himself. [illegible] more than a plain war, and therein they will venture their lives and estates; but those of [illegible] the ancient order, by the lands: that money is bought beyond sea at a higher rate than the mint here will give for it; and that is the reason, why so much foreign coin brought in hither is not kept here, as it would be otherwise: [illegible]

Mr. *Pymme* saith, that, if we should not now [illegible]

[illegible] and effected no bills. This is a ground that, [illegible]

[illegible] desires.

[illegible]

25 Eliz. she made the first laws against Papists; [illegible] gether.

[illegible]

[illegible] of England [illegible]

[illegible] of the maintenance [illegible]

[illegible] say.

[illegible]

[illegible] that the poorer sort should not be taxed at all.

[illegible]

[illegible] may be an assurance [illegible]

[illegible] and be content, [illegible]

[illegible] have papists pay [illegible] and lands, [illegible] content to the king [illegible] well enough [illegible]

[illegible] be not speedily [illegible] to set down a proportion what we [illegible]

[illegible] that it belongeth only to [illegible] and to us [illegible] to find [illegible] to make a war. He [illegible] but would [illegible] the necessity [illegible] be drawn into a precedent [illegible]

[illegible] have the papists pay [illegible] charge to and [illegible] to the king [illegible]

[illegible] dies.

[illegible]

and that [illegible] next.

Sir [illegible] and [illegible] Supply, and [illegible]

Mr. Secretary says, [illegible] *les*: there is a great necessity of a present Supply: that the king hath already disbursed 40,000l. [illegible] that [illegible] of the subsidy [illegible] than August, [illegible] the king would not be able to [illegible]

Sir He. Poole would have the Subsidy paid in Feb. next.

Sir *Tho. Wentworth* would not have us capitulate with the king [illegible] on condition to have a sessions before Christmas, but [illegible] a sessions [illegible] have [illegible]

[illegible]

Sir *Edw. Coke* reported, "that the committee had [illegible] drawn: the 1st for the Advancement of Religion; the 2nd for a Sessions before Christmas: that it had also resolved, to give one entire Subsidy, to be paid in Feb. next, for the Supply of [illegible] shall pay (as strangers) double subsidies, and [illegible] subsidy, in the place of their mansion house, [illegible] for all those lands or leases, whereof they, or [illegible]

[illegible] Speaker: If we shall suffer the council table to call in question such as sit here for parliament [illegible] sons: 1. Because that which was said or done was so done or said in private, whereas sir E. Sandys [illegible] England. 2. Because mr. Secretary is a party, [illegible] question him [illegible]

Mr. *Spencer*. That sir E. Sandys be sent to, [illegible] for parliamentary matters in the house or not: [illegible]

Mr. *Mallory*. We are intrusted for our country. If we lose [illegible] leges; and losing them, we deserve to be hanged. Let us not look upon ourselves only, but [illegible] or treason. Therefore I desire, that sir E. S. [illegible] our lives. Sir E. Sandys, a worthy member of [illegible] For he said, it was not for any thing done or spoken in the house; yet it may be for speaking of parliament business out of the house. I would gladly know, whether we are not as free to speak in Westminster-hall, as here: and whether we are a parl. in the forenoon, and [illegible]

Mr. *Chancellor of the Dutchy* saith, it is an [illegible] concerning the commitment of sir E. Sandys were great; and king's hearts are inscrutable: that, since sir E. S. was innocent of what he [illegible] farther stir in the cause of his commitment; it [illegible]

[illegible] business hath been questioned 3 times before [illegible] man: take heed, you see what is become of sir E. S. You are brave fellows whilst you are together; but what becomes of you when you are parted? My council is, to send for sir E. S.; and if he be sick, that he be required to [illegible] of the cause of his [illegible]

[illegible] much loquacity, I should have kept silence at [illegible] doth seem to call me up in particular, I crave [illegible] own safety; and it beseems their wisdoms, [illegible] though I am very near unto him, yet I know

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] to do. And,

recusants, but only a mere remonstrance, and that it is a Petition for the sessions only.

[illegible]

involved one in the other; and therefore he [illegible]

[illegible] prerogative; lest we thereby lose something of our own privileges, to treat in this manner of [illegible]

[illegible] clause, "That we seek not to make, hereby, [illegible]

[illegible] all scruples and misinterpretations; which be- [illegible] to the king:

"To the King's most Excellent Majesty,

"Most gracious and dread Sovereign; We, [illegible] standing your maj.'s pious and princely inten- [illegible] quire; and finding, how ill your maj.'s good- [illegible]

[illegible] the Pope of Rome and his dearest son; the one aiming at as large a temporal monarchy, as the other at a spiritual supremacy. 2. The devilish po- [illegible] professors of our religion in foreign parts. 4. [illegible] Confederacy of the princes of the Popish Re- [illegible] advantages conducing to that end upon all oc- [illegible] in the behalf of Popish Recusants, for connivance and favour unto them. 9. Their open [illegible] rences there. 11. The education of their [illegible] less than a toleration. 13. The licentious printing and dispersing of Popish and seditious [illegible] dispersed in all parts of [illegible]

### The Effects

"And from these Causes, as bitter roots, we [illegible] Popish Religion is incompatible with ours, in [illegible] ces. 3. It openeth too wide a gap for popularity, to any who shall draw too great a party. 4. It hath a restless spirit, and will strive by these gradations; if it once get but a connivance, it will press for a toleration; if that [illegible] will never rest till they get a subversion of the true religion."

### The Remedies

"The Remedies against these growing evils, [illegible] inevitable necessity is fallen upon your maj. [illegible] and pious king can avoid; your maj. would not [illegible] and effectually [illegible] to take your sword [illegible] 2. [illegible] a diversion or otherwise, as in your deep judg- [illegible] 4. [illegible] 5. [illegible] securing of our peace at home, your maj. would [illegible] annexed; and to put in execution, by the care [illegible] to be made for preventing of dangers by Popish [illegible] to frustrate their hopes for a future age, our [illegible] married to one of our own religion. 7. That [illegible] such whose wives are Popish Recusants, be [illegible] sow, in their tender years, the seeds of true re- [illegible] your maj. And seeing out of duty to your [illegible]

[illegible] effected but by passing a bill in a parliamentary [illegible] time shall be prepared for your maj.'s honour, [illegible] accustomed) with your maj.'s gracious Pardon [illegible] reign; to the discharge of Alienations without [illegible] year of your maj.'s reign. Which gracious fa- [illegible] or prejudice to your own profit.—And we, by [illegible] the great King of kings, shall contend for a [illegible] maj.'s long and happy reign over us, and for your children's children after you, for many [illegible]

[illegible] stantly dispatched a Letter to the Speaker to [illegible] a Letter, even now received from his maj. directed to mr. Speaker; which mr. Speaker desired liberty first to read privately to himself: [illegible]

"To our trusty and well-beloved sir Thos. [illegible]

"Mr. Speaker; We have heard, by diver- [illegible] of our person, at this time, from our high court [illegible] capacity: and so tending to our high disho- [illegible]

[illegible]

message to sir Edwin Sandys, to know the rea- [illegible]

[illegible] of doubt of any question of that nature, that may arise among them hereafter, you shall re- [illegible]

[illegible] are desirous, that we should make this a se- [illegible]

[illegible] be not made, at this time, for the weal of the [illegible]

[illegible] would rise, and consider, till to-morrow, what to do in this great business, so nearly concern- [illegible]

It was accordingly ordered, "That two [illegible] that have been sent."

[illegible] labour of our adversaries to make a breach [illegible] on a discontent, [illegible] versaries.

[illegible] the body: that in Elizabeth's time, in the [illegible] it being a matter of a high nature and consequence. And so he would have us do in this [illegible] of it, the better to consider till to-morrow what [illegible]

[illegible] digested it; and therefore would have us now [illegible] ness, it being of the greatest consequence for [illegible] rise but not as in discontent, but rather resort [illegible] great business.

Dec. 5. Mr. *Delbridge* rose up and said, [illegible] Impositions; and now, of late, they are almost [illegible] fry over a faggot. And therefore, the State of [illegible]

[illegible] by mr. Secretary: that his life and fortunes shall ever be at the king's feet and command; [illegible] out of a tender respect not to distaste his maj. [illegible] be. Hereupon we presently took into our consi- [illegible] medies of our present estate; and, if we have [illegible] faults. He would, first, have us now endeavour [illegible] here: 3dly, defend the privileges, which were [illegible] sireth, that there may be a committee appoint- [illegible] of our privileges and liberties, without which [illegible] business at a committee.

Sir *Francis Seymour* saith, if we do now, out of [illegible] of our liberties: that we could not expect better [illegible] our own house, the king is misinformed; for [illegible] members, to be complained of, for speaking of our consciences freely. He liketh that we should sit as a committee of the whole house, for the debate of this business; but, because we [illegible] member of this House should make here a pro- [illegible] to hear our Petition, or else to give us leave to go home, or sit here and say nothing.

Sir *G. Moore* saith, that we now stand between the indignation of our king, and the privileges of our house, which are the spirit of the [illegible] touch the hem of Christ's garment; for which [illegible] ing our humility, love, and care of his honour, encourage us to proceed. He would have us [illegible] to his maj.; and, for the preparing of this, that we should appoint a committee.

Mr. *Hackwell* saith, if good kingdoms were [illegible] storms in this house: the first in 5 Eliz. when [illegible] as now, to beseech her to marry; and, though [illegible] perance in that petition, and on a 2nd petition, [illegible] her marriage here: 3. that the king heretofore, [illegible] give us leave to debate thereof. He would [illegible] his royal prerogative; and that, when we have [illegible] our former petition, together with such a one [illegible] in the like cases; and to that end view, at a committee, all our proceedings in the business of our petition; and endeavour thereby to sa- [illegible] of the most dutiful subjects. He marvelleth, that any amongst us should dislike our proceedings in the Petition, since, when it passed [illegible] hibited by the king's letter, to treat of any [illegible] or of any thing that hath its motion in any [illegible] incensed against this house upon a misinformation; but being told (though not from us) [illegible] ceed in that business: but hereupon the house [illegible] proceed accordingly.

Mr. *Pymme* saith, that the words of 'fiery, [illegible] the whole house; for, since we have not pu- [illegible] act of the whole house. He desireth, a Peti- [illegible]

Sir *Dud. Digges* moveth, that, since we

[illegible] University of Southampton [illegible] Digitisation Unit

[illegible] present [illegible] sation: that, for himself, he hath said nothing, [illegible] other end, than the safety of our religion, the [illegible] of a great Imposition, laid in a time of neces- [illegible] careful of our liberties and privileges: and by [illegible] be, if we were allied by marriage to him, who [illegible] of and petition in those businesses: thirdly, to [illegible] of our Petition, it being the act and work of all [illegible] cution is not the way, and would have us go to [illegible] were therein deceived: for the king doth dis- [illegible]

Sir *Tho. Wentworth* would have us shew the [illegible]

[illegible] strengthen the [illegible] by a select committee. He would have us for- [illegible] the king, in his letter, saith, that, if that point [illegible] he would have the committee to consider of [illegible] in these particulars, to our Petition.

[illegible] and care of his honour; and also it becometh [illegible] is now a question, whether we shall proceed [illegible] by excuse, it presupposeth an error; which [illegible] it best to proceed herein by a select committee.

[illegible] us rightly inform his maj. by Petition: 2ndly, whether we shall justify our actions or no: he [illegible] also to bring their ends to such a pass, as we [illegible] Privileges of parl.: 3. He liketh well, that we [illegible] would have 3 committees severally to consider [illegible]

[illegible]

inheritance received from our ancestors; with- [illegible]

[illegible]

mand.

[illegible] maj. had been truly informed of our proceed- [illegible] for we have been preparing of a Petition for [illegible] ing the business of Gouldsmith and Lepton, and a member of this house: That there are good [illegible] the Pardon, without which a sessions cannot [illegible] time; neither, if we would or could pass more [illegible] any more, than are already in their hands. If we receive a comfortable and gracious Mes- [illegible] dispatch the same; and then we shall soon be ready for a sessions.

[illegible] that bill, and then with that Grievance; and so [illegible] but we shall have a command for it from the king. He would have a committee to consider hereof, as sir *R. Phillips* moved; and he be- [illegible] ceedeth from a misinformation.

Sir *Dud. Digges* would have a committee to [illegible]

Sir *Geo. Moore* saith, that, if we do proceed [illegible] mand it) infringe our liberties: but, if the king [illegible] siness committed to the consideration of a com- [illegible] nted here in the house.

[illegible] would have us proceed in it with great delibe- [illegible] morrow, before we debate hereof by a com- [illegible] 3 commands from the king: 1. Not to deal [illegible] in a court of justice: and now 3dly, to go on [illegible]

Sir *Ed. Giles* saith, that the honester men the [illegible] more loyal subjects sat in parl. than now: and [illegible] poses here.—It was then ordered, that mr. Se- [illegible] whole house; and mr. Speaker to be present.

[illegible]

"His Majesty's Answer to the Apologetic [illegible] sented to His Majesty by a dozen of the [illegible]

"[illegible] by a Polonian ambassador unto her; that is, [illegible] first message, from your house, should have been a message of thanksgiving for our conti- [illegible] six or seven and thirty articles, all of several [illegible] unto us, in both their names, by the right reve- [illegible] bury; and likewise for the good government of [illegible] ment; whereas, on the contrary, it is your duty, [illegible] ing, in our conscience, freest of any king alive, [illegible]

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] among you: And, for proof in this par- [illegible] ded a conclusion unto it, which could not come [illegible] with nothing, but that we have judged your [illegible] the contrary; as if a robber would take a man's [illegible] to meddle with, were not a meddling with them. [illegible] nourable lords; yet, by so much as yourselves [illegible] advise forthwith upon a supply, for keeping the [illegible] should tell a merchant, that we had great need [illegible] army; that thereupon it would follow, that [illegible]

[illegible] omitted: so as this plenipotency of yours invests [illegible] yours we can give no other answer; for it will [illegible] make a good commentary upon it: for so did [illegible] Pope's power over Kings, 'in ordine ad spiri- [illegible] so long maintaining a settled peace in all our [illegible] experience, that a number of our subjects are [illegible] will labour by all means possible, either by [illegible] their antient dignity and inheritance: and [illegible] nourable purpose to a good end: neither shall [illegible] religion; but only caused by our son-in-law's [illegible]

[illegible] God sent us a cooling-card this year for that heat: and [illegible] and plenty) may not make God permit us to [illegible] secution of our recusants at home, irritate foreign princes of contrary religion: and teach [illegible] children of papists, as also for preserving at all times hereafter the youth that are or shall be [illegible] some good proofs, both in this kingdom and in [illegible] as to your request of making this a session, and granting a General Pardon; it shall be your de- [illegible] still in this case, is, that we should of our free grace send you down a pardon from the higher [illegible] so bad and unjust a commentary upon some [illegible] and liberties in parliament. Truly, a scholar [illegible] and restrain our former words: and then, after, [illegible] of state: so as ye err, 'a bene divisis ad male [illegible] and therefore it had well become [illegible] although we cannot allow of the stile, calling [illegible] heritance; but could rather have wished, that [illegible] from the grace and permission of our ancestors and us; (for most of them grow from prece- [illegible] royal assurance, that as long as you contain [illegible] will be as careful to maintain and preserve your [illegible] our predecessors were, nay, as to preserve our [illegible] their privileges, that would pare his prerogative [illegible] hope, there shall never be cause given. Dated at Newmarket, Dec. 11, 1621."

Mr. Chancellor of the Duchy saith, that he hath to deliver, by word of mouth, 3 messages [illegible] 1st, that his maj. doth appoint Saturday sennight for a [illegible] of Statutes. 2, concerning the Pardon, his maj. is desirous that the lord treasurer himself and mr. Solicitor should peruse it, 'ne quid detrimenti rex capiat.' 3, that if Gouldsmith hath offended the house, he should be punished; if not, he thinketh it justice, he should be remitted

Sir *Rob. Phillips* saith, if the king's Answer [illegible] defer, till tomorrow, the consideration of this [illegible] us the stain laid on us of rashness; and that [illegible]

Sir *Hen. Poole* would not have us always [illegible] empty hands.

[illegible] opinion, that our privileges are yet touched, that we then first clear that: but his own opinion is, that our privileges are not touched; and [illegible] prepare for a sessions.

[illegible] Answer [illegible] carry it [illegible] [illegible] that [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] go on with [illegible] [illegible]

Mr. [illegible] saith, that he is much comfort[illegible], that [illegible] [illegible] have the Par[illegible] [illegible] in the [illegible] that we sent [illegible] [illegible] to dispatch [illegible] [illegible] against to-morrow, [illegible]

Sir Tho. Wentworth [illegible] that a member [illegible]

Mr. S[illegible] [illegible] the great business of the [illegible], and desired the Speaker to come more early than he hath been accustomed.

Dec. 1[illegible]. Sir G[illegible] saith, that [illegible] [illegible] that [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] our Privileges [illegible] that we may see, how the state of our [illegible]

Mr. Ser[illegible] saith, that we should [illegible] Answer [illegible] [illegible] our religion [illegible] [illegible]

Sir J[illegible] [illegible] [illegible] which is expressed in the King's Answer [illegible] we now [illegible] [illegible]

Mr. C[illegible] *of the* [illegible] with this day, [illegible] He [illegible] [illegible] Answer [illegible] [illegible] the Prince [illegible] [illegible]

Sir James Perrot [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] privileges, if they are in[illegible]

Mr. Brooke saith, that we have our privi[illegible] [illegible] He [illegible] [illegible] and [illegible] that we should pass another

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] means, we may have a sessions before Christ-[illegible]

[illegible] of the things now here in agitation: whereon, [illegible] on his maj.'s Letter; whereon we are to observe [illegible] house, how we ought to proceed; on which [illegible] could he, with a perspective, see our hearts, he [illegible] great comfort to see, that so great a prince [illegible] grace of princes, and not by a right descended [illegible]

and that we [illegible] to have a sessions now; for that which will content the country is not only bills: and, if [illegible] content; for they look to have some ease of [illegible] as to have a few bills. As for the bill of Sub-[illegible] of the house: and, in 5 or 6 weeks, he doubt-[illegible] desired to have a sessions; and since that time [illegible]

Sir *Tho. Wentworth* would have a committee [illegible] permission and toleration: and this of our Pri-[illegible] he best [illegible] a sessions or no, till he seeth how our privileges [illegible]

Sir *Dudley Digges* would have a committee [illegible] for he must say still, that our Privileges are our right and inheritance, born with us. He would [illegible] privileges by custom or prescription; for, 'nullum tempus occurrit regi.' But he think-[illegible] and doth now say so directly.

[illegible] that, as we came to [illegible] with bills. Since the bill of Monopolies is [illegible] not be worth our labour to have a sessions, [illegible] great grief to us, to hear so wise a king to [illegible] have us stile them a liberty derived by the permission of princes; and he thinketh this doth [illegible] right and inheritance: that, by Magna Charta, [illegible] of the peers, bar[illegible] greater, and [illegible]

[illegible]

beheveth, that 'invidus hoc fecit:' the devil, [illegible]

[illegible]

parl. here in the parl. 'in principali subjecto,' and therefore 'in summo gradu:' that the li[illegible]

[illegible]

and life of all laws, and laws are in parl. 'in [illegible]

[illegible]

at the root of all our privileges. 'Consuetudo [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] vileges therein.

[illegible]

the House that he had a Message from the [illegible]

"To our trusty and well-beloved Counsellor, [illegible]

"Jacobus Rex.—Right trusty and well-be[illegible]

[illegible]

now conclude a session by making of good and profitable laws, they continue to lose time; and [illegible]

[illegible] in appointing a committee to-morrow, to [illegible] [illegible] good [illegible] [illegible] the ancient and [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] these [illegible] [illegible] words [illegible] [illegible] except they [illegible] they were granted unto [illegible] favour of [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] of them, [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] years upon [illegible] and [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] to [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] and how [illegible] [illegible] from time to [illegible] [illegible], to [illegible] our good purposes, [illegible] [illegible] service, which they owe to us and to [illegible] kingdom, [illegible] when the country shall come to be truly informed, they

[illegible] give the authors thereof [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] court at [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]"

Mr. Secretary C[illegible] then said, that it was [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] it was [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] letter from [illegible] [illegible] and that every one that [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

Sir [illegible] said, that we have now, [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] of our Privileges, which [illegible] [illegible] privileges and [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

Sir [illegible] saith, that there are [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] privileges [illegible] he [illegible] saith, there are [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] and to [illegible] [illegible], but we have [illegible] [illegible], especially [illegible] [illegible] our privileges, which [illegible] [illegible] [illegible]

Sir *Rob*[illegible] saith, that he [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] under the [illegible] [illegible] words, but [illegible] to [illegible] words, he [illegible] [illegible] [illegible] King's last Letter to the Secretary hath not yet [illegible] in his maj.'s Letter, that dutifully may be con[illegible]sist on the rectifying and settling of our privileges; for thereby shall we be able, at another [illegible] tion to the country, that we have left our pri[illegible]

Mr. *Recorder* saith, that it is a great grace [illegible] himself. And he believeth, that our privileges [illegible] that he taketh himself bound to maintain our privileges and liberties. That the king [illegible] which we can claim; and that, of grace, he will add to it, if we shall deserve it. He would not have our privileges brought into writing; for then, if we leave out any thing, we [illegible] ourselves from the rest; for the king will say, [illegible] He would have a Protestation entered here for the better satisfaction and settling of our privileges. He [illegible] of the commonwealth, and that thereby we [illegible] the affections of the king and people.

[illegible] would have those Privileges, [illegible] precedents or otherwise; and for this would have a committee appointed.

Sir *Geo. Moore* thinketh, the king hath given us good satisfaction [illegible] And [illegible] yet no bills have been passed, he would have us enter here our protestation for our privileges, and then go on with bills, for the conclusion of a sessions.

Sir [illegible] the bills and business of the house if it be but to shew our thankfulness to his maj. for his gracious message; but would principally have us appoint a committee to consider of our privileges. He is glad to see by a precedent, even now shewed by sir E. Coke, [illegible] hath used to be silent, and it is now no new thing.

Mr. *Tho. Crewe* saith, that we have now more need of a committee to consider of our Privileges than we had before; for, on so great a matter, he would not have us conclude any thing, till a committee hath considered of it. [illegible] us do our best to establish a concord. He would have it entered here in the house, that our privileges are our undoubted right and inheritance, and this to be done by protestation. He would have a general committee appointed to clear us of those things we are charged by his maj.'s last Letter to mr. Secretary; where[illegible]

Sir *Dud. Digges* [illegible] on the particular words of his maj.'s Letter; [illegible] explain himself: and would have a select, but not a general committee to go on with the consideration of our privileges, [illegible]

Mr. *Chancellor of the Dutchy* protesteth, that the king's heart is [illegible] that ever was.

Mr. *Glanvile* saith, that this last Letter to the Secretary is a very gracious letter, but withal it is a very wise and a very wary letter. He would have a Declaration made here in the house [illegible] particulars, (and so name in the Declaration [illegible] ties whatsoever in general words.

[illegible]

Mr. *Solicitor* saith, that we, in our Petition, [illegible] words and petition; and he thinketh it fit, we should lay a law on ourselves, not to take exceptions at the words [illegible] would have us, at a committee, recollect all [illegible] and then to set down, that, having received [illegible] and so to go on with other business of the house.

[illegible] Protestation for our Privileges, as the house [illegible]

Mr. *Hackwill* saith that the privileges of the [illegible] to be relieved: that it will be ill news when the [illegible] house are called the Custom of the Commons of this house, and the Custom of England: the privileges which we claim, especially that for Freedom of Speech, are the very essence of a parl. There is a statute 2 H. 5. wherein it is written, that the Privileges of this house are the inheritance of the subject: that till 1 H. 4. the [illegible] the Speaker of this house. But he would not [illegible] it left out, for we see the inconveniences that follow it; for that makes the king conceive, [illegible] (made here in the house) for our privileges, in [illegible]

[illegible] of the council, to desire the king that we may [illegible] sible to have a sessions before Christmas.

[illegible] testation for our Privileges: That he can tell [illegible] both the lords and the commons: That the [illegible] be done still at the first meeting of the parl.; [illegible] it the house might [illegible] protestation for our privileges, and then send [illegible]

It was then ordered, that a Committee of [illegible] thereunto; shall sit tomorrow morning.

[illegible] fall again into a parliamentary course, to avoid [illegible]

[illegible]

"Mr. Speaker.—Whereas, at the humble [illegible] nas; to which purpose we gave them time un- [illegible] loved Privileges to our said house, [illegible] paring things most necessary for a sessions; We [illegible] to impart our mind unto them; which is, that [illegible] for the most part rather judge things by the outward effects that [illegible] them; We have an earnest desire to make this a sessions, to the end that our good and loving [illegible] grace and goodness towards them, by our free [illegible] this meeting, and the [illegible] by proclamation. And therefore, calling to [illegible] effected before the end of the sessions, we wish them, that, as we have given order for the [illegible] a session. Thus much we thought good to give them to understand; and withal to assure them, [illegible] ly to prepare the aforesaid things, for our royal [illegible] sessions; and in such case we must give a larger [illegible] of Dec. 1621."

Mr. [illegible] that this is a most gracious Letter, whereby his maj. desireth a sessions, [illegible] be a sessions: That the Pardon will do as much [illegible]

[illegible] pointed concerning our Privileges, and, if we then thought a committee fit to consider of our [illegible] that that committee may consider of our privi- [illegible] humble thankfulness to his maj. for his gracious [illegible]

Mr. *Solicitor* offereth a short bill for to con- [illegible] long a debate for so short a time. And he saith, the Pardon is also ready. He saith, no [illegible]

[illegible] gracious Letter, and that the house held it fit to give his maj. thanks for it.

Mr. *Tho. Crewe* saith, that this Letter is full of oil, and 'non est dignus datis, qui non est [illegible] husbanding of our time, against our next meeting, if we now, by a committee, settle our Privileges: then we may go on, without interruption, with the bills which are here: That [illegible] of Statutes, in 3 days; for it will ask a day's [illegible] our Privileges.

[illegible] king, which his maj. in his Pardon, doth mention to pardon: but, being granted away before, they are not pardoned by the general pardon; and therefore he would have us (before the Pardon come here) appoint a committee, [illegible] patentees. He would have a committee to consider of our Privileges, and of our thanks to [illegible] therein the reasons, why we do not, or rather cannot, proceed for a sessions.

[illegible] thanks for his gracious Letter and satisfaction that we cannot go on with businesses for a sessions, at this time. Mr. Speaker, by order, [illegible] should consider of it, so as we may end it [illegible]

Mr. *Glanvile* would have our humble thanks to his maj. and our presenting to him the rea- [illegible] sons of our not proceeding for a sessions, according to his maj.'s Letter.

[illegible]

Of our humble thanks for his gracious Letter: [illegible] thing on misinformation or misinterpretation.

A Select Committee of four was accordingly [illegible]

[illegible] freely our minds: that, if (as it hath been here [illegible] joy them, as we are bound to his maj.: that his maj. said, that there is a difference between an absolute king, and a politic king, as himself is: [illegible] privileges. We are to be the more careful of [illegible] covered. He would have us view all the king's [illegible] liberties have been impeached; and also to [illegible] violated or impeached: and would have us take [illegible] king, by petition or otherwise; and that afterwards we make, and enter here our Protesta- [illegible]

Mr. *Noye* would have us resort to the pre- [illegible] us do the same again in this case; but, if it be [illegible] bills, by the same reason may he command us [illegible] nish any capital misdemeanours in parl. but [illegible] privileged man in any of his maj.'s courts, notwithstanding his privilege; but it is other- [illegible]

Sir *Tho. Wentworth* would not have us debate, at this time, of the right and privilege which the house hath, to treate of matter of War, and the Marriage of the Prince; because we did, in our former Petition, decline the further meddling therein; but would have us stand upon it that our Privileges are our right and inheritance, and that it is at our election, to go on [illegible] other businesses.

Mr. *Wentworth* saith, that he never yet read of any thing that was not fit for the consideration of a parl.; and, if there be a negative bound, or *ne plus ultra* set in any matter of parl. then he wisheth it may be known, that we may know our bounds.

*Petition of Thanks to the King.*] Mr. Speaker going into the chair, mr. Serj. *Ashley* reported the Petition of Thanks to the King, as here followeth:

"May it please your most excellent Majesty;—We, your most loyal and humble subjects, the knights, citizens and burgesses of your Commons' House of Parliament, having this morning, to our great comfort, heard your maj.'s Letter, sent to our Speaker, full of grace and goodness to us and all your people, have thought it our duty, forthwith, to return our most humble and hearty thanks to your sacred maj. for so royal a favour vouchsafed unto us. And we do [illegible] desire your maj. to be truly informed from us, that, although we have [illegible] to your maj. [illegible], to our country, [illegible] to have [illegible] good laws now to have been passed; and that there might have been a sessions before Christmas, to which your maj. upon our humble Petition, was graciously pleased to give way; yet, entering now into a serious consideration of the nature of those things, which must of necessity be prepared for the finishing of a sessions, and the straitness of time, whereunto we are drawn by [illegible], which have taken [illegible] of your great grace, we are enforced [illegible] your maj.'s grace and favour, humbly submitting ourselves to your royal wisdom, what time will be the fittest for our [illegible], and that in our recess, to perfect those beginnings, which are in preparation with us; which time, by God's grace, we resolve to spend with that diligence and care, as shall give good satisfaction to your maj. to our country, and to our own consciences, that we shall not [illegible] the same."

This Answer, or Petition of Thanks, was then ordered to be engrossed presently, and sent to the king; which being done, the Speaker went out of the chair, and the debates on the Privileges of the house was resumed.

Mr. *Alford* would have a select committee appointed to consider of the points of such of our Privileges, as are impeached, and to draw a Protestation for the same Privileges, in particular, [illegible] of all the rest, in general.

Mr. *Fra. Crew* saith, that, though the calling of a parl. and the continuing, prorogation and dissolving of it be in the king's power, yet, when we are called, we are, without limitation, to do what business we ourselves think best; for otherwise shall we not be able to do that business, for which we come hither, which is that of the country. He would not have this Committee to insist so much on particulars, as on the generality of our privileges.

Sir *Edw. Coke* would not have us here, at this time, in the handling and debating of our privileges, to meddle with War or Marriage; and would have a sub-committee appointed for this; and this sub-committee shall consider of all those matters, which are mentioned in the writ of parliament, and also of our Liberty of Speech, and of our power to punish those that speak too lavishly; and of our power to meddle and debate of what we shall, of ourselves, think fit. The Heads to be considered of by the sub-committee for Privileges. 1. Concerning Freedom of Speech; and therein to treat 'de arduis et urgentibus negotiis regni,' according to the writ of summons, whether it be concerning the king, or otherwise. 2. Touching the Liberty of this House to punish the misdemeanours of any parliament man in parl. for things whereof this house hath cognisance, whether he ought not to be censured here by the house only. 3. Whether, when we receive commandment from the king, the house shall thereon desist, and not proceed, notwithstanding such command in any business. 4. Whether our privileges be not our right and inheritance. 5. That the sub-committee shall consider of any thing else, incident to the liberty of the house. 6. Whether it be not fit for us, to make an expression here in the house, that it is an ancient Privilege of parl. that no member of this house shall presume to acquaint the king with any business in debate here, but by order from the whole house, or from the Speaker.

It was then ordered, that a sub-committee shall reduce all these Heads, which have been propounded, into the form of a Protestation; and that they shall render an account, and their reasons of such things, as they shall think not fit to be reduced into a Protestation; and the sub-committee is appointed acordingly, and is to sit this afternoon in the committee chamber. The Speaker being in the chair, it was ordered, that the Speaker shall attend the house at 4 of the clock, this afternoon; that, the sub-committee having drawn the foresaid Heads into the form of a Protestation, and made a report thereof to the grand committee, the house may (if occasion be) confirm the Protestation, because otherwise the king might command the house to be adjourned, before such Protestation be made in the house, and so endanger the validity of its privileges and liberties, in those points, wherein they have seemed to be impeached at this meeting, viz. in those Heads before ordered to be considered of by the sub-committee.

*Protestation of the Commons concerning Privileges.*] Dec. 18. p. m. Mr. Serjeant *Ashley*, from the sub-committee, presented to the house, [illegible] and Jurisdictions of Parliament, are the ancient

in such order, as, in their judgments shall seem

claring of any matter or matters, touching the parliament or parliament business; and that, if

and questioned for any thing said or done in

mons assembled in parliament, before the king give credence to any private information."

tered, sitting the house, between 5 and 6 of the

said, he had given order to adjourn the parl.

and said, that our petition was a mannerly

lished a few days after:

"His most excellent maj. coming this day

London, which were 6 in number, there attending upon his maj.; the clerk of the commons

that were in the commons house of parl.; and

ment; with which Form of Protestation his

maj. in a most gracious manner, there ex-

unto them; and whatsoever privileges they en-

rials, and utterly to be annihilated; both in

time: for after such time as his maj. out of his [illegible] house of commons, as that [illegible] Lent [illegible] the [illegible] the messages from the house of commons were [illegible] to [illegible] the [illegible] of the [illegible] were [illegible] procured to be made for [illegible] was made [illegible] liberties, and at six [illegible] by candle-light, the same [illegible] was brought into the house [illegible] the third part of the house [illegible] word [illegible] to another day, and a fuller house, and some that [illegible] stood up to have [illegible] to it, but could not be seen or heard [illegible] Now for the [illegible] of the Protestation, it is [illegible] in such ambiguous and general words, as may serve for future [illegible] to invade most of the rights and [illegible] to the imperial crown [illegible] the word [illegible] for [illegible] the [illegible]

[illegible]

*[illegible] Proceedings in the case of sir J[illegible] B[illegible].* It [illegible] sir John Perrot's [illegible] more [illegible] to save his [illegible], and being ordered to attend from day to day; [illegible] that sir [illegible] to be tried, [illegible] an [illegible] ance. [illegible] and [illegible] was obliged to wait, [illegible] of Dec. [illegible] to the house, that sir John was so sick that he could not, without danger of his life, make his personal appearance, it was agreed [illegible] should stand [illegible] but not to incur any [illegible] for his non-appearance, at [illegible] Then upon the Lord [illegible] the house, That many [illegible] were [illegible] every [illegible] against the said sir John, which were [illegible] upon. It was ordered, "That [illegible] justice and care [illegible] this house, to question the said sir John [illegible] the [illegible] be doubted of, notice shall be given [illegible] petitioners, that this time was [illegible] and too short [illegible] to proceed against him upon these complaints [illegible] resolve, at the next access, to proceed against him effectually." As the next meeting never took place, in this reign, it is very probable, sir John did not die of the [illegible] got off [illegible] and [illegible] at the dissolution of the Parliament.

*Proceedings against sir J. Bouchier for [illegible] the [illegible]* [illegible] Sir John Bouchier, a Yorkshire knight, had presented a [illegible] to the Lords, on the [illegible] of Dec. [illegible] some indirect dealing in the lord keeper of the great seal, for not giving a sufficient [illegible] to a cause of his [illegible], and [illegible] to re-hear the same. The Lords [illegible] petition into consideration, for [illegible] and, after examining several [illegible] question, That the [illegible] proceeding [illegible] or haste [illegible] sir John Bouchier's cause, as was [illegible] petition. And, on a second question it was agreed, That the said sir John [illegible] punishment for the same. — Accordingly, Dec. 1[illegible] the Sentence [illegible] was assented to, viz. "That he should [illegible] in acknowledgment, in their house, [illegible] of his fault, and that he [illegible]" But the lord keeper [illegible] the said sir John behaved [illegible] at the hearing of his cause [illegible] beseeching their lordships to [illegible] the acknowledgment of his fault in that [illegible] his [illegible] commended the lord keeper [illegible] Then sir John [illegible] and his acknowledgment ready drawn up [illegible] delivered [illegible] the Judgment of this House, I humbly submit [illegible] of the [illegible] victed of a great misdemeanour, for taxing and [illegible] great seal of England; I do in all humbleness, acknowledge the justice of that their Sentence, and [illegible] heartily sorry therefore; I do, therefore, crave pardon [illegible] of the lord keeper [illegible] communicated [illegible] him, that [illegible] the [illegible] ry, and also his imprisonment: for which the said sir John [illegible] ships, and particularly the lord keeper. But, [illegible] for traducing the then principal officer of state, this man lived in the next reign, not only to [illegible] the House of Lords and of Commons, but also to [illegible] his sovereign's blood, as [illegible]

*The Lords propose a meeting with the Commons on the Supply.*] Dec. 14. Things being in a confused state, already mentioned, between [illegible] House of Commons, and [illegible] likelihood of a Supply from that quarter, a motion was made in the House of Lords, by the lord Digby, to put the Commons in mind, "That this session was called to provide a present support for the Palatinate, as was delivered by message [illegible] likewise said, "That he had since received [illegible] danger the Palatinate was [illegible] the army of the duke of Bavaria, in pursuit of count Mansfeld, [illegible] count, [illegible] nate, if he be not speedily supplied with means [illegible] great an army; which must be in great distress [illegible] so long as he hoped to be relieved from England [illegible]

The lords having duly weighed the matter, it was agreed, That there shall be a meeting with the [illegible] directed by the house, or a committee, in his narration, and it was ordered, that his lordship should put down the heads thereof in writing against the next morning: at which time [illegible] ed as a narrative only.—But no message for this [illegible] presented a Commission, from the king, for [illegible] ensuing.

[illegible] ed, the King thought proper to issue a Proclamation [illegible] reasons for so doing. The following is a copy [illegible]

"A Proclamation for dissolving this present Parliament."

"Albeit the assembling, continuing, and dissolving of Parliament, be a prerogative so peculiarly [illegible] thereof unto any; yet, according to our con[illegible] in our time; and that the lett and impediment [illegible] and jealousies might be removed; and all our [illegible] number of parliament-men; as we are confi[illegible] the miserable effect of war and dissension; yet, with full purpose, if that succeeded not, to recover it by the sword, and, therefore, as a ne-

[illegible] of our kingdom; and, although, after their first [illegible] curious and unprofitable things, than upon the [illegible] laws; yet, we gave them time and scope for [illegible] clared that we would make a recess on the 4th of June next following, but only for a time, and [illegible] ance to any of the business in hand; express- [illegible] great assemblies; our progress approaching; [illegible] to attend us when we went our progress; the [illegible] many terms together; the long absence of jus- [illegible] of the country: And therefore we appointed [illegible] and answer before that recess; for presenting [illegible] well entertained by some, who in a short time [illegible] meet, but desired a Conference with the [illegible] given for the adjournment; which being made [illegible]

[illegible] ready and fit to be then passed, continuing all [illegible] continue the session for a fortnight more, where- [illegible] esteemed of most importance; for which pur- [illegible] them; which being, in effect, as much as the [illegible] by with a gentle admonition, so, for the matter [illegible] name of both the houses; but, in conclusion, [illegible] estate of our children abroad and the general afflicted estate of the true professors of religion in foreign parts, they did, with one unanimous [illegible] ful and solemn Protestation, That if our pious [illegible] was desired in the treaty, whereof they humbly [illegible]

[illegible] fail which we had to prevail by treaty; we in [illegible] them the true state and necessity of our chil- [illegible] assent to the speedy payment of a Subsidy newly to be granted; yet, upon this occasion, [illegible] such inordinate liberty, not only to treat of our [illegible] were within the capacity of that house according [illegible] had sued unto us for a session, and for a general [illegible] assented; yet, after this fire kindled, they rejec- [illegible] ward, they either sat as silent, or spent the time [illegible] ges; which for better clearing of truth, and satisfaction of all men, we are about to publish in print so soon as possible we can: and, al- [illegible]

[illegible] fringe any of them, if they should so deserve it [illegible] make this a session, to the end our good and loving [illegible] clamation; and although we had given order [illegible] this prevailed not to satisfy them, either for [illegible] their own customs in all matters of weight, con- [illegible] and welfare of this whole land; and, by their [illegible] ensuing, we minding not to continue the same any longer; and therefore not finding it fit to [illegible]

[illegible] noblemen and [illegible] knights, citizens, and [illegible] it shall appertain, that they forbear to attend [illegible] journement; and in so doing they are and shall [illegible] jects should take notice, for avoiding of all [illegible] in the same manner as our progenitors and [illegible] and other our ministers, in their several places [illegible] unto all our people; and that we shall be glad [illegible] January, 1621. *Per* [illegible]

[illegible] The [illegible] were [illegible] bers of the house of commons; amongst whom, [illegible] were [illegible] by preferring a bill against him, before the [illegible] this eminent lawyer, by name; for which they [illegible] into Ireland, joined in commission with [illegible] latinate; and, not long after this, sir John Sa- [illegible] was made comptroller of the king's houshold, a pri- [illegible]

[illegible] The two [illegible] agencies of state requiring it; the king was advised to call a new parliament, notwithstand- [illegible] shall present the reader with a view of the State of the Peerage at this time:

*[illegible] I.*

[illegible], W[illegible]
[illegible]
Edw. e. of Worcester, [illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Thomas, earl of Arundel and Surrey, earl [illegible]
[illegible], e. of Cumberland, [illegible] of the household
[illegible], e. of Pembroke, [illegible] of the household
[illegible], e. of Northumberland
[illegible], e. of Nottingham
[illegible], e. of Shrewsbury
Henry, e. of Derby
[illegible], e. of Rutland
[illegible], e. of Cumberland
[illegible], e. of Huntingdon
[illegible], e. of Bath
[illegible], e. of Southampton
[illegible]
[illegible], e. of Hertford
Thomas, e. of Suffolk
Richard, e. of Dorset
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible], e. of Montgomery

[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
John, e. of Holderness
[illegible]
[illegible]
Christopher, e. of Anglesey
[illegible], visc. M[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
[illegible]
Henry Nevil, lord Abergavenny
[illegible] Touchet, lord Audley
Edward, lord Zouch
Robert [illegible], l. Willoughby of Eresby
Henry West, l. De la Warr
George, l. Berkeley
Henry Parker, l. Morley and Monteagle
Richard, l. Dacres and Herst
Edward, l. Stafford
Emanuel, l. Scroop
Edw. Sutton, l. Dudley
[illegible], l. Stourton
Charles, l. Herbert, [illegible]
John, l. Darcey and Meynill
Edward, l. Vaux
Thomas, l. Windsor
Thomas, l. Wentworth
[illegible]
[illegible], l. St. John de Bletso

Thomas, l. Cromwel
William, l. Evers
Philip, l. Wharton
Edmund, l. Sheffield
William, l. Paget
Dudley, l. North
Theophilus, l. Howard, of Walden, son to the earl of Suffolk
Edward, l. Wotton
Francis, l. Russel, of Thornbaugh
Hen. l. Grey, of Groby
William, l. Petre
Henry, l. Danvers
Robert, l. Spencer
George, l. Carew
William Fienes, l. Say and Sele

Edward, l. Denny
Charles, l. Stanhope, of Harrington
Thomas, l. Arundel, of Wardour
Jn. Holles, l. Houghton
John Roper, l. Teuham
Philip, l. Stanhope, of Shelford
Edward, l. Noel
Fulk Grevile l. Brook
Edward, l. Montague
Robert, l. Carey, of Leppington
Henry Rich, l. Kensington
John, l. St. John, of Basing
William Grey, of Warke

Lay-Peers - 93 | Abps. and Bps. - 26—119.

*The King's Speech at the opening of the Session.*] The parl. being [illegible] which day, being all met again and the Commons [illegible] the following speech:

"My lords spiritual and temporal, and you that are [illegible] mons of this present parliament.

"It is a true saying and uttered by the spirit of God, 'that the glory of a king stands in the multitude of his people:' and I am sure it is as true, That the strength of a kingdom, stands next, and immediately after God's pro- [illegible] may see and have a proof that I have not this [illegible] way) I have called you at this time to speak my mind freely to you; for, remembering the [illegible] I am now come hither with an earnest desire to do the duty which God hath called me unto [illegible] my actions to be true by my words. I remember very well, that it is a very fit similitude for a king and his people to be likened to a husband and wife; for, even as Christ, in whose throne I sit in this part of the earth, is the husband [illegible] treat her kindly, to reconcile himself towards [illegible] are but two ways for a king to shew his love to his people; one, in the constant good government of them during his life; the other by [illegible] parl. For the first, God knoweth, I desire my [illegible] none [illegible] you but see or hear me this [illegible] have found the fruit of it, one time or other. [illegible] be to shew love between you and me, and between me and you, that are the repesentative body, in a right understanding, than, out of my own mouth and direction, to give you a taste [illegible] ties and causes of calling a parliament, (and so go the writs) are to confer with the king, and [illegible] weight and importance. For this cause I have [illegible] of my love and of my trust, and give me your advice, in the greatest matter that ever could concern a king; a greater declaration of my trust in you I cannot give.—I have been these many years upon Treaties, as far as I thought [illegible] intention) for settling a peace in Christendom and settling a peace at home. In these Treaties I went long on, but finding them to have slower success than I expected, or had reason to do, I was willing, (and especially in one [illegible] yet finding their actions quite contrary, it stirred up my son to offer himself to make that Journey; and I thank God, having him now here, I have no cause to repent of it. For, being of [illegible] to know the certainty, in a matter of so great weight, that he might not be put off with long delays; for delays, in such a case, are more [illegible] a rare example, to grant his desire: and with him I only, sent the man whom I most trusted, Buckingham; commanded him never to leave [illegible] God for it, for it hath learned me wisdom; for, in 'generalibus versatur dolus.' I had general hopes [illegible] Generals will not; and, before this Journey, [illegible] of them before. I was as far disappointed of my ends as if I had been waked out of a dream; now I have put it into a certainty; and, whereas I walked in a mist before, I have now brought [illegible] know the utmost. I am resolved upon what I [illegible] shew the trust that I put in you. I am content [illegible] late unto you all: and when you have heard all, 'super totam materiam,' I shall then [illegible] in things of this weight. For, I assure you, ye [illegible] doubt, for, if you love yourselves, you will give [illegible] private Treaties, but I always had a direct re- [illegible] subjects. I only thought good sometimes to [illegible] bid or alter any that concern Religion. I never [illegible] the spur: so a king, that governs wisely, is not bound to carry a rigorous hand over his sub- [illegible] be a great matter to require your advice, yet in [illegible] ness. I cannot limit you hours nor days, but your own hearts must do it; for every man, by [illegible]

[illegible] will not serve the turn, if I, like a good gardener, [illegible] actions, I dare avow them before God and his angels. But jealousy hath a deep sting, take [illegible] my wife, and jealousy is subject to a wife; ther [illegible] toms, be not over curious; I am your ow [illegible] me curious to the contrary. I had rather main- [illegible] Show a trust in me, and go on honestly as you [illegible] what you have warrant for, go on with, and I [illegible] questions among you; which spoils good business. Remember, 'beware of genealogies and curious questions,' as St Paul speaks; and do [illegible] which I call you; and next, for all [illegible] I speak as a Christian prince, never man, in a [illegible] thirst more in hot weather for drink, than I do now for a happy conclusion of this parl. I now [illegible] may prove happy. I am neither curious nor [illegible] you in this great cause for which I have called [illegible] this parl. I shall clearly see your hearts; and [illegible] subjects: for you know in your conscience, that of all the kings that ever were, I dare say never [illegible]

[illegible] And this doing, I hope you shall not only find the blessing of God; but also, by these actions, [illegible]

[illegible] and choose a Speaker. The names of receivers [illegible]

"Most Gracious Sovereign,—Since I cannot bring an olive-branch in my hand as a sign [illegible] are the hearts of kings) without whose providence a sparrow doth not fall to the ground, [illegible] best school, 'that obedience is better than sacrifice;' and will only say with a learned father, [illegible] wise I have great cause to be afraid of such a [illegible] sunshine; which a poet elegantly express'd, 'Mira cano, sol occubuit, nox nulla secuta est.'

to disturb your peaceable entrance; but the ac-

concurring to express their great contentment. This was no sudden flash of joy, but a constant blessing, by the continuance of the Gospel and

at once; but God laughed them to scorn, and they fell into their own trap. These things I

a duty to be practised, and to be expressed by our thankfulness to our holy God; for it is a good thing to be thankful: 'non est dignus dan-

designment to this place, I called to mind these statutes of late times, and find two of especial

'Parliamentum doctum,' for the many good

other is 39 Eliz.; which, by a reverend divine, was called 'Parliamentum pium;' because the

other charitable laws, which I omit, being not perpetual. And I likewise called to mind many glorious offers made by your maj. and other

call us to you again, and hath made declaration, that all jealousies and distractions might

and we proceed in such a sweet harmony and conjunction, that 'righteousness and peace may kiss each other,' and that 'mercy and

'ecce quam bonum & quam jucundum regem & populum convenire in unum.'—And, for per-

the late queen; that so this parl. may be called,

to your subjects, and no diminution to your revenue, or derogation to your perogative; which, in your maj.'s hands, is a sceptre of gold; but, in other hands, is a rod of iron. I need not

mon laws; 'veritas temporis filia,' time hath

best government; and of monarchies, those

safeties are but as Ajax his shield, a weight rather than a defence. Their desire is, that the good laws for religion may be confirmed; and that the generation of locusts, jesuits and se-

Eliz. lived and died in peace: the Pope cursed

the ark of true religion, and when you are old and full of days, land you in heaven; and then

must leave to enjoy a crown celestial. And

was heretofore a sanctuary in our distress,

wont to say, 'hoc sentio, & Carthago destruenda est;' but I say, 'hoc sentio, & Palatinatus re-

who answered, 'Concord was their walls.' Your

within with a wall of brass, the bond of unity and religion; and happy is that place, of which

but extends itself to Ireland; where your maj.'s

of religion, the reforming of courts of justice,

of the public peace. And I am ocularis testis,

'rara, pauca, & ponderosa.'—Therefore with your gracious favour, accordingly to ancient

---

* Sir Tho. Crewe was one of the members

testation, in the last parl.; and was thereupon sent into Ireland upon a commission. See p.

[illegible] your own fit time of access; and that all our actions may have a benign interpretation, and [illegible] I may not only be a Speaker, but an humble [illegible] kings do reign, that whatsoever I have said, hath proceeded from a loyal heart; I therefore desire that I may be covered with the vail of your [illegible]

[illegible] *Speech.*] The Speaker having finished his ha-[illegible] the king, and then answered as follows:

"Mr. Speaker; his maj. hath heard your [illegible] bation; and as you have not cast it out into any general parts, no more will I: it is pity to pull down a frame which cannot be set up in so excellent a form again. A mathema-[illegible] in; so I may observe, in your round and vo-[illegible] which are of two natures, some striving for life, others dropping into their graves: some-[illegible] for the ordinary Supply of princes: somewhat of Benevolence: somewhat of the increase of true Religion: somewhat of regaining that which is lost to our enemies: somewhat of preserving our own: and somewhat of the refor-[illegible] mals; the formals were three. 1. Privileges [illegible] house. And, 3. a good interpretation of all [illegible] voice, 'quæ est petitio tua & dabitur tibi;' he [illegible] the king; we cannot deny God's blessing of us, [illegible] his peaceable access to the crown; his miraculous preservation in this place; and our comfortable hope of the future. All these 'ibunt [illegible] for settling of possession, that were enacted 32 Hen. 8. which you call 'Parliamentum [illegible] 'Parliamentum pium;' and those statutes of grace, which were provided in the last convention, (which his maj. would have made 'Par-[illegible] may make this 'Parliamentum munificum,' his [illegible] you call Parliament-Nullities; 'quem animus meminisse horret.' A strange chimera, such as I never read of, but in the articles of the [illegible] tholicam.' Parliaments naturally beget entities. God and the king are averse to nullities. The first parl. was the three persons consulting together, 'faciamus hominem.' God is a maker and not a destroyer. Every consultation is for [illegible] opinion, 'lex oblivionis' is the best: let the [illegible] river Lethe, never to rise again.—I will put you in mind of a story, which Tully relates out [illegible] a brazen trophy. A complaint was made be-[illegible] cord was made eternal. Their judgment was, [illegible] between Greek and Greek. I leave the appli-[illegible] neral, it is of a convenient disposition, and fit [illegible] that he would never allow any project which [illegible] For the ordinary Supply of Princes by parl. [illegible] favourable to the subjects; because they issue [illegible] hands of the people. Benevolence is but an anchor, and a help at a dead lift; because parliaments are a great body and of a slow motion. [illegible] never assented thereunto; but compelled by an intolerable provocation without, and invi-[illegible] lence, can find fault with that Benevolence.—[illegible] house was anciently a Chapel; and it still may be said, 'non domus est, sed templum;' so [illegible] may gives full assurance, that he esteems no [illegible] of Religion; and if any scandal hath been, it [illegible] He never spared the execution of any law, but for a greater law, 'salus reipublicæ;' all the rest are 'fines sub fine.' Our observation of any law is not for the written law, but for the [illegible] no connivance but for the propagation of true religion. 'What knowest thou, O man! whe- [illegible] simile touching a skilful horseman; which, in 7 [illegible] always with a sure hand, not always with a hard hand: but, 'aliquando remittit ferre [illegible] grow insolent, 'cast out the bond-woman and her son,' his maj.'s resolution is, 'That [illegible] given leave to us, that are his chaplains, to put [illegible] her olive branches from their inheritance. A [illegible] cable means, to recover the Palatinate, there- [illegible] evertenda,' with 'Palatinatus deglutinanda;' it ought to be unglued again, and pulled out of [illegible] this business; 'Patrias deprehendere curas.'— [illegible] places, to stamp his own name; so it cannot [illegible] spent 7 years study, and is become a master [illegible] works, yet a fitting distance from his master's. —Lastly; for the Reformation of Ireland. As [illegible] tion. I will only add, out of Valerius Maxi- [illegible] sine Catone? What is wisdom without liberty [illegible] dom to use it."

---

* The prince Palatine, sometime king of B[illegible]

*The Lords desire a Conference concerning* [illegible]

[illegible] journed to the 23rd of Feb. On which day, [illegible] desire a Conference with the Commons, for the [illegible] Chamber, to-morrow, at 2 in the afternoon, [illegible] in his Relation to both houses; and also that the secretaries should attend with their [illegible] brace the meeting, as is desired, and will attend [illegible] seven earls, one viscount, and three barons, [illegible]

On the Prince's motion, the Report which was [illegible] to the 27th. At which time the Lord Keeper [illegible] committee, and not to the house. This Re- [illegible] cupy too great a space in this work will be found in vol 3 of the Lords Journals, p. 220. The follow- [illegible] Lord Keeper reported to their lordships, 'That the duke of Buckingham began with a three-fold Preface: the 1st concerning himself. The [illegible] the 3rd concerning the subject whereof he [illegible] impression) which the business required; and [illegible] that, among many great ones, this was none of [illegible] to put him at this time under the wings and [illegible] upon a subject of such a nature as shall afford [illegible] must either blush or wrong his modesty; if other- [illegible] ness; but would spare, for all that, (as far as [illegible] ration itself his grace used indeed a close, but [illegible] observe therein 6 distinct and several parts. 1. [illegible] 2. The Treaty of Marriage, set a foot in Spain, severally, and by itself. 3. The Treaty of the [illegible] by a reciprocal subordination. 4. The Prince's Return from Spain. 5. His majesty's subse- [illegible] without the other; and, also, that they had so [illegible] by any other means than the sword; yet, their lordships do still think it not fit to deliver their [illegible]

[illegible] ter which a long debate arose, what to propose [illegible] for it at the conference. And a committee was [illegible] search for precedents of former treaties and [illegible] complained of. Therefore, a Message was sent [illegible] stood; for that they do think it most proper, [illegible] cation of it to his maj.—After some time, the [illegible] ships about it, by a committee of both houses. [illegible]

"That they had conferred with the Com- [illegible] ambassador against the duke for his Narration, [illegible] That they highly approved of what the duke [illegible] their lordships, by a committee of their whole [illegible]

[illegible] duke of Buckingham put the lords in mind of the Grand Affair; and that a speedy resolution [illegible] cious, which the enemy would not pretermit; [illegible] spring, it would be irrecoverable: therefore his grace moved the house, That a committee [illegible] of Munition, and to make such Provision for a [illegible] take a view of the magazines, stores, arms, and munition; to consider about the transportation of ordnance; of the ports of the land, and weakness thereof; of Ireland and of all other things incident to these; to present their opi- [illegible]

March 2. The Attorney General read a Letter to the King from the lord Digby, afterwards earl of Bristol, dated Madrid, Jun. 8. After [illegible] began to deliberate on what should be delivered to the Commons, at a conference that afternoon, concerning the Grand Affair. And it [illegible] with an Induction, out of the duke's Narration; and then acquaint the Commons, That the [illegible] 'super totam materiam,' 'That his maj. cannot, with the safety of his own honour, or conveni- [illegible] way of supplement, first, concerning the Treaty of [illegible] the duke of Lerma into England. 2. Concerning the Treaty of Restitution, That the [illegible] in case a mediation should not prevail; though [illegible] 'That when it was noised he should be detained a prisoner in Spain, he sent word by Grymes [illegible] more on him as a son; but reflect all his royal thoughts on his sister, and the welfare of his [illegible]'

*The Commons' Reasons for agreeing with the* [illegible] of Canterbury made a Report, briefly, of what [illegible]

"Reasons conceived by the House of Com- [illegible] Treaties with Spain:

"I. It is observed, That the state of Spain, [illegible] fanta and her family, which other princes, in [illegible] prince's person in their possession, pressed a [illegible] the Roman religion, to the great dishonour [illegible] in this realm; and to the apparent diminution of his maj.'s sovereignty, by establishing a necessary dependance for protection upon a fo- [illegible] tion of the laws of this kingdom; and, lastly, [illegible] faction have exceedingly increased in this realm both in multitude and boldness; and whereas [illegible] upon Spain, and the secular Priests; otherwise [illegible] the protestant party in all places where they [illegible] for abating that party here at home; which [illegible] daughter; invaded his towns and territories in all places; and, in fine, disinherited him, with [illegible] fect restitution, that the eldest son of the count [illegible] overthrow of our religion by all possible devi- [illegible] abused his maj. with their Treaties; how small [illegible] ness and worth; what indignity they have offer- [illegible]

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible] to which he was ill-disposed; considering withal, [illegible] he had put himself within their power; although [illegible] ousness and endless delays in their Treaties, in- [illegible] advantage of their own particular ends; being [illegible] an incurable mischief. And, for a further justification of the charge of insincerity in all their [illegible] Treaty concerning Prince Henry; after many [illegible] he found nothing but delays and deceits; and, [illegible] When his highness was in Spain the count [illegible] there was nothing really intended; which they [illegible] hazardous a journey, and such an extraordinary [illegible] they found a new shift, by a Juncto of Divines, [illegible] ing the Palatinate; the faithful promise of [illegible]

[illegible] *dus.*; and a committee of the lords was ap- [illegible]

March 8. The Archbishop of Canterbury re- [illegible] maj. at Theobald's; at which time he delivered [illegible]

"May it please your Most Excellent Ma- [illegible] pacl. And, 1st, They and we do give most [illegible] pleased, now at last, to dispel the clouds and mists, which, for so many years, have dimmed [illegible] king of Spain; which we jointly offer from both [illegible] of sincerity in all their proceedings, we, 'super [illegible] dress unto your maj.; that the Treaties, both [illegible]

[illegible]

"My lords and gentlemen all; I have cause first to thank God with all my heart and all the [illegible] amongst you; as that, with an unanimous con- [illegible] me your advice in this great business; for which I also thank you all as heartily as I can.—I also [illegible] the Lower House; for that I heard, when some [illegible] me and my people, they presently quelled those motions; which otherwise might, indeed, have [illegible] of my life, a peaceable king; and have had the [illegible] "*Rex Pacificus*," should be loth, without ne- [illegible] my nature and from my honour, which I have had at home and abroad, in endeavouring to avoid the effusion of Christian blood; of which too much hath been shed, and so much against my heart: I say, that unless it be upon such a necessity, that I may call it, as some said merrily of women, 'malum necessarium,' I should be loth to enter into it. And I must likewise acquaint you, that I have had no small hope given me of obtaining better conditions for the restitution of the Palatinate, and that [illegible] be not jealous, nor think me such a king, that would, under pretence of asking your Advice, put a scorn upon you, by disdaining and rejecting it: for you remember, that in my first [illegible] people, I craved your Advice in this great and weighty affair; but in a matter of this weight, I must first consider how this course may agree with my conscience and honour; and next, ac- [illegible] after I have resolved of the necessity and justness of the cause, to consider how I shall be enabled to raise forces for this purpose.—As concerning the Case of my Children, I am now old; and, as Moses saw the Land of Promise from an high mountain, though he had not leave to set his foot on it; so it would be a [illegible] long prolong my days, as if I might not see the Restitution, yet at least I might be assured that it would be; that then I might, with old Simeon, say, 'nunc dimittis servum tuum, domine, &c.' Otherwise it would be a great grief unto me, and I should die with a heavy and discomforted heart. I have often said, and [illegible] be of that mind, That as I am not ambitious of other men's goods or lands, so I desire not to enjoy a furrow of land in England, Scotland, or Ireland, without Restitution of the Palatinate: and in this mind I will live and die.—But let me acquaint you a little with the diffi- [illegible] that shall advise a king to war; and it is an [illegible] may be had by peace. Besides, I think your intentions are not to engage me in war; but, withall, you will consider how many things are requisite thereunto.—I omit to speak of my [illegible] Sure I am, I have had the least help in parl. of [illegible] years. I must let you know that my disabilities [illegible] ney into Spain; which I was at for his honour, and the honour of this nation: by sending of [illegible] and by assisting of the Palatinate, I have incurred a great Debt to the king of Denmark, which I am not able yet to pay.—The Low Countries, who, in regard of their [illegible] are fittest to help for the Recovery of the Palatinate, are at so low an ebb, that, if I assist [illegible] good, are all poor, weak, and disheartened, [illegible] land, I leave it to you, whether that be not a [illegible] quire a new charge, as well for its own strength, [illegible] I vow to God, eat no bread but by my means; I must maintain them, and not see them want. In the mean time, my Customs are the best part of my revenues, and, in effect, the substance of all I have to live on; all which are farmed out upon that condition, That if there be a war, those bargains are to be annulled; which will enforce a great defalcation.—Subsidies ask a great time to bring them in: now, if you assist me that way, I must take them up [illegible] more. In the mean time, I heartily thank you for your advice, and will seriously think upon it; as I pray you to consider of those other parts.—My Treasurer, to whose office it appertains, shall more at large inform you of those [illegible] your hearts, I cannot want your helps; for it is the heart that openeth the purse, not the purse the heart. I will deal frankly with you; [illegible] would have me, and if I take a resolution, by your advice, to enter into a war, then your- [illegible] disposing of the money; I will not meddle [illegible] surers. I say not this with a purpose to invite [illegible] nor engage you before I have engaged myself. Give me what you will for my own means; but, I protest, none of the monies which you [illegible] selves. If, upon your offer, I shall find the [illegible] and that I resolve to embrace your advice; then I promise you, on the word of a king, that [illegible] gatives of kings, yet, as I have advised with you in the Treaties on which the war may ensue, so I will not treat nor accept of a peace, without first acquainting you with it, and hear- [illegible] you; and, haply, the conditions of peace will [illegible] of [illegible] was [illegible] I am so desirous to forget all rents in former [illegible] them often; and I desire to end my life in that [illegible] abuses as I cannot be well informed of but in [illegible]

[illegible] the State of the Nation; which the Lord Treasurer [illegible] afterwards a message was agreed upon to [illegible] That, according to his maj.'s command, a Re- [illegible] treasurer unto them; and they imagine the [illegible] members of it there: therefore, as this is like [illegible] labour to avoid) their lordships desire a meeting, [illegible]

March 12. The Lord president of the Council [illegible] the king's end might be in this, his highness [illegible] lest the like doubt might also have arisen [illegible] thus much unto them: "That the king did not [illegible] our advice; but intended that, in the first place, [illegible] of the kingdom; and when we had resolved upon that, then it should appear a thing of no [illegible] fear and imagine, that, when these things shall [illegible] together again. For this his highness urged [illegible] last Answer, "That it should not be his fault if he was not in love with parliaments; and [illegible] to meet in parliament. But 3 things his highness wished us chiefly to consider: 1. How far [illegible] the year was run on. And, 3. How far we [illegible] fore it was fit to use expedition, and so to pro- [illegible] and do no more; but also be able to bite when [illegible] certainly it was principe dignum, a most heroic speech; viz. Gentlemen. "I pray you think [illegible] consider it. First, my Father's honour, next mine; and more particularly mine, because it [illegible] me, but bring dishonour upon yourselves: but, if [illegible]

[illegible] dent's Report, they received a message from the Commons to this effect; That they had [illegible] consent, to give his maj assistance: and, by [illegible] a committee of 6 from each bench to attend [illegible]

---

[illegible] president: But how this Account was received [illegible] will appear in the sequel.

[illegible]

occasion the issues of the house, they agreed [illegible]

March 12, p. m. The committee of lords [illegible]

Report of it to the house, to this effect: "That [illegible]

of it, by a general vote of the house; but agreed [illegible]

presented to the king, by a committee of both [illegible]

[illegible] called The Originals; but this is supplied by a subsequent Account, much fuller than [illegible]

[illegible] bassadors sent hither; charge of the naval ex- [illegible]

Towards all these * * * (Here is an hiatus for [illegible]

in the public Expences, had been made; as, [illegible]

gun there, both for church and commonwealth; which, pursued, would subsist of itself: for the [illegible]

a year; reduced those last 5 years to 30,000l. [illegible]

for magazines: for the Forts, a commission was [illegible]

have made a certificate of the charge; which

may [illegible]" The [illegible]

[illegible] ceeding reign, a great orator in the house: he said, "That want of parliaments were the prin- [illegible]

the commonwealth: that the king's proposi- [illegible]

breach which we advise him to: to prepare for [illegible]

with them in a committee of a council of war, [illegible]

the question, "That, in pursuit of their Ad- [illegible]

a parliamentary manner, with their fortunes [illegible]

"May it please your sacred Majesty; We [illegible]

a sovereign to a subject, and of a subject, re- [illegible]

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

of God and man. [illegible] weakened and diminished; which we humbly [illegible]

"The Parliament's Remonstrance or Declaration to the King.

"May it please your most excellent Maj.; We [illegible] taken into our consideration your gracious and prudent Answer, given to the unanimous and humble Advice presented to your maj. in the [illegible] to intimate your royal inclination not to reject that counsel which yourself was pleased to ask; and which, accordingly, hath been offered [illegible] by reason of your extraordinary charge and [illegible] support a war, which, haply, may follow on the breach of these Treaties: we do therefore, [illegible] fections, assure your maj. and hereby manifest and declare, That in pursuit of our advice, [illegible] dangerous) we will be ready, in a parliamentary manner, with our persons and abilities to [illegible]"

*The King's Answer.*] To the foregoing Remonstrance, the King answered as follows:

"My lords and gentlemen all; I have nothing to say to the [illegible] in it which I never spoke: for whereas he said, 'I have shewed myself sensible of the insincerity of those, with whom I had lately to deal, [illegible] in this you must give me leave to tell you, that I have not expressed myself to be either sensible [illegible] Buckingham hath made a relation to you, by [illegible] thunder to it; and a king should not speak, [illegible] I now heard read unto me, I confess, it is [illegible] an offer. And, with your favour, I need fear [illegible] assistance, I hold it to be more than millions [illegible] ward for the trust and freedom which I have [illegible] consider the possibility of the action: for, in this case, I must do, as a man that maketh a [illegible] in-works; so I must not deal only with my own [illegible] assist me in so great a business as the Reco- [illegible] to our enemies, nor a comfort to my friends [illegible] not carry it; therefore I must resort to parti- [illegible] viour Christ in the gospel, before I begin a war, to see how I can maintain it. God knows it is a longsome work, yet I desire with Moses, [illegible] mise, though I live not till it be recovered. [illegible] is little to the point: therefore, since you give me such fair general promises, I will deal freely with you, I will tell you, in particular, the way [illegible] otherwise; which being done in parliament, is a parliamentary way. I would require you to [illegible] a greater grief of heart, and sting of conscience, than I have done, and do: and I now growing [illegible] tisfying of my Debts before I go out of the world: and, for this end, I desire you would [illegible]"

[illegible] an objection made, that this might seem con- [illegible] till the wars were provided for: the Prince [illegible] 15ths to make it up 6 Subsidies and twelve 15ths [illegible]—

The king proceeded: [illegible] or that I may see a fair way for it, I will follow your advise; for I would never have asked your advice to reject it, or to put a scorn upon [illegible] but this I leave to your consideration. And since I leave it to yourselves to receive the money, and expend it by your own committees of both houses, you may be the more secure. And yet I would not have you to be too hasty in the levying of it, that no extremity be shewed to my people by imposing too heavy a burden [illegible] about it. I told you before, I had, in this [illegible] honour, as well as to the means: for the means, [illegible] point I am already resolved in a great part; [illegible] a war; and that his maj. answered, "He was already satisfied and resolved therein; but, for [illegible] your advice." Then the duke of Buck. said, "[illegible] and conscience, if he should now have left [illegible] ing it."] The king again proceeded, "I told [illegible] in love with parliaments: and, to shew mine [illegible] is to make this a session for the passing of as [illegible] prepared; and at Michaelmas, or within a few days after, to have a new session, and another at the spring. And, in the mean time, you [illegible] parliaments and rejoice in them; and, I protest, as I have asked your advice in these points, which I needed not to have done, so I [illegible] advice: and I will help you myself, if we enter into a war, to make it allowable to the world, [illegible]

[illegible] March 22. [illegible] ceived a message from the Commons, import- [illegible] affairs; wherefore they desire a conference [illegible] mittee was returned from it, the Report was made by the abp. of Canterbury, That the [illegible] sitions in writing, and had left a blank for their [illegible] agreed to leave it out; but not without a di- [illegible]

"Most gracious Sovereign; We your maj.'s [illegible] comfort, you have vouchsafed to express your- [illegible] lution, in pursuit of our humble advise, to assist your majesty in a parliamentary way [illegible] ment foreseeing that it will make a deeper [illegible] so great a work, was graciously pleased to de- [illegible] cing of this great business; we therefore, in all [illegible] your maj. and the whole world, an ample tes- [illegible] and that provision for defence of your realm, [illegible] sonably made) have, with a cheerful consent of [illegible]

[illegible] that is to say, 3 entire Subsidies, and 3 15ths, [illegible] your most noble son, the Prince; the ancient [illegible]

[illegible] Morley, having presented a Petition to the [illegible] persing many copies abroad: the said Morley [illegible] and, after a full hearing of his allegations, be- [illegible] was, by general consent, sentenced, "1. That [illegible] king, a fine of 1000l. 3. That he shall stand, [illegible] in a milder manner.

[illegible] March 24. The Lords went upon a further [illegible] the king. And there having been a Memorial [illegible] hereof, with the king's Answer to it, to many- [illegible]

[illegible] spiritual and temporal, the knights, citizens, [illegible] threefold representation: 1st, concerning that [illegible] that king. 2 For that concerns my lord, they [illegible] the business, and unto both houses. 3. For [illegible] expressed therein; and so, without your fur- [illegible] son; who, as they verily believe, hath, in this [illegible]

[illegible] in his report. "Now, my lords, concerning his maj.'s Speech; it is not to be expressed or reported, because it is a speech of affection as [illegible] fore, unless a man had Myron's art, 'qui ani- [illegible] for, as Livy said of Cicero, 'ad laudandum [illegible] the commending of Cicero; so, surely, he [illegible] expressions. I will therefore crave pardon of [illegible] nounced; and, first, to be read once or twice; [illegible] of no small comfort and consequence to the [illegible]

[illegible]

put the worse be made, because it is approved [illegible]

[illegible] the Treaty with Spain [illegible]

[illegible] form the Commons. The same day, a committee of Lords being returned from a co[illegible]

"My Lords and Gentlemen; The last time I spake to you anent this great business, I told [illegible]; wherein I shewed you what good it would do, [illegible] far you declare yourselves, is sufficient for the present entrance to the business, tho' a great deal short of what I told you it would require. But, as God bears me record, I never did stick [illegible] selves by particulars, that I may see how I may be able to go thro' so great a matter, at least [illegible] than a kingdom; for the strength of a king, [illegible] ever any parliament, for a beginning, gave to a king so great a Supply to be levied in so short a time. This may well serve for a preparation. [illegible] well expected; therefore, with as much love, [illegible] told you before, that I would never have craved your advice to reject it, and so put a scorn [illegible] fore-hand: and I account it better that a king advise well before he take a resolution, than ad[illegible] clare unto you, That as I am willing to follow [illegible] a charitable [illegible] to have [illegible] of a king who hath so long ruled and governed over you; and I may vaunt myself thus far to [illegible] as the most easy and probable way for recover[illegible] I have been so long delayed and paid with generals, that I dare not longer trust unto them; which made me enjoin Buckingham to [illegible] that business, (and I am sure such an Account [illegible] you may know what to trust to. I could, in this case, have resolved myself; but, I thought it could not but be both a strength and honour to me to have the advice of my people. My lords: In the late parl. I then declared it unto you, that I was resolved, without respect of [illegible] remember it.—God is my Judge and Saviour [illegible] should live to have any other end; and, for my [illegible] old, but mine only son is young, and I will pro[illegible] this I dare say, as old as I am, if it might do [illegible] bestowed, tho' I should end my days there: for [illegible] resolved to live with other mind [illegible], I will say more, there was never any enemy of my son-in-law, with whom I talk'd of that business, or any that ever I spake with of the same, which did not say, and confess, I had [illegible] thus far assure yourselves, I will go chearfully about it, to prepare all things possible for it; [illegible] I hope you will think of me; but that I leave [illegible] own committees: and, I assure myself, you will think of me for a double reason, my Customs are likely to fall, by occasion of the war, and my Charges increase; but, undertaking the war, I must go thro' with it [illegible] a king, Tho' I [illegible] broken the necks of three parliaments, one after another, I hope [illegible] affections, that this shall be a happy parl. and [illegible] England ever was.—In my last speech I promised you, that if I accepted your offer, I would [illegible] ing you, and requiring your advice; and I like[illegible] I desire you to understand, that I must have a faithful and secret Council of War, that must [illegible] where I shall send 20,000l. or 10,000l. whether [illegible] hope to have gotten it without a war. I held it [illegible] but, since I see no certainty that way, I hope [illegible] advice, will so bless it, that I shall clear my [illegible] never had but an honest heart: and I desire that [illegible] restitution of my children; and whosoever did the wrong, I deserved better at their hands."

*The Lords desire a Conference in regard* [illegible] ingham informed the house, "That he had been [illegible] far greater and stronger navy than that in 1588: [illegible] own harbours: Therefore he moved, "That [illegible] handled as to be useful; which will not be, if [illegible] further moved, That a meeting might be [illegible] dealt with, to disburse such a sum as was re[illegible] would be found to disburse the same upon that security." A message was immediately dis[illegible] the Lords and a [illegible]

[illegible] the conference, the house received a message from the commons, importing, "That they had taken the proposition made to them, at the last meeting, into serious consideration; but, [illegible] portance, they have deferred, for a time, to come to a resolution; but, as soon as possibly [illegible] reported, That, in a committee appointed to examine the Stores and Ammunitions of War, [illegible] concerned the honour of a Lord of that House; [illegible] ficers of the crown should be sent for, to be [illegible] Pye, sir Tho. Mounson, sir Tho. Dallison, sir [illegible]

*The Commons propose a Petition against Re*[illegible] they desired a conference with their lordships [illegible] the whole house; but their lordships took time [illegible] it should be noised they were beginning a persecution; but they came to no resolution about [illegible] these words:

---

[illegible] Most Excellent Ma- [illegible] and the Parliament; and having, on our parts, with all alacrity and [illegible] don; what boldness, yea, what insolency they [illegible] combine themselves together for that purpose; [illegible] drawn upon your maj. and your state; do, in all [illegible] their humble petitions following:—" I. That [illegible] nished not to receive, entertain, comfort, or [illegible]

[illegible] laws in that behalf made, and the ad[illegible] [illegible] III. [illegible] your laws appointed; and there to remain con- [illegible] according to the laws of this your realm: and, [illegible] granted unto them for their repair thither; and [illegible] IV. [illegible] of mass, or other exercises of the Romish reli- [illegible] been trusted in places of lord lieutenants, de- [illegible] VI. [illegible] rally, to put the laws in due execution, which [illegible] VII. [illegible] doms; we are most humble suitors to your [illegible]

declare, by proclamation, which I am ready to [illegible] dom. This I will do, and more; I will command [illegible] the disarming of them, that is already provided [illegible] desire: and more, I will take order for the [illegible] jects to all foreign ambassadors: for this I will [illegible] make them examples. Another point I will add concerning the education of their children; of which I have had a principal care, as my lord of C[illegible] council, can bear me witness, with whom I have advised about this business; for, in good faith, it is a shame their children should be [illegible] or at Rome, so I do grant not only your desire, but more. I am sorry I was not the first mover of it to you; but had you not done it, I would [illegible] the best advice in the world; for it is against the rule of wisdom that a king should suffer [illegible] jects of another kingdom? therefore assure your- [illegible] own laws.'

## [illegible]

We now enter upon an affair of a very extraordinary nature, wherein one of the prin- [illegible]

April 8. The Lords received from the Com- [illegible] they yesterday sent to desire a conference [illegible] cordingly: but, that now a great and weighty [illegible] spired against him; for, otherwise, an imputation might rest upon that house, or some of the members, there being, at that time, a Committee on Munitions, &c. who had taken divers [illegible] house, absolutely, from any combination a- [illegible]

April 12th. A message came from the Com- [illegible] again; because they said, That a lord of that [illegible] in theirs in the afternoon; which they had yielded to. On this a motion was made to consider, that it might trench deep into their privileges, for a lord of that house to answer an accusation in the house of commons, either [illegible] lord treasurer, the house gave him leave to [illegible] mons if he pleased. However, an order was [illegible] plaint in the house of commons, either in person or by his counsel." Then the abp. of Canterbury reported, That a committee being [illegible] tion thereof, which touched the honour of the lord treasurer. Whereupon the said lord [illegible] sworn here, and a sub-committee appointed to [illegible] into writing, his grace delivered to be read. But, before that was done, the Lord Keeper [illegible] Petition from sir Tho. Dallison, delivered unto him by a member of this house, who [illegible] in parliament assembled," and ran in these [illegible]

"The [illegible] Da[illegible]

"Whereas there was an Examination, before a committee of your honours, concerning the [illegible] my lord treasurer; whereupon there is an Account given to your lordships, by one Mayle, a scrivener, on his lordship's behalf, of 26,000l. [illegible] treasurer for the said lands, as Mayle reported; [illegible] forced out of their estate therein by his ldp. for a very small matter, by colour of his maj.'s extent; and is able to make appear to your [illegible] money or money's worth, given for the same by his lordship; and for that the said lands are of far greater value; and this petitioner [illegible] estate: he most humbly desireth your honours [illegible] tioner may be allowed to make such just ex- [illegible]

A motion was made, Whether by the orders of the house, the lord treasurer may be present [illegible] might be present, at the first reading, but not when the same shall be debated by the house.

[illegible] in hæc verba:

"The State of the Business referred to the [illegible]

"On the 28th of May, 6 Jac. 1608, a privy- [illegible] being, for the issuing out such sums of [illegible] April 1614; but then, or shortly after, by the [illegible] nished; and Dallison, who had received those [illegible] maj. made a reference to divers lords of the [illegible] their hands a proposition of Supply, estimated [illegible] maj.'s commission was awarded to the com- [illegible] Office of Ordnance: and they, in July 1620, made a Return hereof to the council, with their [illegible] Treasurer; and, in May 1621, a privy-seal [illegible] years and 6 months, in all that time none of the three establishments, viz. that of 6 Jac. [illegible] the lords; nor that of the commissioners of [illegible] trenched a needless charge of near 10,000l. [illegible] 500l. a month, hath deprived his maj. of the [illegible] more: but, by the want of due payment, not [illegible] proportion, but his maj. it is conceived far- [illegible] the public, to the said Office of Ordnance for old arrears; which have a dependency upon [illegible] about 2 months before the earl of Middle- [illegible]

[illegible]

13,062l. were paid; but his ldp. before the pre- [illegible]

[illegible] which make up the former payment of 19,034l. [illegible]

[illegible] money, it appeareth that, upon a second pay- [illegible] charged; and, in lieu thereof, his ldp. assigned [illegible]

[illegible] Mounson for his estate in Dalison's lands; for [illegible]

[illegible] should hinder them of satisfaction; and this [illegible]

[illegible] life; for which, and the arrears, about 1200l. [illegible]

[illegible] dent to sir Roger Dalison's becoming officer."

[illegible] that cause. But, as for any other matter re- [illegible] swer to make; wherefore he desired he might have a copy thereof, in writing, with liberty to [illegible]

[illegible] debate. After some time spent therein, it was [illegible] pointed to draw up the Heads of a Charge against the lord treasurer, out of a brief of the [illegible]

April 15. A message was brought from the Commons to this effect; "That whereas they had received divers and sundry complaints against a member of that house, which are of a high and grievous nature, they desire a con- [illegible]

[illegible] *a Complaint against the Lord Treasurer.*] Ap. 16. [illegible] held the day before, between the two houses, in this manner: At this conference, sir Edw. [illegible] him guilty after a strange manner; for, in all

present 3 Enormities to their lordships, much
against his mind; others being far more suit-

other accidents; yet, he said, he would do it

tributed into two parts; one of which should

sordid Bribery. The 2nd, for procuring the

ing some circumstances; for circumstances to

to set them out in fuller representations; but

“By the lord treasurer's privity (for it con-

a lease of the subsidy and imposts of the French

farm, 17 Jac. at 44,000l. yearly rent, and for
50,000l. fine; with a covenant from the king,

their lease; because that they knew that the

treasurer. Then they thought themselves ‘in

of 3l. per ton upon the French Wines, which

and themselves quite undone. It is a rule,

venant: but to this they could obtain no an-

time. Well, ‘verba sunt hæc:’ these were

their purses: they must have a warrant from

king's into a public act; and this they could

men understand themselves very well, and

thing remarkable: This was taken out of the

yearly books, and called a gratuity ‘speciosa-

this, there was a voice of a parliament, Oh!

liaments; and that surely this lord, of all

them; ‘nescio quid peccati portat ista pur-

nominated his Witnesses: which, he said,

but is a witness with a witness. For Jacob

was taken in three notorious falsities. 1. Being

it: there was one. 2. He pretended he had
received the money, but gave his bond for it.

3. He said he never had any warrant to enter
the same in the petty farm; yet, afterwards,

[illegible]

[illegible] and fearful to posterity; for besides the old in- [illegible] three more upon one another, 'et quis erit [illegible] to surrender that lease, and obtained a new [illegible] great a reward as 4000l. per ann. for 21 years? [illegible] higher nature. That the king having granted, [illegible] sition is restored: This is observed in all other [illegible] which his ldp. did, without any warrant, where- [illegible] the substance of their crying Complaint; what [illegible]

'If thou seest the oppression of the poor, and violent perverting of judgment and justice in a province, marvel not at it; for he that is [illegible] higher than he. Eccl v. 8.' Their Complaint [illegible] and God higher than all; whose justice your [illegible]

This Report being ended, the lords took into [illegible]

[illegible] lordships may divide themselves into several [illegible] Charge; which mr. Attorney read in form following. [illegible]

"I. The farmers of the Petty Farms of [illegible] of Wines newly set, were long and instant [illegible] quer, and afterwards a petition to the king, for [illegible] treasurer agreed with them upon a recompence [illegible] out of their rent; yet, after this agreement [illegible] months, and, in the end, took of them a bribe [illegible] the account of the Petty Farms: but since the [illegible] the Great Farms.—II. The lord treasurer be- [illegible] security of 1500l. for every part. Five of the [illegible] resuming those five parts to themselves, tendered their own security; which his ldp. agreed to accept, yet protracted about 3 quarters of a year, until they gave him 500l. for his dispatch. [illegible] and the other 500l. first mentioned in one en- [illegible] render that lease; and, to effect the same, [illegible] Herriot for jewels; all which was paid between [illegible] porting any merchandize, and paying the du-

tion for Grocery Ware, which the out-ports, particularly Bristol, refused; upon long debate

be pressed thereto: nevertheless, the lord trea-

wards: and, for his own private gains, aiming

cured a reference to divers of the council to

the king and subject) in the year 1622, procures

swers to the same; and, by colour of those

thereby, unlawfully, putting into the hands of

ing therewith, in the absence of the master,

of liveries, &c. And whereas, by a privy seal

the ordinary of the Office of Ordnance; which,

from his maj. set, under their hands, a propor-

holding of that office: but his ldp. being trea-

whereby the stores are, in effect, wholly unfurnished.—And there being a Contract made

in particular, a suit, for compounding with his

sion, by a trial at law; using the power of his

28th inst. at 9 in the morning, to answer it.

yet in examination; and, when reported to the

fit.

other Answer to them than, "It is well."

April 27. A Petition from the lord treasurer

"The humble Petition of the Lord Treasurer

"Most humbly representing to this most

bly desireth may be sworn and examined for [illegible] him; viz. mr. dr Steward, mr. Rd. Hide, of the Middle Temple, mr. Wm. Hackwell, of Lin[illegible]

[illegible] a special committee to consider what Answer [illegible] sident, lord Rochford, the bp. of Rochester, [illegible] These lords having withdrawn themselves some [illegible] in these words: "1. That warrants shall be [illegible] names shall be exhibited in writing, and thought fit by the house to be examined; the interro[illegible] house to-morrow in the afternoon, and the wit[illegible] sent in, why the examination of them should [illegible] and answer was to hold. 3. His lordship may [illegible] defence; but it stands not with the orders of [illegible]

[illegible] water, one of the committee to search prece[illegible] where a member of this house did answer, by his counsel, to a complaint exhibited against [illegible] counsel; and that counsel was denied to Mi[illegible]

"The humble Petition of the Earl of Middle[illegible]

"Most humbly sheweth, That, according to [illegible] your lordships' judgments of the pertinencies [illegible] your noble justice, permit him to have copies [illegible] shall be utterly disabled to make that just defence, which a cause, of that importance to [illegible]

[illegible] all agree, "That it is against the order of this court, as well as of all other courts, for a de[illegible] the Petition, the following Answer was agreed on to it: "The lords expected to be obeyed and not to have been directed; and hold for a [illegible] directly prayed in the former Petition, therefore [illegible] fit a desire that the lords think the petitioner ill-advised to make such a request. And, ac[illegible]

April 29th. Another Petition from the lord [illegible] and favour, to grant him a farther day for pre[illegible] fall out to be much longer than he himself ex[illegible] rows, that, in a case so nearly concerning him, [illegible]

[illegible]

"That in respect of the lord treasurer's grea[illegible] to respite his appearance this day; but do en[illegible] [illegible]th so permit, he bring his Answer; if not, [illegible] for the final hearing and determining the [illegible]

[illegible] to the Charge [illegible] the Lord Treasurer.

"I. He undertook the office of the Ward[illegible] for that purpose, obtained a certain assignment [illegible] into disorder and confusion; he hath not duly [illegible] yielded any; but under colour of pretended [illegible] place, and for the queen's funeral. II. Whereas, [illegible] Sept. 8 Jac."

[illegible] the same; which, being read, were referred to a [illegible] of the Petition was as follows:

[illegible] ships he, with all his Answer, in writing, as [illegible] the court for the bringing in the rest; and that [illegible] him duly examined: but when that shall be [illegible] sides.—Middlesex."

[illegible] last past, he, by his servant, did receive at the [illegible] thereof, and for no other cause, as he hath [illegible] his maj.'s estate; so in this particular, touching the 9500l. allowed to the Petty Farmers [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

of the officers at the court.—Whereupon the lord [illegible]

[illegible]

treasurer, his maj. was pleased to direct, That the [illegible]

[illegible]

Touching the doubling fees for Continuance of [illegible]

That, [illegible]

[illegible] master, or surveyor; and the master's fees for [illegible] tions of 1618 appropriated the continuance [illegible] ment by the surveyor upon the master; now [illegible] fee for continuances taken by all masters [illegible] houses, men are rather forced to sue out their [illegible] cealed wardship: for if the petition should be [illegible] made for it within a year after the death of the [illegible] is charged with having delivered to the secretary, he doth humbly acknowledge the same; but, [illegible] scope of doing thereof was only for the pre- [illegible] either before or after putting the Stamp: and [illegible] the lord Burleigh, when lord treasurer, made [illegible] in other offices at present: yet, if the lord treasur- [illegible] used it: also he directly affirmeth, That, by [illegible] that fell out 8 or 0 years since; and the supply set down by the lords, in 1617, was 4 years before the lord treasurer was in office; neither did [illegible] but in this parliament: and for the Book [illegible] 1620, for supplying the Stores and future up- [illegible]

[illegible]

sued out, whereupon hath been issued to that [illegible]

yet unpaid for a year and a quarter: all which [illegible]

tinued in the office the first 5 months after; in [illegible]

first 3 months; but, getting no money for it, made a stop of his delivery, according to the [illegible]

broken in the lord Mandeville's time, and left wholly in distraction to the now lord treasurer, with a debt for 3 months powder, [illegible]

both the lord treasurer, and mr. Chancellor, [illegible]

sale: by this means, and by reason of other [illegible]

[illegible]

ver, in the king's time, were the Stores so well furnished with powder for quantity and good- [illegible]

Dallison's, the lord treasurer saith, "That he hath not made any unlawful bargain for the lands of the said Dallison; neither hath he [illegible]

owing to them by his maj.; with a special [illegible]

[illegible] id; and, with a covenant on the king's part, [illegible]

[illegible] it could give satisfaction unto them for the [illegible]

poor families, whose pressing necessities would

treasurer, to have given them satisfaction, if he

that no oppression or power was used in this

by the lord treasurer, or by his privity or direc-

hands, which was not for above 5 months;

lord treasurer, neither doth he know of any

the 8 years mentioned in the Charge, and that,

Wardrobe: with all which savings he, from

divers extraordinary sums, which were not

which, amounting to 7000l. or thereabouts, he [illegible] out any alteration by him, or any for him, in [illegible]

[illegible] to the lord treasurer, that the farmers of the [illegible]

[illegible] privy seal to warrant it; without which, it hath [illegible]

[illegible] All which the said lord treasurer doth aver to [illegible]

[illegible] received a Message from the Commons, importing, "That they desired a conference with their lordships, on the subject of two bills, then before them; and, at the same time, they [illegible]

[illegible] scribed, containing a Complaint against the [illegible]

[illegible] came, did thereupon lay new impositions upon [illegible]

This Petition from the Merchants was or- [illegible]

"Most humble shew, That whereas, in the [illegible]

great quantities of Hops, the now lord treasurer wrote his Letter to the Custom House, [illegible] till farther order from him; so that your Petitioners Hops, lay long in ships and lighters, to [illegible] composition; so that before your petitioners [illegible] others, have received up their goods upon bonds [illegible] but divers of them have not yet paid their mo- [illegible] have given forth in speeches; notwithstanding [illegible] pay in their monies, without any favour, to [illegible] oners, and others, as aforesaid, there was a great [illegible] that, since this great imposition, there hath not come hither the 20th part of those commodities [illegible] premises, and to be a means unto his maj. that [illegible] wise they must of necessity desert. And fur- [illegible]

[illegible] his ldp. desired that he might read the same, [illegible]

"His Majesty's Speech at Whitehall, to the [illegible] concerning the Lord Treasurer.

"My Lords! Of mercy and of judgment [illegible] There is a great officer of mine shortly to come [illegible] ercise judgment; for as I am under God in this [illegible] this matter and occasion; and, [illegible] have once said in a parl. before to you, so will I promise to shew you, as in a chrystal, my [illegible]

this time; and therefore, as a judge instructs [illegible]

yourselves in this great business; and the cause [illegible]

probation, I protest to God it would be a great misery to me, and a greater grief unto your [illegible]

had 'reum confitentem;' in this the party stands upon his justification; and therefore ye [illegible]

noble by their places; you are the most honourable jury of England; nor do I intend fur- [illegible]

vice of his council, nor shall you be for re- [illegible]

verity of the fact; for 'satius est reum dimit- [illegible]

fence; for, if your punishment be far inferior to the crime, it is an invitation to commit new [illegible]

offence, it is plain injustice and tyranny: there- [illegible]

lity of the offence. You will do, I am sure, what a jury doth, for you have taken a greater [illegible]

honour, to me; by your conscience, towar[illegible] God.—And here I shall give a touch of t[illegible] things; 1st, I shall speak of the Person of the [illegible]

often brought him unto me a private man, be- [illegible]

into my service. For I profess it here openly, [illegible]

besides him, I never saw young courtier that [illegible]

if he was not a good officer; he was an instru- [illegible]

himself protested many a time to me, That he [illegible]

in in it. Hereupon I thought him the fittest [illegible]

a thousand other particulars.—I must therefore [illegible]

forceth me so to do: he cannot but have [illegible] enemies; all Treasurers, if they do good [illegible]

surers and Ushers; because this latter must of [illegible]

people; you must avoid both these; and there- [illegible]

the Offence be clear; and, in the next place, [illegible]

bring forth a precedent, that may be prejudicial to you all and your heirs after you; pre- [illegible]

party w[illegible]nged, then you have a fair entrance [illegible]

concerns him not.—The main ground in an Im- [illegible]

party; here is a just ground for an accusation. [illegible]

a thing insufferable; how far it falls thus, in [illegible]

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

reward against the innocent; Extortion is done,

jects. I have discussed this point, and I do not

lords, I speak for justice; if this party have

ruptions of others. Thus I would say to you, if I was to die this hour: errors by mistaking,

and I must bear it. For if you question him

an unhappy master that doth not love a faith-

trust, my love is gone. If, of an angel, he become a devil, I will never excuse him: I will never maintain any man in a bad cause: 'Et

lord keeper willed him to stand up.

the Wardrobe.

"The Commons of England, being the ge-

robe; and shew, That, heretofore, that office

his maj. a great part thereof; whereupon he procured the office to himself: but he stood

ceived 15,500l. and no more; and that the said

discharged the said Funeral honourably, and in

the said charge within the sum of 15,500l. and

mas, 1620, the ordinary charges deducted; for

charge of the Wardrobe; and the king grants

to account; but not for the surplusage which

king makes the same Recital, 'ut supra;' and, having given the surplusage for 2 years before, doth now continue it for life, yearly at Michaelmas, upon his account, for the Wardrobe, the

his Patent. Note, He got, in these last 3 years, much al[illegible] diminished, and yet the state

and particulars supplied might appear; but, in

ther upon it, that the warrants were served short, and many not served at all; those that

Account, and obtained a lease of the Sugars, for a recompence of his surrender of that office."

the Charge; the clerk by his direction, read

Wardrobe.

Then the lord treasurer answered, "That

touching his estate; as, in the Navy, the House-

pences of the Wardrobe of a vast sum, every

chiefly much of the merchants: and had a good

ferred those to his servant Colebeck: That

served; whereas he hath laid out 6 or 7000l.

ceived, without account; which his ldp deli-

might be defrayed for 12,000l. per ann.; and that he, having reduced that office from 30, nay 40,000l. per ann. unto 12,000l. is a good

ness of gains in that office; but, to the end he might have a great recompence, first he named

Printed image digitised by the University of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

[illegible]

to be here again, at 2 in the afternoon at the [illegible]

[illegible] er; then he kneeled, and the lord keeper willed [illegible]

[illegible] matters, for it may be their own case; and he [illegible]

[illegible] but desired their lordships, that, if he forget any [illegible]

[illegible] granted in other courts, after publication, for [illegible]

[illegible] his proofs, or records, that the workmen of the [illegible]

[illegible] is charged, is for 3 several Corruptions; two [illegible]

[illegible] test of a bargain; and the third of a new-year's [illegible]

[illegible] in which lease there was a covenant, on the [illegible]

[illegible] 19 Jac. a new impost of 3l. per tun, was set [illegible]

[illegible] their great damage, they were to expect a com- [illegible]

[illegible] to the lord treasurer to give them a speedy dis- [illegible]

[illegible] This being agreed on, they were to have his lord- [illegible]

[illegible] ing a book according to the agreement; which [illegible]

[illegible] his lordship's secretary; but delayed from Dec. [illegible]

[illegible] pretext of a New-Year's-Gift, it stands proved. [illegible] with a tun of wine, intending to have added to it a pipe of Canary wine, or the best sack; but [illegible] their present, urged them to a further gratuity [illegible]

Corrupt

The Lord Treasurer answered, "That the [illegible] his maj. at such time as is affirmed; but they [illegible] torney was delayed for these two causes: 1. I [illegible] for the king. 2. For that their warrant [illegible] his part might be read; which were read ac- [illegible] And his ldp. affirmed, "That [illegible]

[illegible] proved, that the said lord treasurer, neither when he received the 1000l. nor long before, had any right to the said 32 parts: and there- [illegible] hearsed the 7 reasons by him formerly alledged, [illegible] of allowance back again, so no contradiction [illegible] he shall answer it at the fearful day of Judg- [illegible] by way of a New-Year's-Gift, he said, "That [illegible] much to his lordship; and further ordered, that [illegible] Monday next, at eight in the morning, at the [illegible]

[illegible] e to know, what time their lordships will please [illegible] Monopolies. They do also desire a con- [illegible]

The Lords have appointed a conference concerning Monopolies this afternoon, at 3 in the [illegible] solved of a time for the conference touching [illegible] but, as soon as they can conveniently appoint a [illegible] pedition therein.

Herriot to surrender that lease; and,

Nicholas Herman and Tho. Catchmay (t

gives order, in a time of scarcity

the payment of 14,868l. due unto the

And whereas, for the advancement of trade,

the proofs; see Lords Journals v. 3. p. 364.

r confessed, "That the lea

first acquainted with it, and well allowed there-

4000l. per ann. So there was no further pro

treasurer also confessed, "That he paid Her-

it was a just debt, and that Herriot had a power

ments of the Wardrobe, 20,000l. per ann. which he hath now settled at 16,000l. per ann. and

other matters."—

ever demanded of him; and affirmed, that

manner, viz. "That the city of London did

his ldp. commanded their goods, then

p. 363.

[illegible]

The lord treasurer answered, "That herein [illegible] treasurer Salisbury's time, until afterwards: [illegible] read the Examinations taken on his lordship's [illegible]

Mr. Serjeant Crew replied, "That there is no [illegible] 1624, [illegible] nation, taken for the king; and that after he, [illegible]

The Lord Treasurer affirmed to the Lords, [illegible]

[illegible] R. Dallison's Lands, in this manner, viz. "That [illegible] in which will appear that the lord treasurer, [illegible] but not employed: and that sir Roger Dallison [illegible]

[illegible] lord treasurer, being a commissioner for his [illegible] hand agreed to give for them 1062l. in hand, [illegible] 1062l. and security for the rest, be propounded [illegible] Customs for 9 years, valued to be worth 1000l. [illegible] whereof they never conceived a doubt; but so [illegible] their 8000l. within 3 or 4 days after, which was [illegible] his maj.'s money: but the 1062l. which was to [illegible] Farms; whereupon a new difference grew against them: but in the end they were enforce[illegible] for an half-year after the 9 years were expired, [illegible] worth for the first 2 years 1000l. per ann. it [illegible] farms at Michaelmas last; whereas if they had [illegible] of the Ordnance, that might ill undergo a bar- [illegible]

other 4000l. for as it is a corruption in a trea- [illegible]

gaining to himself a bargain by which he either had or did expect advantage; and though the [illegible] is a loser by Dallison's lands, it is certain that [illegible]

for a Bribe, though he never receive it, he is [illegible]

great debts and engagements; so as the inheritance of those lands, after the king's extent, [illegible]

surer was a referee from the king; and, for [illegible]

by an old entail; and the lady Dallison, widow [illegible] third as her dower; and the lord treasurer hav- [illegible]

certain forfeited bonds, which, upon the agree- [illegible]

[illegible]

sessed of a lease of great value, had assigned [illegible]

upon a trial and recovery at common law, [illegible]

their title to this lease; and having lodged in [illegible]

possession; whereupon they endeavoured to [illegible]

might sue to reverse this outlawry; but the [illegible]

half, to revoke that administration, and the [illegible]

reversal of the administration and in the end, [illegible]

caused a petition to be made in the name of [illegible] and a reference thereupon to himself for this [illegible]

[illegible]

being a commissioner for the king's debts, did [illegible]

[illegible]

the king, with a covenant to resort to the king. [illegible]

[illegible]

and were extended but at 200l. per ann. sir [illegible]

[illegible]

president and him: that they treated with the [illegible]

[illegible]

Chamber would have relieved sir Tho. Moun- [illegible]

lands were extended; and then the officers [illegible]

[illegible]

the bargains to be unlawful as before; and that [illegible]

before his lordship was treasurer; and then [illegible]

[illegible]

firmed, "That his bargain with the officers of [illegible]

[illegible]

the officers." And said further, "That it was not prejudicial to the officers; for if his second [illegible]

first should have been, he is to make it good [illegible]

[illegible]

for it, for which he pays interest at this day."—And his lordship denied, "That he drew the case, delivered to mr. Attorney, touching the [illegible]

[illegible]

May 11. A Petition of the Lord Treasurer [illegible]

"With most humble and thankful acknow- [illegible]

[illegible]

pearance before your lordships this day; find- [illegible]

[illegible]

unto your lordships for this little respite of time; my end and desire herein being to enable myself to obey all your commands, and [illegible]

whereof I doubt not but your lordships, in a [illegible]

[illegible]

bp. of Bangor, lord Cromwell, lord Say and [illegible]

[illegible]

unto his ldp. whom they found in his bed, but [illegible]

[illegible]

his not asking of leave first to be absent; "for [illegible]

[illegible]

night; and since the pleasure of the house is [illegible]

[illegible]

made this further Report, viz. "Having this [illegible]

stance; "for a man to be thus followed, morning and afternoon, standing 8 hours at the bar, till some of the lords might see him ready to fall down; two lawyers against him, and no [illegible]

Seale.

[illegible]

"As in the bargains and proceedings (which [illegible]

Christendom besides ourselves was in a combustion) he was wholly remiss: For whereas, by a privy seal in 6 Jac. there was a private [illegible]

reference from the king, set down a proportion [illegible]

a commission awarded to the commissioners [illegible]

himself being a chief man among them) set down a proportion of supply amounting to but 13,640l. 14s. 2d. and a yearly allowance of [illegible]

earl of Middlesex becoming treasurer about [illegible]

that office about two years and a half, did ob- [illegible]

munition: for it appears by the records of the [illegible]

lord treasurer in his time issued for a supply of [illegible]

April 1621, a contract was made with mr. [illegible]

yielded a plentiful supply into the office of [illegible]

this neglect: for upon a late survey, there [illegible]

Ireland wholly disfurnished: and besides, his maj. by sale of the overplus of the powder alone (above the proportion thought fit to be kept [illegible]

ment: and the lord treasurer was warned, both [illegible]

answered, "I had need, in the first place, [illegible]

plied, "That the lords conceive that these words are a wrong done unto them; and he conceived, that they are a greater unto his ldp. the lord treasurer who being a judge, makes no difference of a charge. The lord treasurer [illegible]

[illegible] juriously dealt withall, he answered 'by mr. At- [illegible]

and by their direction; and therefore the [illegible]

Office of the Ordnance, anno 6 Jac. The 2nd [illegible]

the second settlement, 'Nothing hath been [illegible]

and opposed, but never allowed; if allowed, it [illegible]

ldp. affirmed, 'That the Stores are furnished, [illegible]

sums: and whereas that office was unsettled by [illegible]

afterwards; so that a small sum will now settl [illegible]

whereof 21 lasts, delivered by Evelyn, were [illegible]

Neither can the king receive such detriment or [illegible]

affirmed, 'That he had paid more for powder than was paid for 7 years before.'

[illegible]

[illegible] court) the lord treasurer, by his importunity [illegible]

the court, who was to enter them without fee; [illegible]

then the master's secretary to make entry [illegible]

tary is not restrained; and, being unlimited, he [illegible]

whereas, before, no ward was esteemed a con- [illegible]

within 3 years after the death of the tenant: [illegible]

may make any a concealed ward, by con- [illegible]

lords a message from the king, viz. "That the [illegible]

honour and profit of the master, and in- [illegible]

[illegible]

soever any man gave voluntarily, so it was

[illegible]

for a favour to the subject? by this means

[illegible]

cial to the king; otherwise, within 3 years, the

[illegible]

sition is left to the council-board; but it is not

[illegible]

month; if to the clerk, perhaps he is out of town:

[illegible]

the interim; but it is of no force till the petition

[illegible]

Outlawries. And that it is no more prejudicial to commit a Stamp to his secretary, than it

[illegible]

charged him with 3000l. given him; whereas,

[illegible]

came to 60,000l. alone; for furnishing divers

[illegible]

Customs. 3. Compositions of the Out-Ports

[illegible]

of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

son's business, his ldp. said, It began originally

Dallison's lands, within a month after he was treasurer; yet, if the second bargain made

any one should have Dallison's lands again at

that did oppose him; and, if he had been as

sations; these he meddled

spoken ought that might discontent them; and

Wines to begin from them: it came from his

contradicted by the rest of the council, for that the merchant ships were then in the river; only

The lord treasurer being withdrawn, and the house adjourned, ad libitum, mr. Attorney

er, for not entering into a book of Accounts

institution of that office is altogether broken;

office; which a far less sum would have fully

to himself great and large gifts from his maj.

[illegible]

question put, "Whether the lord treasurer, for [illegible]

"To be censured."

May 12. p. m. Mr. Attorney read that [illegible]

Answer unto the said two Bribes, viz. "That [illegible]

upon a bargain of his four 32 parts of the Great Farm." And it appeared plainly unto [illegible]

4 patentees of that farm, in lieu of 5 partners [illegible]

the said farmers did present his ldp. with a tun [illegible]

treasurer be censurable, or not?" and agreed generally, "To be censured."

[illegible]

king, and for procuring a new lease thereof [illegible]

ships, That he had received a message from [illegible]

the same to begin presently after the date [illegible]

maj. (for nought appears) that a debt of 7000l. [illegible]

their lordships did not think it fit to censure [illegible]

from any censure in this particular Charge, or [illegible]

like composition; and for that it did not appear [illegible]

And agreed, "To be freed."

[illegible]

office for his own particular profit upon a con-[illegible] po[illegible], for part of payment thereof, the [illegible] he preferred [illegible] sir [illegible] lordships thought most sordid, for a lord treasurer [illegible] upon a debt long time since paid by the said [illegible] pretence of a debt to the king where there was [illegible]

All this being fully debated, the house was resolved [illegible] "What [illegible] bargains, and for not supplying the office of [illegible] to be censured."

[illegible] and mr. Attorney read the rest of the [illegible] his maj. unto his servant, not deigning to sign the petitions, liveries, and warrants, to the [illegible] lord treasurer deserves a censure upon the [illegible] "To be censured for the same."

[illegible]

[illegible] ing the navy, though his ldp. was but a com[illegible]

[illegible] assumed unto himself; the soldiers of Frankendale [illegible] ther the lord treasurer, in regard of these [illegible] treasurer shall for ever, hereafter, be incapable [illegible] Agreed, "For Imprisonment." 4, "Whether [illegible] the lord keeper, 5, "Whether a fine of 50,000l. [illegible] nor?" Agreed, "That he shall never sit again in parliament." 7, "W[illegible] passed by a general vote of the house.

Sentence [illegible] the Lord Treasurer.

Then a message was sent to the Commons, [illegible]

[illegible] the pro- [illegible]

"The knights, citizens, and burgesses in [illegible]"

The Lord Keeper answered, "This high [illegible] land, shall lose all his offices which he holds in this kingdom; and shall, hereafter, be made [illegible] unto our sovereign lord the king a fine of 50,000l. That he shall never sit in parliament [illegible]"

May 14. A committee of lords was appointed [illegible] Ordered also, "That the king's counsel do draw up a bill, and present the same to the [illegible] and to restitution to such whom he had wronged [illegible]." Which bill afterwards passed into a law.*

[illegible] whereupon a committee was then named for that purpose.

[illegible] the abp. of Canterbury, of a conference with the Commons, touching a Complaint against [illegible] the Commons had received a Complaint ex- [illegible] objections for their meddling with a cause of [illegible] Ghost fluttering over the font; that a marble [illegible] psalms. V. That [illegible] VI. That he did not enter Institutions, [illegible] Norwich; and in those parishes 30 or 40,000 [illegible]

---

* [illegible] from a low beginning, was, for his eminent qua- [illegible] upon as a fit instrument to detect the frauds [illegible] rose to the height he so suddenly fell from; and, [illegible] of their credit with the parliament for that [illegible] rendon: the former says, "The duke of Buck- [illegible] placed him in." And the latter, "That the [illegible] so much without a precedent, that, [illegible] fore, to gratify likewise a private displeasure," [illegible] the duke, 'That he was a fool, and was making a rod for his own breech;' and the Prince [illegible]

[illegible] no preaching necessary: but he commanded to [illegible]

[illegible] dience without knowledge. The outward man [illegible]

[illegible] Christum;' with the canon, 1 Jac. c. 45, for commanding preaching.—For the 2nd touch- [illegible]

[illegible] Homilies approved, anno 1 Eliz. forbidding [illegible]

[illegible] tions, ' Linwood in the Glosses, lib 2. Tit. de [illegible]

[illegible] east; and some did their penance with a withy rod in their hand; the proof thereof is un- [illegible]

[illegible] a minister, catechized his family, and sung psalms, his neighbours coming in, of a Sunday [illegible]

[illegible] catechize and sing psalms, and to say, ' I con- [illegible] under the bishop's hand. They who refused, [illegible]

[illegible] mons, that this Peck was a conformable [illegible]

[illegible] now himself, taketh, for institution, 3l. 5s. and, for united churches, double; and that, [illegible]

[illegible] nothing should be taken; if any, it is simony: [illegible]

[illegible] cure, 5s. is due; he takes 6s. 8d. To teach [illegible]

[illegible] tion thereof till they received a certificate from [illegible]

[illegible] would desire, himself, to be punished: but whe- [illegible]

[illegible] the name of a clergyman. He shewed the un- [illegible]

[illegible] preaching, whilst he was vicar and parson: [illegible] ing, and catechized in the afternoon; and that [illegible] bp. of Chichester: that in Norwich he never [illegible] there against popery; though he had been an [illegible]

[illegible] been reckoned more than half a puritan. he [illegible]

[illegible] dered why he should be thought a papist; he [illegible]

[illegible] preached a thousand sermons; and nothing [illegible]

[illegible] power on earth can touch a prince; and there- [illegible]

[illegible] Blood. 3. The practic course of their reli- [illegible] vited a known recusant to his table; for they never say *Amen* to our prayers. 4. That their equivocations are the last; worse than which nothing can be; his ldp. held it much better [illegible]

he professed himself to be a true member of [illegible]

confessed, 'That 6 or 7 of the abler sort of mi- [illegible]

selves found fault with this, being willing to be [illegible]

pends; whereupon he sent for them by an of- [illegible]

order for the erecting of 3 sermons in the most [illegible]

church; and he also had erected many lectures [illegible]

ing the Images in a Church. What was [illegible]

image at all set up there, he said, 'God's [illegible]

cost on God's house.' III. As touching prayers to the east: he never enjoined it, nor heard [illegible]

sifted through the whole course of his life; that [illegible]

bound over by a justice and brought to his ldp. [illegible]

he enjoined, he caused them to confess their [illegible]

"That he had not answered concerning the [illegible]

*Tho. Stokes*.] The same day the bishop of [illegible] against one Tho. Stokes, clerk. "That whereas [illegible]

lordship this message: 'That if he would suffer [illegible]

[illegible] false." [illegible]

[illegible] the Session.] The same day, still, a message [illegible]

[illegible] ing that his maj.'s pleasure is to put an end to [illegible]

[illegible] begun; they do humbly desire their lordships [illegible]

[illegible] longer time: 1st. For that the King permitting [illegible]

[illegible] no precedent for the same; whereby many [illegible]

[illegible] vantageous, to the king's profit, and give con- [illegible]

[illegible] ther they can perform them in so short a time. [illegible]

[illegible] Saturday next; and commanded his highness [illegible]

[illegible] pressed, for a longer day of continuance of this [illegible]

[illegible] sion, at a day now so near at hand, that they [illegible]

[illegible] ing a longer. Yet, considering that his maj. [illegible]

[illegible] entreated the Prince to move him for a longer [illegible]

Message from the Commons: "That they desire a conference with their lordships, touching a Petition to the King for removing all justly [illegible] them presently; but, before the Lords went to [illegible] ter in the mean time; and that he should [illegible] in." It was agreed, "That this should be in- [illegible]

[illegible] ence; he told the house, That the Commons [illegible]

[illegible] present parl. out of all the parts of your king- [illegible]

[illegible] ness in all the parts thereof, insomuch as many [illegible]

---

[illegible]

1. "The Names of all such Persons as are

[illegible]

displacing Popish Recusants, was read a 2nd

[illegible]

publickly go to a committee of both houses to

[illegible]

cline, if they like of it, to move his highness the

[illegible]

as with a matter of state; not doubting but

[illegible]

good contentment."—This answer was ap-

[illegible]

to the Prince, "That he was pleased, as of

[illegible]

*The Judges Opinions on some Clauses of the Subsidy Bill in point of Privilege.*] May 24.

[illegible]

was sent up by the Commons; and, the next

[illegible]

sumed, by the way of privilege, to beget a pre-

[illegible]

the higher House, is no derogation to that [illegible] a protestation in their Journal Book, before the Subsidy bill was read a third time; which [illegible]

[illegible] they, or either of them, respectively had; any [illegible]

[illegible] It may not be amiss, in this place, to look back [illegible] the heads of a long debate is entered in the [illegible] speech of sir Edw. Coke's, is a calculation what the whole sum of such a grant would [illegible] fifteenth to 80,000l, a Subsidy from the Clergy [illegible] to 900,000l. almost a million, which was more, [illegible] declare himself for the utter dissolution of the [illegible] present, 3 Subsidies, with 3 Fifteenths and [illegible] as they shall be pleased [illegible]

[illegible] session of parl." and, by a subsequent resolution [illegible]

"That these 3 Subsidies, Fifteenths and [illegible] Treaties were broke, as hath been mentioned, and the Commons went upon framing a bill to [illegible] be the managers of it: which being a thing [illegible] pute in the house of lords before related.—But [illegible]

"How far the Privileges of the Nobility do [illegible]

"To all their menial servants and those of [illegible] which time the lords may conveniently go home [illegible] to the public injustice of the kingdom, which [illegible] might, in this high court, draw the clear light [illegible] case shall come in question; wherein the house [illegible] it strange, if in such a case, both himself suffer [illegible]—Ordered to be [illegible]

[illegible] come to Judicature: but the session being [illegible]

[illegible] side, in affording all just means of defence to [illegible] lars, they do at this time order, That in all [illegible] copies of all depositions, both pro & contra, after the publication, a convenient time before hearing, to prepare themselves. And also that [illegible] assist them in their defence, whether they be [illegible]

[illegible] tice; and, on the other side, according to his majesty's most gracious speech, 'God defend [illegible] it shall be; and therefore the time being now [illegible]

[illegible] nuscript."—The Petition is without date; but [illegible] perceive, is, in some measure, an Answer to it.

"Most Gracious Sovereign, We your most [illegible]

[illegible] contained, 'That if any of your subjects should [illegible] ing is a most beneficial trade to this realm for [illegible] ners, and the bringing in of bullion and victuals to a very great yearly value and supply; and [illegible]

"Gold Wire-Drawers.—Whereas, within [illegible] your reign; whereby they were incorporated [illegible]

[illegible] of Southampton Library Digitisation Unit

ing Gold Wire and other manufacturers; and also the same Gold Wire should be of a sub- [illegible] this realm. The humble Petition of your sub- [illegible]"

[illegible]

[illegible] maj.'s own conscience; yet sir John Towns- [illegible]

[illegible] the seal, to gather monies of your subjects, [illegible]

"APOTHECARIES.—Whereas the Apotheca- [illegible] members of the company of grocers of the same city; and whereas the said grocers did, and do, [illegible] or not; [illegible] the said grocers [illegible] seas, to your maj.'s great and yearly benefit; [illegible] and the whole distillation and selling of all waters within the said city and 7 miles thereabout; which dividing of the apothecaries from [illegible] unto the apothecaries, and the sole selling [illegible] the law, [illegible] impoverishing of many persons and their fami- [illegible]

[illegible] cons, marks, and signs for the sea, was given to [illegible] Light House, of stone, at Wintertonness in [illegible] a light-house at Wintertonness, obtained of your maj. letters patent, to erect a light-house [illegible] consideration, were void in law; for that there had been a light-house there by the space of half a year, or thereabouts: and though it [illegible] before the said letters patent, erect a light-house as is aforesaid; where they of the Trinity did take but 6d. for every 20 chaldron of coals, the said sir John by colour of the said [illegible] 4d. [illegible] the intolerable damage and loss of your subjects, he hath taken after the rate of 3s. 4d. of [illegible] nor in their course could take any benefit of the said [illegible] Our humble Petition is, [illegible] be pleased [illegible] said letters patent to be void in law, and to [illegible] that they be no more put in execution." [illegible]

"SIR SIMOND HARVY.—The said sir Simond [illegible] taking malt for your maj.'s provision; which, [illegible] caused to be taken of Quested, a fishmonger of London, a great quantity of lings for his maj.'s [illegible] hath, wittingly and willingly, over-charged di[illegible] counties as had compounded; whereby your [illegible] nant for purveyance of oxen, &c. be, 'That [illegible] cers, and going to sir Simon, with a debenture for money, was answered, 'That they could [illegible] meddle with the same; for before his time, [illegible] and oats, and other provisions; whereas now [illegible] not having time to examine any more, to the [illegible] punishment, according to the merit and justice [illegible]

"GAOLS.—Whereas, by the common laws [illegible] belong to the sheriff of the said county, as incident to his office; and the said sheriff only, [illegible] and damages, for which any prisoner is there[illegible] of your maj.'s own castles, of which castles, as [illegible] his sheriffwick; and therefore all letters patent, [illegible] all other counties where the common gaol of [illegible]

"SEA-COALS.—Whereas it pleased your [illegible] with a fee of 8d. upon the great chaldron; and whereas, likewise, it pleased your maj. by sir [illegible] household, and a member of our house, to intimate unto us your gracious intention to have [illegible] sion of parl. according to a clause in the said letters patent contained; and thereupon, out [illegible] piness to live under the govt. of a king so just, [illegible] formed as your commons assembled in parl. [illegible] laying a new charge upon them without common consent; but tends also to the great de- [illegible] sequence, is of a very dangerous nature, and [illegible] imposition upon a native and necessary com- [illegible] or claim any such power; it being the un- [illegible] by being pleased to take such a course for the calling in of that patent, as to your princely wisdom you shall think most fit; and we are [illegible] to your maj. any suit of this nature."

[illegible] bled, (see p. 1410), hath, to the great comfort [illegible]

whereof there is a catalogue extant in print of [illegible] within this 2 or 3 years, besides no small num- [illegible] cution."

"BUILDING.—Whereas your maj. amongst [illegible] tions, precedents to warrant the latter; amongst [illegible] to your maj.; and this great restraint will in a short time be a great cause of their further impoverishing; and many men that are able to [illegible]

[illegible]

curred without a negative voice; and your

[illegible]

wise king, Prov. xv. 22. "Without Counsel purposes are disappointed: but in the multitude

[illegible]

the highest pitch of a true monarchy, and

[illegible]

the phrase of some own profession, as "Infinite [illegible] your [illegible] long sick of a spiritual drunkenness.—Other [illegible] it were, to let fall some leaves from the flowers [illegible] useful, that were but probations and repeals of [illegible] strange to your maj. that in a commonwealth [illegible] nation of laws, alteration of some, 'Multa dies [illegible] his conquest of Wales, in his parl. saith of the [illegible] &c.' 'Stability only attends the better life, but in all earthly things there is mutation and [illegible] veniences are discerned, and might be dange- [illegible] Moses; as that for the punishment of the blas- [illegible] sovereign, we the knights, citizens, and bur- [illegible]

[illegible] circumcised priests of Baal triumph; but that [illegible] a new Song of Joy, in seeing this happy turn [illegible] out of that darkness. 'It is the Lord's doing, [illegible] Priests, that are enemies to monarchies, and wait for opportunity to do mischief, whose [illegible] dividing of unity; and if this city that is your royal chamber, and other parts of your domi- [illegible] Hillary in their hearts.—We do further ac- [illegible] enjoyment of our antient Privileges, free [illegible] to your royal person; and by your own mouth made so clear an expression, of a benign inter- [illegible] own greatness and goodness, inlarged your general free Pardon beyond all times, whereby to [illegible] a new charter of life and mercy is sealed; to [illegible] goods, a restitution of grace is granted, old debts discharged, and the scores and reckon- [illegible] freed. And generally to all relaxation from [illegible] a free gift of 3 entire Subsidies and 3 entire [illegible] sword your shrieve to put your son-in-law in possession of his antient patrimony, or to [illegible] another as valuable. God is on our side in a good cause, 'Frangit et attollit vires in milite causa.'—I am out of my element, but the zeal [illegible] and support of a branch of the royal blood, transports me, and will excuse me; which points [illegible] celeri manu;' and, I may say, 'plena manu,' [illegible] sent, as a pledge of our unfeigned and loyal duties, and a testimony, as well of the pro- [illegible] maj. hath given a liberal and large Pardon to [illegible] at the foot of your favour for a particular par- [illegible] tion, I underwent this charge. And that what- [illegible]

*The King's Answer.*] The King's Answer to [illegible] John Napier, of Bedfordshire, bart. to the Editors of the "Parliamentary or Constitu- [illegible]

"Mr. Speaker, and you the Gentlemen of the Lower House; I will begin with the end [illegible] ties, together with the free pardon of his own [illegible] grand-children, whose case, I must confess, is somewhat desperate: I pray God I may see that good end thereof that I wish, for I know [illegible] please him to repay unto me the wrong done unto them. But, as I said at first, so I pray again, I desire not to live; nay, I wish to God [illegible] blot should lie on me, as not to hope to see a restoration of the Palatinate, or at least a possibility of it, before God close up mine eyes. And I have sworn, that all you have allowed [illegible] ployed for that end; and, as God shall judge my soul, I never had any other meaning, if I [illegible] But as, on the other side, I assure myself, that, [illegible] dred times before: so I assure you on the other side, you shall have a new session in the beginning of next winter, that then you may [illegible] particular wants; and if you will be careful in this, as I assure myself you will, I will only [illegible] ment among you, as shall become a king, and [illegible] dren.—For the other point, I have reason, and truly, without compliment I do it, to thank [illegible] behaviour to me at this time; concerning which I must needs say, that in all this session, neither in any days was it heard of; and, I think [illegible] ever was given heretofore by Lower House: and [illegible] among you, but it was dashed; avoiding all occasions that might be a blot of offence between me and my people; for which, as I said before, so now again, I thank you, without fur- [illegible] ness that ever was held by a king.—But I must [illegible] some yesterday, when I was present, as I said [illegible] ances, where there is no cause; for I may say this, and say truly, that I never saw parl. that [illegible] than you have had; I find most of them to be [illegible] raise and create Grievances, but upon just cause; so again you ought not to conclude or [illegible] them fully; and, when I have done, you shall have a clear Answer to them, such a one as [illegible] red to the subjects requests in general; and herein I will not take advice of myself, but I [illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible] not in themselves; for many times it falls out [illegible]

[illegible] desire. I will put you in mind of two pre- [illegible] profession; the first is in 1 Kings. ii. 20. There is a precedent of Bathsheba putting up a peti- [illegible] bids her, 'Ask on, my mother, for I will not [illegible] 2 Cor. xii. 7. where st. Paul saith 'that a prick [illegible] was a public bill for himself and others by his prayer; now God refuseth this his petition, and gives him a better gift: for the Lord gives him grace. And so it fares with kings in giving of- [illegible] ject some of their petitions; but yet, in other things, gives them a far more liberal assent [illegible] those Bills of Grace; they are so, because it [illegible] full of goodness, if that he be the son of such a gracious father. 6thly. Thanks to his maj. [illegible] we may say of his maj. as one said of his son, [illegible] the commonwealth, yet they will be lurking up and down in corners; therefore they are to [illegible] therein to give me leave to tell you a short [illegible] great subsidy to Augustus, and in acceptation he sent him a letter, and nothing writ therein but this, 'mihi nihil,' there was nothing to him. [illegible]

[illegible] being so large, will serve the turn; then you [illegible] bered "the breaking up of three former parlia- [illegible] in mind, "that at their next meeting they do [illegible]

*Death of the King.*] After all which was [illegible] to the 15th of March; and, lastly, to the 20th [illegible] on the 27th of March, in the same year, king James died; by whose death this parliament [illegible]

[illegible] a year. An attempt was made, in the beginning of this reign, to procure a strict entail of [illegible] for ever; but a bill for that purpose, though [illegible] mons; and James, finding no obstruction to [illegible] the king enjoyed as lord paramount, still remained a badge of the feudal slavery of the English. Purveyance in particular was carried to such a height, that the officers of the [illegible] in their stead. An agreement was likely to [illegible] a year; when, in consequence of disputes be-

[illegible] Northampton Library [illegible]

[illegible] first claim was founded, though of a very old [illegible]

[illegible] moderation, that it yielded a considerable sum [illegible]

[illegible] duced 20,000l. It is remarked, that a century [illegible]

"4. *Customs.*—The first parliament that [illegible]

[illegible] originated in the grants of parl.; but the crown [illegible] to consider the customs as a permanent branch [illegible]

[illegible] to a considerable height, though he was at first [illegible]

[illegible] be extended; and, indeed, passed a bill, abo- [illegible]

[illegible] steps, when it was suddenly dissolved; and thus the dispute remained undetermined in this [illegible]

[illegible] they yielded only 127,000l a year. The following is a state of their produce, anno 1613:

| | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| [illegible] | [illegible] | | | 100,372 | 18 4 |
| Inwards - - | 48,250 | 1 | 9 | | |
| In all the out-ports. | | | | | |
| Outwards - | £.25,471 | 19 | 7 | 38,502 | 9 4 |
| Inwards - - | 13,030 | 9 | 9 | | |
| | | | Total - | £.148,075 | 7 8 |

[illegible]

[illegible] rent; and proves, how considerable a share [illegible]

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1606 | 3 | 3 | 0 |
| 1610 | 7 | 1 | 1 |
| 1621 | 18 | 2 | 0 |
| 1624 | 22 | 3 | 3 |
| | Total - 9 | | [illegible] |

[illegible] how it was expended; [illegible]

[illegible] stowed but in sight of your committees: but whether I shall send two thousand, or ten [illegible]

[illegible] duced about 70,000l. and a 15th about 36,500l.; [illegible] received by James, amounted to about a million. [illegible] would produce 240,000l.; and one of the cle- [illegible] 1s. in the pound; and therefore yielded 10,000l. additional. One year with another, it is pro- [illegible] lerical grants, about 60,000l. per ann [illegible]

6. *Sale of Honours.*—James had a price [illegible] ment of which a grant was made out. The dignities of Baron, Viscount, and Earl, might be bought at the rate of 10, 15, and 20,000l. [illegible]

[illegible] 3 years, at 8d. a day each, to assist the king's [illegible]

[illegible]

of the country. The king had annulled, of his

[illegible]

nies; and hence the navigation and commerce

[illegible]

so destructive a grievance."

"8. *Loans.*—As early as 1604, James had

[illegible]

was repaid: 200,000l. were afterwards extorted under the same pretence. James's opinion on the subject, he took no pains to conceal: for

[illegible]

refuse no reasonable excuse; but that he did

[illegible]

princes, or a people too bold and wanton

"9. *Benevolences.*—James exacted, anno

[illegible]

would attend assembling the parl.; and though

[illegible]

to discourage so pernicious a practice, at first

[illegible]

"10. *Money from the Dutch.*—The neces-

[illegible]

him conclude a treaty with the States of Hol-

[illegible]

whole, not a little favourable to the New Re-

[illegible]

ment depended upon a very uncertain contingency, namely, the continuation of a truce con-

[illegible]

ing, the Brile, and Rammekins, as a security

[illegible]

amounted to 26,000l. a year: consequently,

[illegible]

their country continued in the hands of Eng-

[illegible]

cepted; and from the day on which these cau-

[illegible]

courts: a source of revenue which was at-

[illegible]

"12. *Fines.*—The last source of James's

[illegible]

was then customary to inflict: 40,000l. were

[illegible]

Middlesex, in consequence of a parliamen-

[illegible]

"*Amount of his Revenue.*—A particular ac-

[illegible]

36,817l. a year. Anno 1610, lord Salisbury

[illegible]

500,000l. a year; especially as, during the at-

[illegible]

ed him."

[illegible]

use of Ireland."

[illegible]

By a proclamation issued in the reign of this monarch, establishing public magazines, whenever wheat fell below 32s. a quarter, rye be- [illegible] was at 33s. a tod.

[illegible] sending Representatives to Parliament was [illegible]

| | |
|---|---|
| Cambridge University | St. Edmondsbury |
| Boroughs - 14 | Members - 27 |

[illegible] the diminution of the possessions of archbi- [illegible] inns, alehouses, and of victualling houses. 10. [illegible]

[illegible] executions to be sued against any which shall [illegible] livered. 14. A remedy for a freeman of Lon- [illegible] said city or the liberties: a penalty if the [illegible] not perform their order; or if the creditor, be- [illegible] freeman out of the same city, for a debt under [illegible] manship therein used, to the wrong of all sorts [illegible] of deceitful selling, buying, or spending cor- [illegible] abuses and deceits used in painting. 21. [illegible] other shipping are made. 25. For continuing [illegible] virtue of a privy seal from the late queen Eli- [illegible] ing date Westminster, 30th Apr. an. 2 Jac. granted to the mayor, bailiffs, and burgesses [illegible] at their own costs build a church upon the [illegible] waste grounds adjoining, to make a churchyard for a place of burial; after which church [illegible] shall be but a chapel of ease: and the patron [illegible] tron of the new. And a new mansion house in [illegible] his successors for ever. 31. For the charitable [illegible] of parliament, during 7 years, and no longer, [illegible] Regis in the county of Dorset) whereof any of [illegible] this realm, or to or from any foreign country beyond the seas, and passing to or from London, or from, to or by Dover, or coming into the harbour there (not having a coquet testify- [illegible] vessels loaden with sea coals or grind-stones; [illegible] stones, 1d. ob. which shall be paid to the customer, collector of customs or subsidies, or their deputies, &c. 33. Of a subsidy of ton- [illegible]

3 Jac.—1. An act for a publick thanksgiving [illegible] able and damnable treasons. 3. Declaratory, explaining the branch of an act made in the [illegible] popish recusants. 5. To prevent and avoid [illegible] 6. To enable all his majesty's loving subjects [illegible] unnecessary suits and charges in law. 8. To [illegible] 15. For the recovering of small debts, and for [illegible] year of queen Elizabeth's reign concerning the [illegible] of London. 19. For the repairing and maintaining of the highway leading from Kingston to Nonsuch. 20. For making a passage from London to Oxford by water. 21. To restrain [illegible] Fields, in the county of Middlesex. 23. For [illegible] Chepstow bridge. 24. For making a bridge [illegible] cester. 25. For a confirmation of four subsidies, of 4s. in the pound, granted to the king [illegible] and six fifteens, granted to the king by the temporalty. 27. For a confirmation of the king's general and free pardon.

4 Jac.—1. An act for the utter abolition of [illegible] making of woollen cloth. 3. To give costs to [illegible] or verdict against him. 4. To restrain the ut- [illegible] For repealing so much of one branch of a sta- [illegible] pointing of a free grammar-school in the town [illegible] and Fants, in the county of Kent. 9. To explain a former act made in the last session of [illegible] mation of some part of a charter granted by [illegible] maintenance of husbandry and tillage in the [illegible] ralized or restored in blood, shall first receive [illegible]

[illegible]

Mary, intituled, An act for keeping of milch [illegible]

[illegible] keepers. 11. To prevent the spoil of corn and [illegible]

[illegible] For the explanation of one Statute made in [illegible]

[illegible] a part of a former act made in the 4th year of [illegible]

[illegible] n. 13. Concerning some manner of assign- [illegible]

[illegible] ing hereafter. 21. For confirmation of decrees [illegible]

[illegible] and tenements. 22. For confirmation of a Sub- [illegible]

[illegible] year of the late queen Elizabeth, intituled, An [illegible]

[illegible] other victualling houses. 8. To prevent the [illegible]

[illegible] An act for certain ordinances in the king's [illegible]

[illegible] 14. To admit the subject to plead the general [illegible]

[illegible] possession till trial. 15. To enable judges and [illegible]

[illegible] Against usury. 18. For continuance of a former [illegible]

[illegible] scription of a bankrupt, and relief of creditors [illegible]

21. Concerning hostlers and innholders. 22. For the explanation of the statutes made in the 3rd, 4th, and 5th years of Edw. VI. concerning the traders of butter and cheese. 23. For avoiding of vexatious delays, caused by removing actions and suits out of inferior courts. 24. For the relief of creditors against such persons as die in execution. 25. For the relief of patentees, tenants, and farmers of crown lands and duchy lands, or of lands within the survey of the court of wards and liveries, in cases of forfeiture for not payment of their rents, or other service or duty. 26. Against such as shall levy any fine, suffer any recovery, acknowledge any statute, recognizance, bail, or judgment, in the name of any other person or persons not being privy and consenting thereto. 27. To prevent the destroying and murthering of bastard children. 28. For continuing and reviving of divers statutes, and repeal of divers others. 29. To enable the most excellent prince Charles to make leases of lands, parcel of his highness duchy of Cornwall, or annexed to the same. 30. For a messuage, called York House, and other tenements belonging to the archbishop of York, assured to the king's maj. and his successors, in exchange of several manors, &c. in the county of York, given to Toby, archbishop of York, and his successors. 31. For incorporating the makers of knives and other cutlery wares in Hallamshire, in the county of York. 32. For making the river of Thames navigable for barges, boats, and lighters, from the village of Bercot, in the county of Oxon, unto the university and city of Oxon. 33. For four entire subsidies granted by the spirituality. 34. For three entire subsidies, and three fifteens and tenths granted by the temporality. 35. A Confirmation of the king's general and free pardon.

END OF VOLUME I.

COBBETT'S
PARLIAMENTARY
HISTORY

1

1066-1625

J
301
.H2